



# HISTORY

OF

# ENGLAND,

FROM THE

INVASION OF JULIUS CÆSAR

TO

The REVOLUTION in 1688.

In EIGHT VOLUMES, illustrated with Plates.

# By DAVID HUME, Efq.

A NEW EDITION, with the Author's last Corrections and Improvements.

To which is prefixed,
A short ACCOUNT of his LIFE, written by Himself.

VOL. III.

#### LONDON:

Printed for T. CADELL:

And fold by T. CADELL jun. and W. DAVIES, (Succeffors to MR. CADELL,) in the Strand; and T. N. LONGMAN, Paternoster-row.

MDCCXCVI.

# HISTORY

80

# ENGLAND,

THE MORE

INTERSTITU OF JULIUS CESAR

The REVOLUTION in 1688.

to EIGHT VOLUMES, illustrated with Plants

BY DAVID HUME, EG.

DA 30

1796x

And fold by T. Carrest to and W. Davier.

Office first in Me. Caurage., is the Street;

and T. N. Las on and Transfer was

# CONTENTS

OFTHE

# THIRD VOLUME.

#### CHAP. XVII.

# RICHARD II.

Government during the minority—Insurrection of the common people—Discontents of the barons—Civil commotions—Expulsion or execution of the king's ministers—Cabals of the duke of Glocester—Murder of the duke of Glocester—Banishment of Henry duke of Hereford—Return of Henry—General insurrection—Deposition of the king—His murder—His character—Miscellaneous transactions during this reign. Page 1.

# CHAP. XVIII,

# HENRY IV.

Title of the king—An infurrection—An infurrection in Wales—The earl of Northumberland rebels—Battle of Shrewsbury—State of Scotland—Parliamentary transactions—Death—and character of the king. 61.

## CONTENTS.

#### CHAP. XIX.

### HENRY V.

The king's former diforders — His reformation — The Lollards — Punishment of Lord Cobham — State of France — Invasion of that kingdom — Battle of Azincour — State of France — New invasion of France — Assassination of the duke of Burgundy — Treaty of Troye — Marriage of the king — His death—and character — Miscellaneous transactions during this reign. Page 85.

### CHAP. XX.

## HENRY VI.

Government during the minority—State of France—Military operations—Battle of Verneuil—Siege of Orleans—The maid of Orleans—The fiege of Orleans raifed—The king of France crowned at Rheims—Prudence of the duke of Bedford—Execution of the maid of Orleans—Defection of the duke of Burgundy—Death of the duke of Bedford—Decline of the English in France—Truce with France—Marriage of the king with Margaret of Anjou—Murder of the duke of Glocester—State of France—Renewal of the war with France—The English expelled France.

# CHAP. XXI.

Claim of the duke of York to the crown—Theearl of Warwic—Impeachment of the duke of Suffolk—His banishment—and death—Popular insurrection—The parties of York and Lancaster—First armament of the duke of York—First battle of St. Albans—Battle of Blore-heath—of Northampton—A parliament—Battle of Wakefield—Death of the duke of York—Battle

# ĆONTENTS.

—Battle of Mortimer's Cross—Second battle of St.

Albans—Edward IV. affumes the crown—Miscellaneous transactions of this reign.

Page 179

#### CHAP. XXII.

## E D W A R D IV.

Battle of Touton—Henry escapes into Scotland—A parliament—Battle of Hexham—Henry taken prifoner, and confined to the Tower—King's marriage with the lady Elizabeth Gray—Warwic disgusted—Alliance with Burgundy—Insurrection in Yorkshire—Battle of Banbury—Warwic and Clarence banished—Warwic and Clarence return—Edward IV. expelled—Henry VI. restored—Edward IV. returns—Battle of Barnet, and death of Warwic—Battle of Tukesbury, and murder of prince Edward—Death of Henry VI.—Invasion of France—Peace of Pecquigni—Trial and execution of the duke of Clarence—Death and character of Edward IV.

#### CHAP. XXIII.

## EDWARD V. and RICHARD III.

Edward V.—State of the court—The earl of Rivers arrested—Duke of Glocester protector—Execution of lord Hastings—The protector aims at the crown.—Assumes the crown—Murder of Edward V. and of the duke of York—Richard III.—Duke of Buckingham discontented—The earl of Richmond—Buckingham executed—Invasion by the earl of Richmond—Battle of Bosworth—Death and character of Richard III.

## CONTENTS.

#### CHAP. XXIV.

#### HENRY VII.

Accession of Henry VII.—His title to the crown—King's prejudice against the house of York—His joyful reception in London—His coronation—Sweating sickness—A parliament—Entail of the crown—King's marriage—An insurrection—Discontents of the people—Lambert Simnel—Revolt of Ireland—Intrigues of the dutchess of Burgundy—Lambert Simnel invades England—Battle of Stoke Page 307

#### CHAP. XXV.

State of foreign affairs—State of Scotland—of Spain—of the Low Countries—of France—of Britanny—French invafion of Britanny—French embaffy to England—
Diffimulation of the French court—An infurrection in the north—fuppreffed—King fends forces intoBritanny—Annexation of Britanny to France—A parliament—War with France—Invafion of France—Peace with France—Perkin Warbec—His imposture—He is avowed by the dutchefs of Burgundy—and by many of the English nobility—Trial and execution of Stanley—A parliament.

## CHAP. XXVI.

Perkin retires to Scotland—Infurrection in the west—
Battle of Blackheath—Truce with Scotland—Perkin
taken prisoner—Perkin executed—The earl of Warwic executed — Marriage of prince Arthur with Catherine of Arragon—His death—Marriage of the
princess Margaret with the king of Scotland—Oppressions of the people—A parliament—Arrival of the
king

#### CONTENTS.

king of Castile—Intrigues of the earl of Susfolk—Sickness of the king—His death—and character—His laws.

Page 370

#### CHAP. XXVII.

#### HENRY VIII.

Popularity of the new king—His ministers—Punishment of Empson and Dudley—King's marriage—Foreign affairs—Julius II.—League of Cambray—War with France—Expedition to Fontarabia—Deceit of Ferdinand—Return of the English—Leo X.—A parliament—War with Scotland—Wolsey minister—His character—Invasion of France—Battle of Guinegate—Battle of Flouden—Peace with France.







Engrand by Lethinthering

# HISTORY

OF

# ENGLAND.

# CHAP. XVII.

#### ICHARD II.

Government during the minority——Insurrection of the common people—Discontents of the barons --- Civil commotions---- Expulsion or execution of the king's ministers—Cabals of the duke of Glocester -- Murder of the duke of Glocester --Banishment of Henry Duke of Hereford—Return of Henry—General Infurrection—Deposition of the king---His murders---His character -Miscellaneous transactions during this reign.

THE parliament which was fummoned foon CHAP. after the king's accession, was both elected and affembled in tranquillity; and the great change, from a fovereign of confummate wisdom and expe- Governrience to a boy of eleven years of age, was not im- ing the mediately felt by the people. The habits of order minority. and obedience which the barons had been taught L. VOL. III. during B

XVII.

CHAP. during the long reign of Edward, still influenced them; and the authority of the king's three uncles, the dukes of Lancaster, York, and Glocester, sufficed to repress, for a time, the turbulent spirit to which that order, in a weak reign, was fo often subject. The dangerous ambition too of these princes themfelves was checked by the plain and undeniable title of Richard, by the declaration of it made in parliament, and by the affectionate regard which the people bore to the memory of his father, and which was naturally transferred to the young fovereign upon the throne. The different characters also of these three princes rendered them a counterpoife to each other; and it was natural to expect, that any dangerous defigns which might be formed by one brother, would meet with opposition from the others. Lancaster, whose age and experience, and authority under the late king, gave him the afcendant among them, though his integrity feemed not proof against great temptations, was neither of an enterprifing spirit, nor of a popular and engaging temper. York was indolent, unactive, and of slender capacity. Glocester was turbulent, bold, and popular; but being the youngest of the family, was restrained by the power and authority of his elder brothers. There appeared, therefore, no circumstance in the domestic situation of England which might endanger the public peace, or give any immediate apprehensions to the lovers of their country.

BUT as Edward, though he had fixed the fuccession to the crown, had taken no care to establish a plan of government during the minority of his grandson, it behoved the parliament to supply this defect: And the house of commons distinguished themselves by taking the lead on the occasion. This house, which had been rifing to consideration during the whole course of the late reign, naturally received an accession of power during the minority; and as it was now becoming a scene of business, the

1377.

members chose, for the first time, a speaker, who CHAP. might preserve order in their debates, and maintain those forms which are requisite in all numerous asfemblies. Peter de la Mare was the man pitched on; the fame person that had been imprisoned, and detained in custody by the late king, for his freedom of speech in attacking the mistress and the ministers of that prince. But though this election discovered a spirit of liberty in the commons, and was followed by farther attacks both on these ministers and on Alice Pierce 2, they were still too sensible of their great inferiority, to assume at first any immediate share in the administration of government, or the care of the king's person. They were content to apply by petition to the lords for that purpose, and desire them, both to appoint a council of nine, who might direct the public business, and to chuse men of virtuous life and conversation, who might inspect the conduct and education of the young prince. The lords complied with the first part of this request, and elected the bishops of London, Carlisle, and Salifbury, the earls of Marche and Stafford, Sir Richard de Stafford, Sir Henry le Scrope, Sir John Devereux, and Sir Hugh Segrave, to whom they gave authority, for a year, to conduct the ordinary course of business. But as to the regulation of the king's household, they declined interposing in an office which, they faid, both was invidious in itself, and might prove difagreeable to his majesty.

THE commons, as they acquired more courage, ventured to proceed a step farther in their applications. They presented a petition, in which they prayed the king to check the prevailing custom among the barons, of forming illegal confederacies, and supporting each other, as well as men of inferior rank, in the violations of law and justice. They received from the throne a general and an obliging

a Walfing. p. 150.

b Rymer, vol. vii. p. 161.

1377·

C H A P. answer to this petition: But another part of their application, that all the great officers should, during the king's minority, be appointed by parliament, which feemed to require the concurrence of the commons, as well as that of the upper house, in the nomination, was not complied with: The lords alone assumed the power of appointing these officers: The commons tacitly acquiefced in the choice; and thought that, for the present, they themselves had proceeded a fufficient length, if they but advanced their pretentions, though rejected, of interpoling in these more important matters of state.

On this foot then the government stood. The administration was conducted entirely in the king's name: No regency was expressly appointed: The nine counsellors and the great officers, named by the peers, did their duty, each in his respective department: And the whole system was for some years kept together by the fecret authority of the king's uncles, especially of the duke of Lancaster, who

was in reality the regent.

THE parliament was diffolved, after the commons had represented the necessity of their being reaffembled once every year, as appointed by law; and after having elected two citizens as their treafurers, to receive and difburse the produce of two fifteenths and tenths, which they had voted to the crown. In the other parliaments called during the minority, the commons still discover a strong spirit of freedom, and a fense of their own authority, which, without breeding any disturbance, tended to fecure their independence, and that of the people '.

EDWARD had left his grandfon involved in many dangerous wars. The pretenfions of the duke of Lancaster to the crown of Castile made that kingdom still persevere in hostilities against England. Scotland, whose throne was now filled by Robert

E See note [A] at the end of the volume.

1377.

Stuart, nephew to David Bruce, and the first prince C H A P. of that family, maintained fuch close connections with France, that war with one crown almost inevitably produced hostilities with the other. The French monarch, whose prudent conduct had acquired him the firname of wife, as he had already baffled all the experience and valour of the two Edwards, was likely to prove a dangerous enemy to a minor king: But his genius, which was not naturally enterprising, led him not, at present, to give any disturbance to his neighbours; and he laboured, besides, under many difficulties at home, which it was necessary for him to furmount before he could think of making conquests in a foreign country. England was mafter of Calais, Bourdeaux, and Bayonne; had lately acquired possession of Cherbourg from the cession of the king of Navarre, and of Brest from that of the duke of Britanny d; and having thus an eafy entrance into France from every quarter, was able, even in its prefent fituation, to give disturbance to his government. Before Charles could remove the English from these important posts, he died in the flower of his age, and left his kingdom to a minor fon, who bore the name of Charles VI.

MEANWHILE the war with France was carried on in a manner fomewhat languid, and produced no enterprise of great lustre or renown. Sir Hugh Calverly, governor of Calais, making an inroad into Picardy with a detachment of the garrison, fet fire to Boulogne. The duke of Lancaster conducted an army into Britanny, but returned without being able to perform any thing memorable. In a subsequent year, the duke of Glocester marched out of Calais with a body of 2000 cavalry, and 8000 infantry; and fcrupled not, with his fmall army, to enter into the heart of France, and to con1378.

1380.

<sup>&</sup>amp; Rymer, vol. vii. p. 190.

e Walfing. p. 209.

1380.

#38I.

C H A P. tinue his ravages through Picardy, Champaigne, the Brie, the Beausse, the Gatinois, the Orleanois, till he reached his allies in the province of Britanny, The duke of Burgundy, at the head of a more confiderable army, came within fight of him; but the French were so overawed by the former successes of the English, that no superiority of numbers could tempt them to venture a pitched battle with the troops of that nation. As the duke of Britanny, foon after the arrival of these succours, formed an accommodation with the court of France, this enterprise also proved in the issue unsuccessful, and made no durable impression upon the enemy.

> THE expences of these armaments, and the usual want of economy attending a minority, much exhausted the English treasury, and obliged the parliament, besides making some alterations in the council, to impose a new and unusual tax of three groats on every person, male and female, above fifteen years of age; and they ordained that, in levying that tax, the opulent should relieve the poor by an equitable compensation. This imposition produced a mutiny, which was fingular in its circumstances. All history abounds with examples where the great tyrannife over the meaner fort: But here the lowest populace rose against their rulers, committed the most cruel ravages upon them, and took vengeance for all former oppressions.

THE faint dawn of the arts and of good government in that age had excited the minds of the populace in different states of Europe, to wish for a better condition, and to murmur against those chains which the laws, enacted by the haughty nobility and gentry, had fo long imposed upon them. The commotions of the people in Flanders, the mutiny of the peafants in France, were the natural effects of this growing spirit of independence; and

f Froissard, liv. ii. chap. 50, 51. Walsing. p. 239.

XVII. 138I.

the report of these events being brought into Eng- C H AP. land, where perfonal flavery, as we learn from Froisfard 5, was more general than in any other country in Europe, had prepared the minds of the multitude for an infurrection. One John Ball alfo, a feditious preacher, who affected low popularity, went about the country, and inculcated on his audience the principles of the first origin of mankind from one common stock, their equal right to liberty and to all the goods of nature, the tyranny of artificial distinctions, and the abuses which had arisen from the degradation of the more confiderable part of the species, and the aggrandisement of a few infolent rulers h. These doctrines, so agreeable to the populace, and fo conformable to the ideas of primitive equality which are engraven in the hearts of all men, were greedily received by the multitude; and scattered the sparks of that sedition, which the present tax raised into a conflagration i.

THE imposition of three groats a head had been Insurrecfarmed out to tax-gatherers in each county, who tions of the levied the money on the people with rigour; and people. the clause, of making the rich ease their poorer neighbours of fome share of the burden, being fo vague and undeterminate, had, doubtless, occasioned many partialities, and made the people more fenfible of the unequal lot which fortune had affigned them in the distribution of her favours. The first disorder was raised by a blacksmith in a village of Effex. The tax-gatherers came to this man's shop while he was at work; and they demanded payment for his daughter, whom he afferted to be below the age affigned by the statute. One of these fellows

g Liv. ii. chap. 74.

h Froissard, liv. ii. chap. 74. Wal-

fingham, p 275. There were two verses at that time in the mouths of all the common people, which, in spite of prejudice, one cannot but regard with fome degree of approbation:

When Adam delv'd and Eve fpan, Where was then the gentleman? B 4

offered

XVII.

CHAP. offered to produce a very indecent proof to the contrary, and at the same time laid hold of the maid: Which the father refenting, immediately knocked out the ruffian's brains with his hammer. The bystanders applauded the action, and exclaimed, that it was full time for the people to take vengeance on their tyrants, and to vindicate their native liberty. They immediately flew to arms: The whole neighbourhood joined in the fedition: The flame spread in an instant over the county: It soon propagated itself into that of Kent, of Hertford, Surry, Sussex, Suffolk, Norfolk, Cambridge, and Lincoln. fore the government had the least warning of the danger, the diforder had grown beyond control or opposition: The populace had shaken off all regard to their former masters: And being headed by the most audacious and criminal of their associates, who assumed the feigned names of Wat Tyler, Jack Straw, Hob Carter, and Tom Miller, by which they were fond of denoting their mean origin, they committed every where the most outrageous violence on fuch of the gentry or nobility as had the misfortune to fall into their hands.

azth June.

THE mutinous populace, amounting to a hundred thousand men, affembled on Blackheath under their leaders Tyler and Straw; and as the princess of Wales, the king's mother, returning from a pilgrimage to Canterbury, passed through the midst of them, they infulted her attendants; and some of the most insolent among them, to shew their purpose of levelling all mankind, forced kiffes from her; but they allowed her to continue her journey, without attempting any farther injury 1. They fent a message to the king, who had taken shelter in the Tower; and they defired a conference with him. Richard failed down the river in a barge for that purpose; but on his approaching the shore, he saw such symptoms

of tumult and insolence, that he put back, and re- CHAP. turned to that fortress. The seditious peasants, meanwhile, favoured by the populace of London, had broken into the city; had burned the duke of Lancaster's palace of the Savoy; cut off the heads of all the gentlemen whom they laid hold of; expressed a particular anim sity against the lawyers and attornies; and pillaged the warehouses of the rich merchants". A great body of them quartered themselves at Mile-end; and the king, finding no defence in the Tower, which was weakly garrifoned, and ill fupplied with provisions, was obliged to go out to them, and ask their demands. They required a general pardon, the abolition of flavery. freedom of commerce in market towns without toll or impost, and a fixed rent on lands, instead of the fervices due by villenage. These requests, which, though extremely reasonable in themselves, the nation was not fufficiently prepared to receive, and which it was dangerous to have extorted by violence, were however, complied with; charters to that purpose were granted them; and this body immediately dispersed, and returned to their several homes °.

During this transaction, another body of the rebels had broken into the Tower; had murdered Simon Sudbury, the primate and chancellor, with Sir Robert Hales, the treasurer, and some other persons of distinction; and continued their ravages in the city. The king, passing along Smithsield, very slenderly guarded, met with Wat Tyler, at the head of these rioters, and entered into a conference with him. Tyler, having ordered his companions to retire till he should give them a signal, after which they were to murder all the company except the king himself, whom they were to detain

m Froissard, liv. ii. chap. 75. fingham, p. 248, 249.

P Walfingham, p. 250, 251.

n Ibid. chap. 76. Wal-Froisfard, liv. ii. chap. 77.

CHAP. prisoner, feared not to come into the midst of the royal retinue. He there behaved himself in such a manner, that Walworth, the mayor of London. not able to bear his infolence, drew his fword, and struck him so violent a blow as brought him to the ground, where he was instantly dispatched by others of the king's attendants. The mutineers, feeing their leader fall, prepared themselves for revenge; and this whole company, with the king himself, had undoubtedly perished on the spot, had it not been for an extraordinary presence of mind which Richard discovered on the occasion. He ordered his company to flop; he advanced alone towards the enraged multitude; and accosting them with an affable and intrepid countenance. he asked them, What is the meaning of this diforder, my good " people? Are ye angry that ye have loft your " leader? I am your king: I will be your leader." The populace, overawed by his prefence, implicitly followed him: He led them into the fields, to prevent any disorder which might have arisen by their continuing in the city: Being there joined by Sir Robert Knolles, and a body of well-armed veteran foldiers, who had been fecretly drawn together, he strictly prohibited that officer from falling on the rioters, and committing an undiffinguished flaughter upon them; and he peaceably dismissed them with the fame charters which had been granted to their fellows 9. Soon after, the nobility and gentry, hearing of the king's danger, in which they were all involved, flocked to London with their adherents and retainers; and Richard took the field at the head of an army 40,000 strong. It then behoved all the rebels to submit: The charters of enfranchifement and pardon were revoked by parliament; the low people were reduced to the fame flavish condition as before; and feveral of the ringleaders

<sup>9</sup> Froisfard, vol ii. chap. 77. Walfingham, p. 252. Knyghton, r Walfingham, p. 267.

1381.

were severely punished for the late disorders. Some CHAP. were even executed without process or form of law . It was pretended, that the intentions of the mutineers had been to feize the king's person, to carry him through England at their head, to murder all the nobility, gentry, and lawyers, and even all the bishops and priests, except the mendicant friars; to dispatch afterwards the king himself; and having thus reduced all to a level, to order the kingdom at their pleasure. It is not impossible, but many of them, in the delirium of their first success, might have formed fuch projects: But of all the evils incident to human fociety, the infurrections of the populace, when not raifed and supported by persons of higher quality, are the least to be dreaded: The mischiefs consequent to an abolition of all rank and distinction, become so great, that they are immediately felt, and foon bring affairs back to their former order and arrangement.

A youth of fixteen (which was at this time the king's age), who had discovered fo much courage, presence of mind, and address, and had so dextrously eluded the violence of this tumult, railed great expectations in the nation; and it was natural to hope, that he would, in the course of his life, equal the glories which had fo uniformly attended his father and his grandfather in all their undertakings. But in proportion as Richard advanced in years, these hopes vanished; and his want of capacity, at least of folid judgment, appeared in every enterprise which he attempted. The Scots, fensible of their own deficiency in cavalry, had applied to the regency of Charles VI.; and John de Vienne, admiral of France, had been fent over with a body of 1500 men at arms, to support them in their incurfions against the English. The danger was now deemed by the king's uncles fomewhat ferious; and

5 5 Rich. II cap. ult. as quoted in the Observations on ancient Statutes, p. 262. Walfingham, p. 265.

1385.

1385.

C HAP. a numerous army of 60,000 men was levied; and they marched into Scotland, with Richard himfelf at their head. The Scots did not pretend to make refistance against so great a force: They abandoned without scruple their country to be pillaged and destroyed by the enemy: And when de Vienne expressed his surprise at this plan of operations, they told him, that all their cattle was driven into the forests and fastnesses: that their houses and other goods were of fmall value; and that they well knew how to compensate any losses which they might suftain in that respect, by making an incursion into England. Accordingly, when Richard entered Scotland by Berwic and the east coast, the Scots, to the number of 30,000 men, attended by the French, entered the borders of England by the west, and carrying their ravages through Cumberland, Westmoreland, and Lancashire, collected a rich booty, and then returned in tranquillity to their own country. Richard mean while advanced towards Edinburgh, and destroyed in his way all the towns and villages on each fide of him: He reduced that city to ashes: He treated in the same manner, Perth, Dundee, and other places in the low countries; but when he was advised to march towards the west coast, to await there the return of the enemy, and to take revenge on them for their devastations, his impatience to return to England, and enjoy his usual pleasures and amusements, outweighed every confideration; and he led back his army, without effecting any thing by all these mighty preparations. The Scots, foon after, finding the heavy bodies of French cavalry very ufeless in that defultory kind of war to which they confined themselves, treated their allies fo ill, that the French returned home, much difgusted with the country, and with the manners of its inhabitants ". And the English, though they re-

gretted

<sup>&</sup>quot; Froisfard, liv. ii. chap. 149, 150, &c. liv. iii. chap. 52. fingham, p. 316, 317.

gretted the indolence and levity of their king, faw C HAP. themselves for the future secured against any danger-

ous invasion from that quarter.

w C H A P. r- XVII.

But it was so material an interest of the French court to wrest the sea-port towns from the hands of their enemy, that they resolved to attempt it by fome other expedient, and found no means so likely as an invasion of England itself. They collected a great fleet and army at Sluife; for the Flemings were now in alliance with them: All the nobility of France were engaged in this enterprife: The English were kept in alarm: Great preparations were made for the reception of the invaders: And though the dispersion of the French ships by a storm, and the taking of many of them by the English, before the embarkation of the troops, freed the kingdom from the present danger, the king and council were fully fensible that this perilous situation might every moment return upon them w.

THERE were two circumstances, chiesly, which engaged the French at this time to think of such attempts. The one was the absence of the duke of Lancaster, who had carried into Spain the slower of the English military force, in prosecution of his vain claim to the crown of Castile; an enterprise in which, after some promising success, he was finally disappointed: The other was, the violent dissensions and disorders which had taken place in the English

government.

The subjection in which Richard was held by his uncles, particularly by the duke of Glocester, a prince of ambition and genius, though it was not unsuitable to his years and slender capacity, was extremely disagreeable to his violent temper; and he soon attempted to shake off the yoke imposed upon him. Robert de Vere, earl of Oxford, a young man of a noble family, of an agreeable figure, but

W Froisfard, liv. iii. chap. 41. 53. Walfingham, p. 322, 323.

XVII. 1386.

C H A P. of diffolute manners, had acquired an entire ascendant over him, and governed him with an absolute authority. The king fet fo little bounds to his affection, that he first created his favourite marguis of Dublin, a title before unknown in England, then duke of Ireland; and transferred to him by patent, which was confirmed in parliament, the entire fovereignty for life of that island x. He gave him in marriage his cousin-german, the daughter of Ingelram de Couci, earl of Bedford; but soon after he permitted him to repudiate that lady, though of an unexceptionable character, and to marry a foreigner. a Bohemian, with whom he had become enamoured y. These public declarations of attachment turned the attention of the whole court towards the minion: All favours paffed through his hands: Access to the king could only be obtained by his mediation: And Richard feemed to take no pleasure in royal authority, but so far as it enabled him to load with favours and titles and dignities this object of his affections.

Difcontent of the barons.

THE jealoufy of power immediately produced an animofity between the minion and his creatures on the one hand, and the princes of the blood and chief nobility on the other; and the usual complaints against the insolence of favourites were loudly echoed, and greedily received, in every part of the Moubray earl of Nottingham, the mareschal, Fitz-Alan earl of Arundel, Piercy earl of Northumberland, Montacute earl of Salisbury, Beauchamp earl of Warwic, were all connected with each other, and with the princes, by friendship or alliance, and still more by their common antipathy to those who had eclipsed them in the king's favour and confidence. No longer kept in awe by the personal character of the prince, they scorned to Submit to his ministers; and the method which

they

<sup>\*</sup> Cotton, p. 310, 311. Cox's Hist. of Ireland, p. 129. Waly Walfingham, p. 328. fingham, p. 324.

they took to redrefs the grievances complained of, CHAP. well fuited the violence of the age, and proves the desperate extremities to which every opposition was fure to be instantly carried.

1386.

MICHAEL DE LA POLE, the present chancellor, and lately created earl of Suffolk, was the fon of an eminent merchant; but had rifen by his abilities and valour during the wars of Edward III., had acquired the friendship of that monarch, and was esteemed the person of greatest experience and capacity among those who were attached to the duke of Ireland and the king's fecret council. The duke of Glocester, who had the house of commons at his devotion, impelled them to exercise that power, which they feem first to have assumed against Lord Latimer during the declining years of the late king; and an impeachment against the chancellor was carried up by them to the house of peers, which was no less at his devotion. The king forefaw the tempest preparing against him and his ministers. After attempting in vain to rouse the Londoners to his defence, he withdrew from parliament, and retired with his court to Eltham. The parliament fent a deputation, inviting him to return, and threatening, that, if he perfifted in abfenting himself, they would immediately diffolve, and leave the nation, though at that time in imminent danger of a French invasion, without any support or supply for its defence. At the fame time a member was encouraged to call for the record containing the parliamentary deposition of Edward II.; a plain intimation of the fate which Richard, if he continued refractory, had reason to expect from them. The king, finding himself unable to resist, was content to stipulate,

2 See note [B] at the end of the volume.

returned to the parliament z.

that, except finishing the present impeachment against Suffolk, no attack should be made upon any other of his ministers; and on that condition he XVII. 1386.

CHAP. NOTHING can prove more fully the innocence of Suffolk, than the frivolousness of the crimes which his enemies, in the present plenitude of their power. thought proper to object against him . It was alleged. that being chancellor, and obliged by his oath to confult the king's profit, he had purchased lands of the crown below their true value; that he had exchanged with the king a perpetual annuity of 400 marks a year, which he inherited from his father, and which was affigned upon the customs of the port of Hull for lands of an equal income; that having obtained for his fon the priory of St. Anthony, which was formerly possessed by a Frenchman, an enemy, and a schismatic, and a new prior being at the same time named by the pope, he had refused to admit this person, whose title was not legal, till he made a composition with his fon, and agreed to pay him a hundred pounds a year from the income of the benefice; that he had purchased, from one Tydeman of Limborch, an old and forfeited annuity of fifty pounds a-year upon the crown, and had engaged the king to admit that bad debt; and that, when created earl of Suffolk, he had obtained a grant of 500 pounds a year, to support the dignity of that title b. Even the proof of these articles, frivolous as they are, was found very deficient upon the trial: It appeared that Suffolk had made no purchase from the crown while he was chancellor, and that all his bargains of that kind were made before he was advanced to that dignity c. It is almost needless to add, that he was condemned notwithstanding his defence; and that he was deprived of his office.

<sup>2</sup> Cotton, p. 315. Knyghton, p. 2683.

c Cotton, p. 315.

b It is probable that the earl of Suffolk was not rich, nor able to Support the dignity without the bounty of the crown: For his father, Michael de la Pole, though a great merchant, had been ruined by lending money to the late king. See Cotton, p. 194. We may remark that the dukes of Glocester and York, though vastly rich, received at the same time each of them a thousand pounds a year, to support their dignity. Rymer, vol. vii. p. 481. Cotton, p. 310.

XVII.

1386.

GLOCESTER and his affociates observed their stipu- C HAP. lation with the king, and attacked no more of his ministers: But they immediately attacked himself and his royal dignity, and framed a commission after the model of those which had been attempted almost in every reign fince that of Richard I. and which had always been attended with extreme confusion d. By this commission, which was ratified by parliament, a council of fourteen perfons was appointed, all of Glocester's faction, except Nevil archbishop of York: The fovereign power was transferred to these men for a twelvemonth: The king, who had now reached the twenty-first year of his age, was in reality dethroned: The ariftocracy was rendered supreme: And though the term of the commission was limited, it was easy to foresee that the intentions of the party were to render it perpetual, and that power would with great difficulty be wrested from those grasping hands to which it was once committed. however, was obliged to fubmit: He figned the commission, which violence had extorted from him; he took an oath never to infringe it; and though at the end of the fession he publicly entered a protest, that the prerogatives of the crown, notwithstanding his late concession, should still be deemed entire and unimpaired e, the new commissioners, without regarding this declaration, proceeded to the exercise

foon fensible of the contempt into which he was fallen.

His favourites and ministers, who was fallen. THE king, thus dispossessed of royal power, was to remain about his person, failed not to aggravate the injury, which, without any demerit on his part, had been offered to him. And his eager temper was of itself sufficiently inclined to seek the means, both of recovering his authority, and of revenging himfelf on those who had invaded it. As the house of

of their authority.

<sup>\*</sup> Knyghton, p. 2686. Statutes at Large, 10 Rich. II. chap. i.

<sup>€</sup> Cocion, p. 318.



commons appeared now of weight in the constitution, he fecretly tried some expedients for procuring a favourable election: He founded some of the sheriffs, who being at that time both the returning offcers and magiltrates of great power in the counties, had naturally confiderable in luence in elections. But, as most of them had been appointed by his uncles, cither during his minority, or during the course of the present commission, he found them, in general, averic to his enterprise. The sentiments and inclinations of the judges were more favourable to him. He met, at Nortingham, fir Robert Trefilian, chief judice of the King's Bench, fir Robert Belknappe, chief jultice of the Common Pleas, fir John Cary, chief baron of the Exchequer, Holt, Fulthorpe, and Bourg, inferior jultices, and L. ckton, ferjeant at law; and he propoled to them some queries; which these lawyers, either from the influence of his authority or of realon, made no scruple of answering in the way he defired. They declared that the late commission was derigatory to the royalty and prerogative of the king: that those who procured it, or advised the king to confent to it, were punishable with death; that those who necessitated and compelled him were guilty of treason; that those were equally criminal who should persevere in maintaining it; that the king has the right of dissolving parliaments at pleasure; that the parliament, while it fits, must first proceed upon the king's bufiness; and that this affembly cannot, without his conient, impeach any of his ministers and indges . Even according to our present strict maxims with regard to law and the royal prerogative, all these determinations, except the two last, appear justinable: And as the great privileges of the commons, particularly that of impeachment, were hitherto new,

<sup>:</sup> Knyghton, p. 2694. Youd. Neuft. p. 541.



f In the preamble to f Henry IV. cap. vii it is implied, that the flexists in a manner appointed the members of the house of commons not only in this parl ament, but in many others.

and supported by few precedents, there want not plau- CHAP. fible reasons to justify these opinions of the judges h. They figned therefore their answer to the king's queries before the archbishops of York and Dublin, the bithops of Durham, Chichester, and Bangor, the duke of Ireland, the earl of Suffolk, and two other counsellors of inferior quality.



THE duke of Glocester and his adherents soon got intelligence of this fecret confultation, and were naturally very much alarmed at it. They faw the king's intentions; and they determined to prevent the execution of them. As foon as he came to London, which they knew was well disposed to their party, they fecretly affembled their forces, and appeared in arms at Haringay-park, near Highgate, with a power which Richard and his ministers were not able to refist. They fent him a message by the archbishop of Canterbury, and the lords Lovel, Cobham, and Devereux, and demanded that the persons who had seduced him by their pernicious counsel, and were traitors both to him and to the kingdom, should be delivered up to them. A few days after they appeared in his presence, armed and attended with armed followers; and they accused, by name, the archbishop of York, the duke of Ireland, the earl of Suffolk, fir Robert Trefilian, and fir Nicholas Brembre, as

h The parliament, in 1341, exacted of Edward III. that, on the third day of every fession, the king should resume all the great offices: and that the ministers should then answer to any accusation that should be brought against them: Which plainly implies that while ministers, they could not be accused or impeached in parliament. Henry IV. told the commons, that the usage of parliament required them first to go through the king's bufiness in granting supplies; which order the king intended not to alter. Parl. Hift. vol. ii. p. 65. Upon the whole it must be allowed, that according to ancient practice and principles, there are, at least, plausible grounds for all these opinions of the judges. It must be remarked, that this affirmation of Henry IV. was given deliberately, after confulting the house of peers, who were much better acquainted with the usage of parliament than the ignorant commons. And it has the greater authority, because Henry IV. had made this very principle a confiderable article of charge against his predeceffor; and that a very few years before. So ill grounded were most of the imputations thrown on the unhappy Richard!

XVII. 1387.

CHAP. public and dangerous enemies to the state. They threw down their gauntlets before the king, and fiercely offered to maintain the truth of their charge by duel. The persons accused, and all the other obnoxious ministers, had withdrawn or had concealed themselves.

> THE duke of Ireland fled to Cheshire, and levied fome forces, with which he advanced to relieve the king from the violence of the nobles. Glocester encountered him in Oxfordshire with much superior forces; routed him, dispersed his followers, and obliged him to fly into the Low-Countries, where he died in exile a few years after. The lords then appeared at London with an army of forty thousand men; and having obliged the king to fummon a parliament, which was entirely at their devotion, they had full power, by observing a few legal forms, to take vengeance on all their enemies. Five great peers, men whose combined power was able at any time to shake the throne, the duke of Glocester, the king's uncle; the earl of Derby, fon of the duke of Lancaster; the earl of Arundel; the earl of Warwic, and the earl of Nottingham, mareschal of England, entered before the parliament anaccufation or appeal, as it was called, against the five counsellors whom they had already accused before the king. The parliament, who ought to have been judges, were not ashamed to impose an oath on all their members, by which they bound themselves to live and die with the lords appellants, and to defend them against all opposition with their lives and fortunes b.

THE other proceedings were well fuited to the vio-Icnce and iniquity of the times. A charge, confifting of thirty-nine articles, was delivered in by the appellants; and, as none of the accused counsellors except fir Nicholas Brembre was in custody, the rest were cited to appear; and, upon their absenting

¥388. 3d Feb.

Expulsion or execution of the king's ministers.

h Cotton, p. 322.

themselves, the house of peers, after a very short in- C H A P. terval, without hearing a witness, without examining a fact, or deliberating on one point of law, declared them guilty of high treason. Sir Nicholas Brembre, who was produced in court, had the appearance, and but the appearance, of a trial: The peers, though they were not by law his proper judges, pronounced, in a very fummary manner, fentence of death upon him; and he was executed, together with fir Robert Trefilian, who had been discovered and taken in the interval.

1388.

IT would be tedious to recite the whole charge delivered in against the five counsellors; which is to be met with in feveral collections i. It is fufficient to observe, in general, that if we reason upon the supposition, which is the true one, that the royal prerogative was invaded by the commission extorted by the duke of Glocester and his affociates, and that the king's person was afterwards detained in custody by rebels, many of the articles will appear, not only to imply no crime in the duke of Ireland and the ministers, but to ascribe to them actions which were laudable, and which they were bound by their allegiance to perform. The few articles impeaching the conduct of these ministers before that commisfion, which subverted the constitution, and annihilated all justice and legal authority, are vague and general; fuch as their engroffing the king's favour, keeping his barons at a distance from him, obtaining unreasonable grants for themselves or their creatures, and diffipating the public treasure by useless expences. No violence is objected to them; no particular illegal act \*; no breach of any statute; and their administration may therefore be concluded to have been fo far innocent and inoffensive. All the diforders indeed feem to have proceeded, not

i Knyghton, p. 2715. Tyrrel, vol. iii. part 2. p. 919. from the records. Parl. Hift. vol. i. p. 414.

<sup>\*</sup> See note [C] at the end of the volume.

XVII. 1388.

CHAP, from any violation of the laws, or any ministerial tyranny, but merely from a rivalship of power, which the duke of Glocester and the great nobility, agreeably to the genius of the times, carried to the utmost extremity against their opponents, without any

regard to reason, justice, or humanity.

But these were not the only deeds of violence committed during the triumph of the party. All the other judges, who had figned the extrajudicial opinions at Nottingham, were condemned to death, and were, as a grace or favour, banished to Ireland: though they pleaded the fear of their lives, and the menaces of the king's ministers as their excuse. Lord Beauchamp of Holt, fir James Berners, and John Salisbury, were also tried and condemned for high treason; merely because they had attempted to defeat the late commission: But the life of the latter The fate of fir Simon Burley was was spared. more severe: This gentleman was much beloved for his personal merit, had distinguished himself by many honourable actions k, was created knight of the garter, and had been appointed governor to Richard, by the choice of the late king and of the Black Prince: He had attended his mafter from the carliest infancy of that prince, and had ever remained extremely attached to him: Yet all these considerations could not fave him from falling a victim to Glocester's vengeance. This execution, more than all the others, made a deep impression on the mind of Richard: His queen too (for he was already married to the fifter of the emperor Winceslaus, king of Bohemia) interested herself in behalf of Burley: She remained three hours on her knees before the duke of Glocester, pleading for that gentleman's

k At least this is the character given of him by Froisfard, liv. ii. who knew him perfonally: Walfingham, p. 334, gives a very different character of him: but he is a writer fomewhat passionate and partial. and the choice made of this gentleman by Edward III. and the Black Prince for the education of Richard, makes the character given him. by Froiffard much more probable.

life ;

life; but though she was become extremely popular C H AP. by her amiable qualities, which had acquired her the appellation of the good queen Ann, her petition

was sternly rejected by the inexorable tyrant.

THE parliament concluded this violent scene, by a declaration that none of the articles, decided on these trials to be treason, should ever afterwards be drawn into precedent by the judges, who were still to confider the statute of the twenty-fifth of Edward as the rule of their decisions. The house of lords feem not, at that time, to have known or acknowledged the principle, that they themselves were bound, in their judicial capacity, to follow the rules which they, in conjunction with the king and commons, had established in their legislative \*. It was also enacted, that every one should swear to the perpetual maintenance and support of the forfeitures and

attainders, and of all the other acts passed during this parliament. The archbishop of Canterbury added the penalty of excommunication, as a farther fecurity

Ir might naturally be expected, that the king,

to these violent transactions.

being reduced to fuch flavery by the combination of the princes and chief nobility, and having appeared fo unable to defend his fervants from the cruel effects of their refentment, would long remain in subjection to them; and never would recover the royal power, without the most violent struggles and convulsions: But the event proved contrary. In less than a twelvemonth, Richard, who was in his twenty-third year, declared in council, that, as he had now attained the full age which entitled him to govern by his own authority his kingdom and household, he resolved to 1389.

\* See note [D] at the end of the volume.

exercise his right of sovereignty; and when no one ventured to contradict fo reasonable an intention, he deprived Fitz-Alan, archbishop of Canterbury, of the dignity of chancellor, and bestowed that high

office

XVII. 1389.

C II A P. office on William of Wickham, bishop of Winches ter; the bishop of Hereford was displaced from the office of treasurer, the earl of Arundel from that of admiral: even the duke of Glocester and the earl of Warwic were removed for a time from the council: And no opposition was made to these great changes. The history of this reign is imperfect, and little to be depended on; except where it is supported by public records: And it is not easy for us to assign the reason of this unexpected event. Perhaps some fecret animofities, naturally to be expected in that fituation, had creeped in among the great men, and had enabled the king to recover his authority. Perhaps the violence of their former proceedings had · lost them the affections of the people, who foon repent of any cruel extremities to which they are carried by their leaders. However this may be, Richard exercifed with moderation the authority which he had refumed. He feemed to be entirely reconciled to his uncles 1 and the other great men, of whom he had fo much reason to complain. He never attempted to recal from banishment the duke of Ireland, whom he found fo obnoxious to them: He confirmed, by proclamation, the general pardon which the parliament had passed for all offences: And he courted the affections of the people, by voluntarily remitting fome fubfidies which had been granted him; a remarkable and almost singular instance of fuch generofity.

AFTER this composure of domestic differences. and this restoration of the government to its natural flate, there passes an interval of eight years, which affords not many remarkable events. The duke of Lancaster returned from Spain; having resigned to his rival all pretentions to the crown of Castile upon payment of a large fum of money m, and having married his daughter, Philippa, to the king of Por-

<sup>1</sup> Dugdale, vol. ii. p. 170. fingham, p. 344.

m Knyghton, p. 2677. Wal.

XVII.

1389.

tugal. The authority of this prince ferved to coun- C HAP. terbalance that of the duke of Glocester, and secured the power of Richard, who paid great court to his eldest uncle, by whom he had never been offended, and whom he found more moderate in his temper than the younger. He made a cession to him for life of the dutchy of Guienne, which the inclinations and changeable humour of the Gascons had restored to the English government; but as they remonstrated loudly against this deed, it was finally, with the duke's confent, revoked by Richard . There happened an incident, which produced a diffension between Lancaster and his two brothers. After the death of the Spanish princefs, he espoused Catharine Swineford, daughter of a private knight of Hainault, by whose alliance York and Glocester thought the dignity of their family much injured: But the king gratified his uncle, by passing in parliament a charter of legitimation to the children whom that lady had born him before marriage, and by creating the eldest earl of Somerfet P.

THE wars, meanwhile, which Richard had inherited with his crown, still continued; though interrupted by frequent truces, according to the practice of that age, and conducted with little vigour, by reason of the weakness of all parties. The French war was scarcely heard of; the tranquillity of the northern borders was only interrupted by one inroad of the Scots, which proceeded more from a rivalship between the two martial families of Piercy and Douglas, than from any national quarrel: A fierce battle or skirmish was fought at Otterborne q, in which young Piercy, firnamed Hotspur, from his impetuous valour, was taken prisoner, and Douglas slain; and the victory remained undecided.

n Rymer, vol. vii. p. 659. o ibid. p. 687. P Cotton, p. 365. Walfingham, p. 352. 9 15th August, 1388.

Freisfard, liv. iii. chap. 124, 125, 126. Walfingham, p. 355.

1396.

C H A P. Some infurrections of the Irish obliged the king to make an expedition into that country, which he reduced to obedience; and he recovered, in some degree, by this enterprise, his character of courage, which had fuffered a little by the inactivity of his reign. At last, the English and French courts began to think in earnest of a lasting peace; but found it so difficult to adjust their opposite pretensions, that they were content to establish a truce of twentyfive years s: Brest and Cherbourg were restored, the former to the duke of Britanny, the latter to the king of Navarre: Both parties were left in possession of all the other places which they held at the time of concluding the truce: And to render the amity between the two crowns more durable, Richard, who was now a widower, was affianced to Isabella, the daughter of Charles'. This princess was only seven years of age; but the king agreed to fo unequal a match, chiefly that he might fortify himfelf by this alliance against the enterprises of his uncles, and the incurable turbulence as well as inconstancy of his barons.

> THE administration of the king, though it was not, in this interval, fullied by any unpopular act, except the feizing of the charter of London ", which was foon after restored, tended not much to corroborate his authority; and his personal character brought him into contempt, even while his public government appeared, in a good measure, unexceptionable. Indolent, profuse, addicted to low pleasures; he spent his whole time in feasting and jollity, and diffipated, in idle show, or in bounties to favourites of no reputation, that revenue which the people expected to fee him employ in enterprifes directed to public honour and advantage. He forgot his rank by admitting all men to his familiarity; and he was not fensible, that their acquaint-

<sup>5</sup> Rymer, vol. vii. p. 820. t Ibid. p. 811.

ance with the qualities of his mind was not able to CHAP. impress them with the respect which he neglected to preserve from his birth and station. The earls of Kent and Huntingdon, his half brothers, were his chief confidents and favourites; and though he never devoted himself to them with so profuse an affection as that with which he had formerly been attached to the duke of Ireland, it was easy for men to fee, that every grace passed through their hands, and that the king had rendered himself a mere cypher in the government. The fmall regard which the public bore to his person, disposed them to murmur against his administration, and to receive, with greedy ears, every complaint which the difcontented or ambitious grandees fuggested to them.

GLOCESTER foon perceived the advantages which this diffolute conduct gave him; and finding, that the dukeof both refentment and jealoufy on the part of his ne. Glocester. phew still prevented him from acquiring any ascendant over that prince, he determined to cultivate his popularity with the nation, and to revenge himself on those who eclipsed him in favour and authority. He feldom appeared at court or in council: He never declared his opinion but in order to disapprove of the measures embraced by the king and his favourites; and he courted the friendship of every man, whom disappointment or private resentment had rendered an enemy to the administration. The long truce with France was unpopular with the English, who breathed nothing but war against that hostile nation; and Glocester took care to encourage all the vuigar prejudices which prevailed on this subject. Forgetting the misfortunes which attended the English arms during the later years of Edward, he made an invidious comparison between the glories of that reign and the inactivity of the prefent, and he lamented that Richard should have degenerated fo much from the heroic virtues by which

¥397.

CHAP. his father and his grandfather were diffinguished. The military men were inflamed with a defire of war, when they heard him talk of the fignal victories formerly obtained, and of the easy prey which might be made of French riches by the superior valour of the English: The populace readily embraced the same fentiments: And all men exclaimed that this prince, whose counsels were so much neglected, was the true support of English honour, and alone able to raife the nation to its former power and fplendour. His great abilities, his popular manners, his princely extraction, his immense riches, his high office of constable w, all these advantages, not a little affifted by his want of court-favour, gave him a mighty authority in the kingdom, and rendered him formidable to Richard and his ministers.

> FROISSARD's, a contemporary writer and very impartial, but whose credit is fomewhat impaired by his want of exactness in material facts, alcribes to the duke of Glocester more desperate views, and fuch as were totally incompatible with the government and domestic tranquillity of the nation. According to that historian, he proposed to his nephew, Roger Mortimer earl of Marche, whom Richard had declared his fucceffor, to give him immediate possession of the throne, by the deposition of a prince fo unworthy of power and authority: And when Mortimer declined the project, he resolved to make a partition of the kingdom between himself, his two brothers, and the earl of Arundel; and entirely to disposses Richard of the crown. The king, it is faid, being informed of these designs, saw that either his own ruin or that of Glocester was inevitable; and he refolved, by a hasty blow, to prevent the execution of fuch destructive projects. certain, that Glocester, by his own confession, had often affected to speak contemptuously of the king's

W Rymer, vol. vii. p. 152.

person and government; had deliberated concern- CHAP. ing the lawfulness of throwing off allegiance to him; and had even born part in a fecret conference, where his deposition was proposed, and talked of, and determined y: But it is reasonable to think, that his schemes were not so far advanced as to make him refolve on putting them immediately in execution. The danger, probably, was still too distant to render a desperate remedy entirely necessary for the

fecurity of government.

But whatever opinion we may form of the danger arifing from Glocester's conspiracies, his averfion to the French truce and alliance was public and avowed; and that court, which had now a great influence over the king, pushed him to provide for his own fafety, by punishing the traiterous defigns of his uncle. The refentment against his former acts of violence revived; the fense of his refractory and uncompliant behaviour was still recent: and a man, whose ambition had once usurped royal authority, and who had murdered all the faithful fervants of the king, was thought capable, on a favourable opportunity, of renewing the fame criminal enterprises. The king's precipitate temper admitted of no deliberation: He ordered Glocester to be unexpectedly arrested; to be hurried on board a ship which was lying in the river; and to be carried over to Calais, where alone, by reason of his numerous partifans, he could fafely be detained in custody z. The earls of Arundel and Warwic were feized at the same time: The malcontents, so sud-

y Cotton, p. 378. Tyrrel, vol. iii. part 2. p. 972, from the records. Parliamentary History, vol. i. p. 473. That this confession was genuine, and obtained without violence, may be entirely depended on. Judge Rickhill, who brought it over from Calais, was tried on that account, and acquitted in the first parliament of Henry IV. when Glocester's party was prevalent. His acquittal, notwithstanding his innocence, may even appear marvellous, confidering the times. See Cotton, p. 393.

Froisfard, liv. iv. chap. 90. Walfing. p. 354.

XVII 3397·

CHAP. denly deprived of their leaders, were aftonished and overawed: And the concurrence of the dukes of Lancaster and York in those measures, together with the earls of Derby and Rutland, the eldest sons of these princes a, bereaved them of all possibility of refistance.

17th Sept.

A PARLIAMENT was immediately fummoned at Westminster; and the king doubted not to find the peers, and still more the commons, very compliant with his will. This house had in a former parliament given him very fensible proofs of their attachment\*; and the prefent suppression of Glocester's party made him still more assured of a favourable election. As a farther expedient for that purpose, he is also said to have employed the influence of the sheriffs; a practice which, though not unufual, gave umbrage, but which the established authority of that affembly rendered afterwards still more familiar to the nation. Accordingly the parliament passed whatever acts the king was pleased to dictate to them b: They annulled for ever the commission which usurped upon the royal authority, and they declared it treasonable to attempt, in any future period, the revival of any fimilar commission :: They abrogated all the acts which attainted the king's ministers, and which that parliament who passed them, and the whole nation, had sworn inviolably to maintain: And they declared the general pardon then granted to be invalid, as extorted by force, and never ratified by the free consent of Though Richard, after he refumed the government, and lay no longer under constraint, had voluntarily, by proclamation, confirmed that general indemnity; this circumstance seemed not,

<sup>\*</sup> See note [E] at the end of the 2 Rymer, vol. viii. p. 7.

The nobles brought numerous retainers with them to give them fecurity, as we are told by Walfingham, p. 354. The king had only a few Cheshiremen for his guard.

s Statutes at Large, 21 Richard II.

¥397-

in their eyes, to merit any confideration. Even a C H A P. particular pardon, granted fix years after to the earl of Arundel, was annulled by parliament; on pretence that it had been procured by furprife, and that the king was not then fully apprifed of the de-

gree of guilt incurred by that nobleman.

THE commons then preferred an impeachment against Fitz-Alan, archbishop of Canterbury, and brother to Arundel, and accused him for his concurrence in procuring the illegal commission, and in attainting the king's ministers. The primate pleaded guilty; but as he was protected by the ecclefiaftical privileges, the king was fatisfied with a fentence, which banished him the kingdom, and fequestered his temporalities d. An appeal or accusation was presented against the duke of Glocester, and the earls of Arundel and Warwic, by the earls of Rutland, Kent, Huntingdon, Somerset, Salisbury, and Nottingham, together with the lords Spencer and Scrope, and they were accused of the same crimes which had been imputed to the archbishop, as well as of their appearance against the king in a hostile manner at Haringay-park. The earl of Arundel, who was brought to the bar, wifely confined all his defence to the pleading of both the general and particular pardon of the king; but his plea being over-ruled, he was condemned and executed . The earl of Warwic, who was also convicted of high treason, was, on account of his submissive behaviour, pardoned as to his life, but doomed to perpetual banishment in the Isle of Man. No new acts of treason were imputed to either of these noblemen. The only crimes, for which they were condemned, were the old attempts against the crown, which feemed to be obliterated, both by the distance of time and by repeated pardons f. The

d Cotton, p. 368. chap. 90. Walfing. p. 354. p. 968, from the records.

e Ibid. p. 377. Froissard, liv. iv. f Tyrrel, vol. iii. part ii.

XVII. 1397.

CHAP. reasons of this method of proceeding, it is difficult to conjecture. The recent conspiracies of Glocester feem certain from his own confession: But, perhaps, the king and ministry had not at that time in their hands any fatisfactory proof of their reality; perhaps, it was difficult to convict Arundel and Warwic of any participation in them; perhaps, an inquiry into these conspiracies would have involved in the guilt fome of those great noblemen who now concurred with the crown, and whom it was necessary to cover from all imputation; or perhaps the king, according to the genius of the age, was indifferent about maintaining even the appearance of law and equity, and was only folicitous by any means to ensure success in these prosecutions. This point, like many others in ancient history, we are obliged to leave altogether undetermined.

Murder of thedukeof Glocester.

A WARRANT was iffued to the earl mareschal. governor of Calais, to bring over the duke of Glocester, in order to his trial; but the governor returned for answer, that the duke had died suddenly of an apoplexy in that fortress. Nothing could be more suspicious, from the time, than the circumflances of that prince's death: It became immediately the general opinion, that he was murdered by orders from his nephew: In the subsequent reign undoubted proofs were produced in parliament, that he had been fuffocated with pillows by his keepers &. And it appeared that the king, apprehensive left the public trial and execution of fo popular a prince, and fo near a relation, might prove both dangerous and invidious, had taken this base method of gratifying, and, as he fancied, concealing his revenge upon him. Both parties, in their fuccessive triumphs, feem to have had no farther concern than that of retaliating upon their adversaries; and neither of them were aware, that, by imitating, they indirectly justified, as far as it lay in their power, all the illegal violence of the opposite party.

<sup>8</sup> Cotton, p. 399, 400. Dugdale, vol. ii. p 171.

THIS fession concluded with the creation or ad- C HAP. vancement of feveral peers: The earl of Derby was made duke of Hereford; the earl of Rutland, duke of Albemarle; the earl of Kent, duke of Surrey; the earl of Huntingdon, duke of Exeter; the earl of Nottingham, duke of Norfolk; the earl of Somerset, marquis of Dorset; lord Spenser, earl of Glocester; Ralph Nevil, earl of Westmoreland; Thomas Piercy, earl of Worcester; William Scrope, earl of Wiltshire h. The parliament, after a session of twelve days, was adjourned to Shrewsbury. The king, before the departure of the members, exacted from them an oath for the perpetual maintenance and establishment of all their acts; an oath similar to that which had formerly been required by the duke of Glocester and his party, and which had already proved so vain and fruitless.

BOTH king and parliament met in the same difpositions at Shrewsbury. So anxious was Richard for the fecurity of these acts, that he obliged the lords and commons to fwear anew to them on the cross of Canterbury; and he soon after procured a bull from the pope, by which they were, as he imagined, perpetually fecured and established k. The parliament, on the other hand, conferred on him for life the duties on wool, wool-fells, and leather, and granted him, besides, a subsidy of one tenth and a half, and one fifteenth and a half. They also reversed the attainder of Tresilian and the other judges, and, with the approbation of the present judges, declared the answers, for which these magistrates had been impeached, to be just and legal: And they carried so far their retrospect, as to reverse, on the petition of lord Spenser, earl of Glocester, the attainder pronounced against the two Spenfers in the reign of Edward II. The ancient history of England is nothing but a catalogue of re-

1398. 28th Jana

h Cotton, p. 370, 371.

k Walfing. p. 355.

m Cotton, p 372.

Vol. III.

<sup>1</sup> Ibid. p. 371.

<sup>1</sup> Statutes at Large, at Rich. II.

C H A P. verfals: Every thing is in fluctuation and movement: One faction is continually undoing what was established by another: And the multiplied oaths, which each party exacted for the fecurity of the present acts, betray a perpetual confciousness of their instability.

THE parliament, before they were dissolved, elected a committee of twelve lords and fix commoners", whom they invested with the whole power both of lords and commons, and endowed with full authority to finish all business which had been laid before the houses, and which they had not had leifure to bring to a conclusion. This was an unusual concession; and though it was limited in the object, might, either immediately or as a precedent, have proved dangerous to the constitution: But the cause of that extraordinary measure was an event fingular and unexpected, which engaged the attention of the parliament.

AFTER the destruction of the duke of Glocester and the heads of that party, a mifunderstanding broke out among those noblemen who had joined in the profecution; and the king wanted either authority fufficient to appeale it, or forefight to prevent it. The duke of Hereford appeared in parliament, and accused the duke of Norfolk of having fpoken to him, in private, many flanderous words of the king, and of having imputed to that prince an intention of subverting and destroying many of his principal nobility P. Norfolk denied the charge, gave Hereford the lie, and offered to prove his own innocence by duel.

The names of the commissioners were, the dukes of Lancaster, York, Albemarle, Surrey, and Exeter; the marquis of Dorfet; the earls of March, Salifbury, Northumberland, Glocester, Winchester, and Wiltshire; John Buffey, Henry Green, John Russel, Robert Teyne. Henry Chelmelwicke, and John Golofre. It is to be remarked, that the duke of Lancaster always concurred with the rest in all their proceedings, even in the banishment of his fon, which was afterwards fo much complained of.

º Cotton, p. 372. Walfing. p. 355.

P Cotton, p. 372. Parliamentary History, vol. i. p. 490.

The challenge was accepted: The time and place CHAP. of combat were appointed: And as the event of this important trial by arms might require the interposition of legislative authority, the parliament thought it more fuitable to delegate their power to a committee, than to prolong the fession beyond the usual time which custom and general convenience had prescribed to it 9.

1298.

THE duke of Hereford was certainly very little delicate in the point of honour, when he revealed a private conversation to the ruin of the person who had entrusted him; and we may thence be more inclined to believe the duke of Norfolk's denial, than the other's affeveration. But Norfolk had in these transactions betrayed an equal neglect of honour, which brings him entirely on a level with his antagonist. Though he had publicly joined with the duke of Glocester and his party in all the former acts of violence against the king; and his name stands among the appellants who accused the duke of Ireland and the other ministers; yet was he not ashamed publicly to impeach his former associates for the very crimes which he had concurred with them in committing; and his name increases the lift of those appellants who brought them to a trial. Such were the principles and practices of those ancient knights and barons during the prevalence of the aristocratical government, and the reign of chivalry.

THE lifts for this decision of truth and right were appointed at Coventry before the king: All the nobility of England bandied into parties, and adhered either to the one duke or the other: The whole nation was held in suspence with regard to the event: But when the two champions appeared in the field, ac-

<sup>9.</sup> In the first year of Henry VI. when the authority of parliament was great, and when that affembly could leaft be fuspected of lying under violence, a like concession was made to the privy council, from like motives of convenience. See Cotton, p. 364.

CHAP. coutred for the combat, the king interposed, to prevent both the prefent effusion of such noble blood, and the future confequences of the quarrel. By the advice and authority of the parliamentary commissioners he stopped the duel; and to shew his impartiality, he ordered, by the same authority, both the combatants to leave the kingdom'; affigning one country for the place of Norfolk's exile, which he declared perpetual; another for that of Hereford, which he limited to ten years.

> HEREFORD was a man of great prudence and command of temper; and he behaved himself with fo much submission in these delicate circumstances. that the king, before his departure, promifed to shorten the term of his exile four years; and he also granted him letters patent, by which he was empowered, in case any inheritance should in the interval accrue to him, to enter immediately in posfession, and to postpone the doing of homage till his return.

Banishment of Henry duke of

Hereford.

THE weakness and fluctuation of Richard's counfels appear no where more evident than in the conduct of this affair. No fooner had Hereford left the kingdom, than the king's jealoufy of the power and riches of that prince's family revived; and he was fentible, that, by Glocester's death, he had only removed a counterpoise to the Lancastrian interest, which was now become formidable to his crown and kingdom. Being informed that Hereford had entered into a treaty of marriage with the daughter of the duke of Berry, uncle to the French king, he determined to prevent the finishing of an alliance which would fo much extend the interest of his cousin in foreign countries; and he fent over the earl of Salisbury to Paris with a commission for that purpose. The death of the duke of Lancaster, which happened foon after, called upon him to take

3399. 3d Feb.

Cotton, p. 380. Walfingham, p. 356.

XVII.

1399.

new resolutions with regard to that opulent suc- C H A P. cession. The present duke, in consequence of the king's patent, defired to be put in possession of the estate and jurisdictions of his father; But Richard, afraid of strengthening the hands of a man whom he had already fo much offended, applied to the parliamentary commissioners, and persuaded them, that this affair was but an appendage to that business which the parliament had delegated to them. their authority he revoked his letters patent, and retained possession of the estate of Lancaster: And by the same authority he seized and tried the duke's attorney, who had procured and infifted on the letters, and he had him condemned as a traitor, for faithfully executing that trust to his master'. An extravagant act of power! even though the king changed, in favour of the attorney, the penalty of death into that of banishment.

HENRY, the new duke of Lancaster, had acquired, by his conduct and abilities, the efteem of the public; and having ferved with distinction against the infidels in Lithuania, he had joined to his other praifes those of piety and valour, virtues which have at all times a great influence over mankind, and were, during those ages, the qualities chiefly held in estimation. He was connected with most of the principal nobility by blood, alliance, or friendfhip; and as the injury done him by the king might in its confequences affect all of them, he eafily brought them, by a fense of common interest, to take part in his refentment. The people, who must have an object of affection, who found nothing in the king's person which they could love or revere, and who were even difgusted with many parts of his conduct", eafily transferred to Henry that

Tyrrel, vol. iii. part 2. p. 991, from the records.

Walfingham, p. 343.

<sup>&</sup>quot; He levied fines upon those who had ten years before joined the duke of Glocester and his party: They were obliged to pay him money, before he would allow them to enjoy the benefit of the ins

C H A P. attachment, which the death of the duke of Glocester had left without any fixed direction. His misfortunes were lamented; the injustice which he had fuffered was complained of; and all men turned their eyes towards him, as the only person that could retrieve the lost honour of the nation, or redress the supposed abuses in the government.

Return of Henry.

eth July.

WHILE fuch were the dispositions of the people, Richard had the imprudence to embark for Ireland, in order to revenge the death of his coufin, Roger earl of Marche, the presumptive heir of the crown, who had lately been flain in a skirmish by the natives; and he thereby left the kingdom of England open to the attempts of his provoked and ambitious enemy. Henry, embarking at Nantz with a retinue of fixty persons, among whom were the archbishop of Canterbury and the young earl of Arundel, nephew to that prelate, landed at Ravenfour in Yorkshire; and was immediately joined by the earls of Northumberland and Westmoreland, two of the most potent barons in England. Here he took a folemn oath, that he had no other purpose in this invasion, than to recover the dutchy of Lancaster, unjustly detained from him; and he invited all his friends in England, and all lovers of their country, to fecond him in this reasonable and moderate pretension. Every place was in commotion: The malcontents in all quarters flew to arms; London discovered the strongest symptoms of its disposition to mutiny and rebellion: And Henry's army, increasing on every day's march, foon amounted to the number of 60,000 combatants.

General sion.

THE duke of York was left guardian of the realin; a place to which his birth intitled him, but

demnity; and in the articles of charge against him, it is afferted, that the payment of one fine did not fuffice. It is indeed likely, that his ministers would abuse the power put into their hands; and this grievance extended to very many people. Historians agree in representing this practice as a great oppression. See Otterbourne, p. 199.

which

which both his slender abilities, and his natural connexions with the duke of Lancaster, rendered him utterly incapable of filling in fuch a dangerous emergency. Such of the chief nobility as were attached to the crown, and could either have feconded the guardian's good intentions, or have overawed his infidelity, had attended the king into Ireland; and the efforts of Richard's friends were every where more feeble than those of his enemies. The duke of York, however, appointed the rendezvous of his forces at St. Albans, and foon affembled an army of 40,000 men; but found them entirely destitute of zeal and attachment to the royal cause, and more inclined to join the party of the rebels. He hearkened therefore very readily to a message from Henry who entreated him not to oppose a loyal and humble supplicant in the recovery of his legal patrimony; and the guardian even declared publicly that he would fecond his nephew in fo reasonable a request. His army embraced with acclamations the fame measures; and the duke of Lancaster, reinforced by them, was now entirely mafter of the kingdom. He hastened to Bristol, into which some of the king's ministers had thrown themselves; and foon obliging that place to furrender, he yielded to the popular wishes, and without giving them a trial, ordered the earl of Wiltshire, fir John Bussy, and fir Henry Green, whom he there took priloners. to be led to immediate execution.

THE king, receiving intelligence of this invafion and infurrection, hastened over from Ireland, and landed in Milford Haven with a body of 20,000 men: But even this army, fo much inferior to the enemy, was either overawed by the general combination of the kingdom, or feized with the fame spirit of disassection; and they gradually deserted him, till he found that he had not above 6000 men who followed his standard. It appeared, therefore, necessary to retire secretly from this small body, D 4 which

aft Sept.

CHAP. which ferved only to expose him to danger; and he fled to the isle of Anglesea, where he purposed to embark either for Ireland or France, and there await the tavourable opportunities which the return of his subjects to a sense of duty, or their future discontents against the duke of Lancaster, would probably afford him. Henry, fenfible of the danger, fent to him the earl of Northumberland with the strongest professions of loyalty and submission; and that nobleman, by treachery and false oaths, made himself master of the king's person, and carried him to his enemy at Flint Castle. Richard was conducted to London, by the duke of Lancafter, who was there received with the acclamations of the mutinous populace. It is pretended that the recorder met him on the road, and in the name of the city, entreated him, for the public fafety, to put Richard to death, with all his adherents who were prisoners w; but the duke prudently determined to make many others participate in his guilt, before he would proceed to those extremities. For this purpose, he issued writs of election in the king's name, and appointed the immediate meeting of a parliament at Westminster.

Such of the peers as were most devoted to the king, were either fled or imprisoned; and no opponents, even among the barons, dared to appear against Henry, amidst that scene of outrage and violence, which commonly attends revolutions, especially in England during those turbulent ages. is also easy to imagine, that a house of commons, elected during this universal ferment and this triumph of the Lancastrian party, would be extremely attached to that cause, and ready to second every fuggestion of their leaders. That order, being as yet of too little weight to stem the torrent, was al-

Walfingham.

ways carried along with it, and ferved only to in- CHAP. crease the violence, which the public interest reguired it should endeavour to control. The duke of Lancaster, therefore, sensible that he should be Deposientirely mafter, began to carry his views to the king. crown itself; and he deliberated with his partisans concerning the most proper means of effecting his daring purpose. He first extorted a resignation from Richard \*: but as he knew that this deed would plainly appear the refult of force and fear, he also purposed, notwithstanding the danger of the prece- 28th Sept. dent to himself and his posterity, to have him solemnly deposed in parliament, for his pretended tyranny and misconduct. A charge, consisting of thirty-three articles, was accordingly drawn up against him, and prefented to that assembly y.

1399.

If we examine these articles, which are expressed with extreme acrimony against Richard, we shall find that, except some rash speeches which are imputed to him , and of whose reality, as they are said to have passed in private conversation, we may reafonably entertain some doubt; the chief amount of the charge is contained in his violent conduct during the two last years of his reign, and naturally divides itself into two principal heads. The first and most confiderable is the revenge which he took on the princes and great barons, who had formerly usurped, and still persevered in controlling and threatening, his authority; the fecond is the violation of the laws and general privileges of his people. But the former, however irregular in many of its circumstances, was fully supported by authority of parliament, and was but a copy of the violence which the princes and barons themselves, during their former triumph, had exercised against him and his party.

<sup>\*</sup> Knyghton, p. 2744. Otterbourne, p. 212. vol. iii. part 2. p. 1008, from the records. Knyghton, p. 2746. Otterbourne, p. 214. Z Art. 16. 26.

XVII. 13994

CHAP. The detention of Lancaster's estate was, properly fpeaking, a revocation, by parliamentary authority, of a grace, which the king himself had formerly granted him. The murder of Glocester (for the fecret execution, however merited, of that prince, certainly deferves this appellation) was a private deed, formed not any precedent, and implied not any usurped or arbitrary power of the crown, which could justly give umbrage to the people. It really proceeded from a defect of power in the king, rather than from his ambition; and proves that instead of being dangerous to the constitution, he possessed not even the authority necessary for the execution of the laws.

> Concerning the fecond head of accufation, as it mostly consists of general facts, was framed by Richard's inveterate enemies, and was never allowed to be answered by him or his friends, it is more difficult to form a judgment. The greater part of these grievances, imputed to Richard, seems to be the exertion of arbitrary prerogatives; fuch as the dispensing power a, levying purveyance b, employing the marshal's court ', extorting loans d, granting protections from law-fuits e; prerogatives which, though often complained of, had often been exercifed by his predecessors, and still continued to be so by his fucceffors. But whether his irregular acts of this kind were more frequent, and injudicious, and violent than usual, or were only laid hold of and exaggerated by the factions to which the weakness of his reign had given birth, we are not able, at this distance, to determine with certainty. There is, however, one circumstance in which his conduct is visibly different from that of his grandfather: He is not accused of having imposed one arbitrary tax, without confent of parliament, during his whole

a Art. 13, 17, 18. b Art. 22. d Art. 14. e Art. 16.

c Art. 27.

reign f: Scarcely a year passed during the reign of C H A P. XVII. Edward, which was free from complaints with regard to this dangerous exertion of authority. perhaps, the afcendant which Edward had acquired over the people, together with his great prudence, enabled him to make a use very advantageous to his fubjects of this and other arbitrary prerogatives, and rendered them a fmaller grievance in his hands, than a lefs absolute authority in those of his grandfon. This is a point which it would be rash for us to decide positively on either side; but it is certain, that a charge drawn up by the duke of Lancaster, and affented to by a parliament fituated in those circumstances, forms no manner of presumption with regard to the unufual irregularity or violence of the king's conduct in this particular g.

When the charge against Richard was presented to the parliament, though it was liable, almost in every article, to objections, it was not canvaffed, nor examined, nor disputed in either house, and feemed to be received with universal approbation. One man alone, the bishop of Carlisle, had the courage, amidst this general disloyalty and violence, to appear in defence of his unhappy master, and to plead his cause against all the power of the prevailing party. Though some topics, employed by that virtuous prelate, may feem to favour too much the doctrine of passive obedience, and to make too large a facrifice of the rights of mankind; he was naturally pushed into that extreme by his abhorrence of the prefent licentious factions; and fuch intrepidity, as well as difinterestedness of behaviour, proves, that

f We learn from Cotton, p. 362, that the king, by his chancellor, told the commons, that they were funderly bound to him, and namely in forbearing to charge them with defines and fifteens, the which he meant no more to charge them in his own perfon. These words no more allude to the practice of his predecetfors: He had not himself imposed any arbitrary taxes: Even the parliament, in the articles of his deposition, though they complain of heavy taxes, affirm not that they were imposed illegally or by arbitrary will.

<sup>8</sup> See note [F] at the end of the volume.



CHAP. whatever his speculative principles were, his heart was elevated far above the meanness and abject submission of a slave. He represented to the parliament, that all the abuses of government which could justly be imputed to Richard, instead of amounting to tyranny, were merely the refult of error, youth, or misguided counsel, and admitted of a remedy, more easy and falutary than a total subversion of the constitution. That even had they been much more violent and dangerous than they really were, they had chiefly proceeded from former examples of refistance, which, making the prince fensible of his precarious fituation, had obliged him to establish his throne by irregular and arbitrary expedients. That a rebellious disposition in subjects was the principal cause of tyranny in kings: Laws could never secure the subject, which did not give fecurity to the sovereign: And if the maxim of inviolable loyalty which formed the basis of the English government, were once rejected, the privileges belonging to the feveral orders of the state, instead of being fortified by that licentiousness, would thereby lose the surest foundation of their force and stability. parliamentary deposition of Edward II. far from making a precedent which could control this maxim, was only an example of fuccessful violence; and it was fufficiently to be lamented, that crimes were fo often committed in the world, without establishing principles which might justify and authorise them. That even that precedent, false and dangerous as it was, could never warrant the present excesses, which were fo much greater, and which would entail distraction and misery on the nation, to the latest posterity. That the succession, at least, of the crown, was then preferved inviolate: The lineal heir was placed on the throne: And the people had an opporfunity, by their legal obedience to him, of making atonement for the violence which they had committed against his predecessor. That a descendant of Lionel duke

duke of Clarence, the elder brother of the late duke C H AP. of Lancaster, had been declared in parliament succeffor to the crown: He had left posterity: And their title, however it might be overpowered by present force and faction, could never be obliterated from the minds of the people. That if the turbulent disposition alone of the nation had overturned the well-established throne of so good a prince as Richard; what bloody commotions must ensue, when the same cause was united to the motive of reftoring the legal and undoubted heir to his authority? That the new government, intended to be established, would stand on no principle; and would scarcely retain any pretence, by which it could challenge the obedience of men of fense and virtue. That the claim of lineal descent was so gross as scarcely to deceive the most ignorant of the populace: Conquest could never be pleaded by a rebel against his fovereign: The confent of the people had no authority in a monarchy not derived from confent, but established by hereditary right; and however the nation might be justified in deposing the misguided Richard, it could never have any reason for setting afide his lawful heir and fuccessor, who was plainly innocent. And that the duke of Lancaster would give them but a bad specimen of the legal moderation which might be expected from his future government, if he added to the crime of his past rebellion, the guilt of excluding the family, which, both by right of blood, and by declaration of parliament, would, in case of Richard's demise, or voluntary refignation, have been received as the undoubted heirs of the monarchy h.

ALL the circumstances of this event, compared to those which attended the late revolution in 1688, show the difference between a great and civilized nation, deliberately vindicating its established privi-

b Sir John Heywarde, p. 101,

CHAP. leges, and a turbulent and barbarous aristocracy, plunging headlong from the extremes of one faction into those of another. This noble freedom of the bishop of Carlisle, instead of being applauded, was not fo much as tolerated: He was immediately arrested, by order of the duke of Lancaster, and sent a prisoner to the abbey of St. Albans. No farther debate was attempted: Thirty-three long articles of charge were, in one meeting, voted against Richard; and voted unanimously by the same peers and prelates who a little before had voluntarily and unanimously, authorised those very acts of violence of which they now complained. That prince was deposed by the suffrages of both houses; and the throne being now vacant, the duke of Lancaster stepped forth, and having crossed himself on the forehead and on the breaft, and called upon the name of Christ i, he pronounced these words, which we shall give in the original language, because of their fingularity:

> In the name of Fadher, Son, and Holy Ghost, I Henry of Lancaster challenge this rewme of Ynglande, and the croun, with all the membres, and the appurtenances; als I that am descendit by right line of the blode, coming fro the gude king Henry therde, and throge that right that God of his grace hath fent me, with helpe of kyn, and of my frendes to recover it; the which rewme was in poynt to be ondone by defaut of governance, and ondoying of the gude lawes k.

In order to understand this speech, it must be obferved, that there was a filly story, received among fome of the lowest vulgar, that Edmond earl of Lancaster, son of Henry III. was really the elder brother of Edward I.; but that, by reason of some deformity in his person, he had been postponed in the fuccession, and his younger brother imposed on the

i Cotton, p. 389.

nation in his stead. As the present duke of Lan- CHAP. caster inherited from Edmond by his mother, this genealogy made him the true heir of the monarchy; and it is therefore infinuated in Henry's speech: But the abfurdity was too grofs to be openly avowed cither by him or by the parliament. The case is the fame with regard to his right of conquest: He was a fubject who rebelled against his fovereign: He entered the kingdom with a retinue of no more than fixty persons: He could not therefore be the conqueror of England; and this right is accordingly infinuated, not avowed. Still there is a third claim derived from his merits in faving the nation from tyranny and oppression; and this claim is also infinuated: But as it feemed, by its nature, better calculated as a reason for his being elected king by a free choice, than for giving him an immediate right of possession, he durst not speak openly even on this head; and to obviate any notion of election, he challenges the crown as his due, either by acquisition or inheritance. The whole forms fuch a piece of jargon and nonfenfe, as is almost without example: No objection, however, was made to it in parliament: The unanimous voice of lords and commons placed Henry on the throne: He became king, nobody could tell how or wherefore: The title of the house of Marche, formerly recognized by parliament, was neither invalidated nor repealed; but passed over in total silence: And as a concern for the liberties of the people feems to have had no hand in this revolution, their right to dispose of the government, as well as all their other privileges, was left precifely on the same footing as before. But Henry having, when he claimed the crown, dropped fome obscure hint concerning conquest, which, it was thought, might endanger these privileges, he foon after made a public declaration, that he did not thereby intend to deprive any one of his franchises

XVII. 6th Vet.

CHAP. or liberties!: Which was the only circumstance, where we shall find meaning or common sense, in all these transactions.

> THE fublequent events discover the same headlong violence of conduct, and the same rude notions of civil government. The deposition of Richard diffolved the parliament: It was necessary to fummon a new one: And Henry, in fix days after, called together, without any new election, the fame members; and this aftembly he denominated a new parliament. They were employed in the usual task of reverfing every deed of the opposite party. All the acts of the last parliament of Richard, which had been confirmed by their oaths, and by a papal bull, were abrogated: All the acts which had passed in the parliament where Glocester prevailed, which had also been confirmed by their oaths, but which had been abrogated by Richard, were anew established ". The answers of Trefilian, and the other judges, which a parliament had annulled, but which a new parliament, and new judges, had approved, here received a fecond condemnation. The peers who had accufed Glocester, Arundel, and Warwic, and who had received higher titles for that piece of fervice, were all of them degraded from their new dignities: Even the practice of profecuting appeals in parliament, which bore the air of a violent confederacy against an individual, rather than of a legal indictment, was wholly abolished; and trials were restored to the course of common law ". The natural effect of this conduct was to render the people giddy with fuch rapid and perpetual changes, and to make them lofe all notions of right and wrong in the measures of government.

23d Oct.

THE earl of Northumberland made a motion, in the house of peers, with regard to the unhappy

<sup>1</sup> Knyghton, p. 2759. Otterbourne, p. 220.

m Cotton, p. 390. henry IV. cap. 14.

prince whom they had deposed. He asked them CHAP. what advice they would give the king for the future treatment of him; fince Henry was refolved to spare his life. They unanimously replied, that he should be imprisoned under a secure guard, in some secret place, and should be deprived of all commerce with any of his friends or partifans. It was eafy to forefee, that he would not long remain alive in the hands

of fuch barbarous and fanguinary enemies. Hiftorians differ with regard to the manner in which he was murdered. It was long the prevailing opinion, Murder of that fir Piers Exton, and others of his guards, fell the king. upon him in the castle of Pomfret, where he was confined, and dispatched him with their halberts. But it is more probable, that he was starved to death in prison; and after all sustenance was denied him, he prolonged his unhappy life, it is faid, for a fort-

This account is more confistent with the story, that his body was exposed in public, and that no marks of violence were observed upon it. He died in the thirty-fourth year of his age, and the twenty-third

night, before he reached the end of his miseries.

of his reign. He left no posterity, either legitimate

or illegitimate.

ALL the writers, who have transmitted to us the His chahistory of Richard, lived during the reigns of the raster. Lancastrian princes; and candour requires, that we should not give entire credit to the reproaches which they have thrown upon his memory. But, after making all proper allowances, he still appears to have been a weak prince, and unfit for government, less for want of natural parts and capacity, than of folid judgment and a good education. He was violent in his temper; profuse in his expence; fond of idle show and magnificence; devoted to favourites; and addicted to pleafure: Passions, all of them, the most inconfistent with a prudent œconomy, and confequently dangerous in a limited and mixed government. Had he possessed the talents of gaining, VOL. III.  $\mathbf{E}$ 

XVII. 1399.

C HAP. and still more those of overawing, his great barons, he might have escaped all the misfortunes of his reign, and been allowed to carry much farther his oppressions over the people, if he really was guilty of any, without their daring to rebel, or even to murmur against him. But when the grandees were tempted by his want of prudence and of vigour, to refift his authority, and execute the most violent enterprises upon him, he was naturally led to feek an opportunity of retaliation; justice was neglected; the lives of the chief nobility were facrificed; and all these enormities seem to have proceeded less from a fettled defign of establishing arbitrary power, than from the infolence of victory, and the necessities of the king's fituation. The manners indeed of the age were the chief fource of fuch violence: Laws, which were feebly executed in peaceable times, lost all their authority during public convulsions: Both parties were alike guilty: Or if any difference may be remarked between them, we shall find, that the authority of the crown, being more legal, was commonly carried, when it prevailed, to less desperate extremities than was that of the ariffocracy.

On comparing the conduct and events of this reign, with those of the preceding, we shall find equal reason to admire Edward, and to blame Richard; but the circumstance of opposition, furely, will not lie in the strict regard paid by the former to national privileges, and the neglect of them by the latter. On the contrary, the prince of small abilities, as he felt his want of power, feems to have been more moderate in this respect than the other. Every parliament affembled during the reign of Edward, remonstrates against the exertion of some arbitrary prerogative or other: We hear not any complaints of that kind during the reign of Richard, till the affembling of his last parliament, which was fummoned by his inveterate enemies, which dethroned him, which framed their complaints during the time

of the most furious convulsions, and whose testimony C HAP. must therefore have, on that account, much less authority with every equitable judge °. Both these princes experienced the encroachments of the Great upon their authority. Edward, reduced to necessities, was obliged to make an express bargain with his parliament, and to fell some of his prerogatives for present supply; but as they were acquainted with his genius and capacity, they ventured not to demand any exorbitant concessions, or such as were incompatible with regal and fovereign power: The weakness of Richard tempted the parliament to extort a commission, which, in a manner, dethroned the prince, and transferred the sceptre into the hands of the nobility. The events of these encroachments were also suitable to the character of each. Edward had no fooner gotten the fupply, than he departed from the engagements which had induced the parliament to grant it; he openly told his people, that he had but diffembled with them when he feemed to make them these concessions; and he refumed and retained all his prerogatives. But Richard, because he was detected in consulting and deliberating with the judges on the lawfulness of restoring the constitution, found his barons immediately in arms against him; was deprived of his liberty; saw his favourites, his ministers, his tutor, butchered before his face, or banished and attainted; and was obliged to give way to all this violence. There cannot be a more remarkable contrast between the fortunes of two princes: It were happy for fociety, did this contrast always depend on the justice or injustice of the measures which men embrace; and not rather on the different degrees of prudence and vigour with which those measures are supported.

Peruse, in this view, the abridgment of the records, by fir Rowhert Cotton, during these two reigns.

CHAP. XVII. 1399. Miscella neous transactions du ring this reign.

THERE was a fensible decay of ecclesiastical and thority during this period. The difgust, which the laity had received from the numerous usurpations both of the court of Rome, and of their own clergy, had very much weaned the kingdom from superstition; and strong symptoms appeared, from time to time, of a general defire to shake off the bondage of the Romish church. In the committee of eighteen, to whom Richard's last parliament delegated their whole power, there is not the name of one ecclefiaftic to be found; a neglect which is almost without example, while the catholic religion subfifted in England P.

THE aversion entertained against the established church foon found principles and tenets and reafonings, by which it could justify and support itself. John Wickliffe, a fecular priest, educated at Oxford, began in the latter end of Edward III. to spread the doctrine of reformation by his discourses, sermons, and writings; and he made many disciples among men of all ranks and stations. He feems to have been a man of parts and learning; and has the honour of being the first person in Europe, that publicly called in question those principles, which had univerfally passed for certain and undisputed during fo many ages. Wickliffe himself, as well as his disciples, who received the name of Wickliffites, or Lollards, was distinguished by a great austerity of life and manners; a circumstance common to almost all those who dogmatize in any new way; both because men, who draw to them the attention of the public, and expose themselves to the odium of great multitudes, are obliged to be very guarded in their conduct, and because few, who have a strong propenfity to pleasure or business, will enter upon so difficult and laborious an undertaking. The doctrines of Wickliffe, being derived from his fearch

P See note [G] at the end of the volume.

XVII. 1393.

into the scriptures and into ecclesiastical antiquity, C H A P. were nearly the fame with those which were propagated by the reformers in the fixteenth century: He only carried some of them farther than was done by the more fober part of these reformers. He denied the doctrine of the real presence, the supremacy of the church of Rome, the merit of monastic vows: He maintained, that the fcriptures were the fole rule of faith; that the church was dependant on the state, and should be reformed by it; that the clergy ought to possess no estates; that the begging friars were a nuisance, and ought not to be supported 4; that the numerous ceremonies of the church were hurtful to true piety: He afferted, that oaths were unlawful, that dominion was founded in grace, that every thing was fubject to fate and destiny, and that all men were preordained either to eternal falvation or reprobation. From the whole of his doctrines, Wickliffe appears to have been strongly tinctured with enthusiasm, and to have been thereby the better qualified to oppose a church, whose chief characteristic is superstition.

THE propagation of these principles gave great alarm to the clergy; and a bull was iffued by pope Gregory XI. for taking Wickliffe into custody, and examining into the scope of his opinions. Courteney, bishop of London, cited him before his tribunal; but the reformer had now acquired powerful protectors, who screened him from the ecclesiastical jurisdiction. The duke of Lancaster, who then governed the kingdom, encouraged the principles of Wickliffe; and he made no scruple, as well as lord Piercy. the mareschal, to appear openly in court with him, in order to give him countenance upon his trial: He even infifted that Wickliffe should sit in the bishop's presence, while his principles were

examined:

<sup>9</sup> Walfingham, p. 191. 208. 283, 284. Spelman. Concil. vol. ii. p. 630. Knyghton, p. 2657. Harpsfield, p. 668. 673, 674. Waldenf. tom. i lib. 3. art. 1. cap. 8. 5 Spelm. Conc. vol. ii. p. 621. Walfingham, p. 201, 202, 203.

XVII. 1399.

C H A P. examined: Courteney exclaimed against the insult: The Londoners, thinking their prelate affronted. attacked the duke and mareschal, who escaped from their hands with some difficulty t. And the populace, foon after, broke into the houses of both these noblemen, threatened their persons, and plundered their goods. The bishop of London had the merit

of appearing their fury and refentment.

THE duke of Lancaster, however, still continued his protection to Wickliffe during the minority of Richard; and the principles of that reformer had fo far propagated themselves, that, when the pope sent to Oxford a new bull against these doctrines, the university deliberated for some time, whether they should receive the bull; and they never took any vigorous measures in consequence of the papal orders ". Even the populace of London were at length brought to entertain favourable fentiments of this reformer: When he was cited before a fynod at Lambeth, they broke into the affembly, and fo overawed the prelates, who found both the people and the court against them, that they dismissed him without any farther cenfure.

THE clergy, we may well believe, were more wanting in power than in inclination to punish this new herefy, which struck at all their credit, possesfions, and authority. But there was hitherto no law in England, by which the fecular arm was authorifed to support orthodoxy; and the ecclesiastics endeavoured to supply the defect by an extraordinary and unwarrantable artifice. In the year 1381, there was an act passed, requiring sheriss to apprehend the preachers of herefy and their abettors; but this statute had been furreptitiously obtained by the clergy, and had the formality of an enrolment without the consent of the commons. In the subsequent session the lower house complained of the fraud; affirmed, that they had no intention to bind themselves to

the

Harpsfield in Hist. Wickl. p. 683. u Wood's Ant. Oxon. lib. i. p. 191, &c. Walfingham, p. 201.

the prelates farther than their ancestors had done be- C H A P. fore them; and required that the pretended statute should be repealed; which was done accordingly ". But it is remarkable that, notwithstanding this vigilance of the commons, the clergy had fo much art and influence that the repeal was suppressed; and the act, which never had any legal authority, remains to this day upon the statute-book\*: Though the clergy still thought proper to keep it in referve, and not proceed to the immediate execution of it.

XVI'. 1399.

Bur, besides this defect of power in the church, which faved Wickliffe, that reformer himfelf, notwithstanding his enthusiasm, seems not to have been actuated by the spirit of martyrdom; and, in all fublequent trials before the prelates, he fo explained away his doctrine by tortured meanings, as to render it quite innocent and inoffensive y. Most of his followers imitated his cautious disposition, and saved themselves either by recantations or explanations. He died of a palfy, in the year 1385, at his rectory of Lutterworth, in the county of Leicester; and the clergy, mortified that he should have escaped their vengeance, took care, befides affuring the people of his eternal damnation, to represent his last distemper as a visible judgment of heaven upon him for his multiplied herefies and impieties 2.

THE profelytes, however, of Wickliffe's opinions still increased in England 2: Some monkish writers represent one half of the kingdom as infected by those principles: They were carried over to Bohemia by some youth of that nation, who studied at Oxford: But though the age feemed strongly difposed to receive them, affairs were not yet fully ripe for this great revolution; and the finishing blow to ecclefiaftical power was referved to a period of more curiofity, literature, and inclination for novelties.

w Cotton's Abridgment, p. 285. x 5 Rich. II. chap. 5. y Walfingham, p. 206. Knyghton, p. 2655, 2656. fingham, p. 312. Ypod. Neuft. p. 337. a Knyghton, p. 2663.



MEANWHILE the English parliament continued to check the clergy and the court of Rome, by more fober and more legal expedients. They enacted anew the statute of provisors, and affixed higher penalties to the transgression of it, which, in some instances, was even made capital<sup>b</sup>. The court of Rome had fallen upon a new device, which increased their authority over the prelates: The pope, who found that the expedient of arbitrarily depriving them was violent and liable to opposition, attained the same end, by transferring fuch of them as were obnoxious to poorer fees, and even to nominal fees, in partibus infidelium. It was thus that the archbishop of York, and the bishops of Durham and Chichester, the king's ministers, had been treated after the prevalence of Glocester's faction: The bishop of Carlisle met with the same fate after the accession of Henry IV. For the pope always joined with the prevailing powers when they did not thwart his pretenfions. The parliament, in the reign of Richard, enacted a law against this abuse: And the king made a general remonstrance to the court of Rome against all those usurpations which he calls horrible excesses of that court c.

It was usual for the church, that they might elude the mortmain act, to make their votaries leave lands in trust to certain persons, under whose name the clergy enjoyed the benefit of the bequest: The parliament also stopped the progress of this abuse d. In the 17th of the king, the commons prayed, that remedy might be had against such religious persons as cause their villains to marry free women inheritable, whereby the estate comes to those religious hands by collusion d. This was a new device of the clergy.

THE papacy was, at this time, formewhat weakened by a schism, which lasted during forty years,

and gave great scandal to the devoted partisans of CHAP. the holy see. After the pope had resided many years at Avignon, Gregory XI. was perfuaded to return to Rome; and upon his death, which happened in 1380, the Romans, resolute to fix, for the future, the feat of the papacy in Italy, befieged the cardinals in the conclave, and compelled them, though they were mostly Frenchmen, to elect Urban VI. an Italian, into that high dignity. The French cardinals, as foon as they recovered their liberty, fled from Rome, and protesting against the forced election, chose Robert, son of the count of Geneva, who took the name of Clement VII. and refided at Avignon. All the kingdoms of Christendom, according to the feveral interests and inclinations, were divided between these two pontiss. The court of France adhered to Clement, and was followed by its allies, the king of Castile, and the king of Scotland: England, of courfe, was thrown into the other party, and declared for Urban. Thus the appellation of Clementines and Urbanists distracted Europe for feveral years; and each party damned the other as schismatics, and as rebels to the true vicar of Christ. But this circumstance, though it weakened the papal authority, had not fo great an effect as might naturally be imagined. Though any king could eafily at first make his kingdom embrace the party of one pope or the other, or even keep it some time in suspense between them, he could not so easily transfer his obedience at pleasure: The people attached themselves to their own party, as to a religious opinion; and conceived an extreme abhorrence to the opposite party, whom they regarded as little better than Saracens or infideis. Crusades were even undertaken in this quarrel; and the zealous bishop of Norwich in particular led over, in 1382, near 60,000 bigots into Flanders against the Clementines; but, after losing a great part of his followers, he returned with difgrace into EngXVII. ¥399.

C H A P. England. Each pope, fensible, from this prevailing spirit among the people, that the kingdom which once embraced his cause would always adhere to him, boldly maintained all the pretensions of his fee, and stood not much more in awe of the temporal fovereigns, than if his authority had not been

endangered by a rival.

WE meet with this preamble to a law enacted at the very beginning of this reign: "Whereas divers " persons of small garrison of land or other pos-" fessions, do make great retinue of people, as well of esquires as of others, in many parts of the " realm, giving to them hats and other livery of " one fuit by year, taking again towards them the value of the fame livery, or percase the double value, by fuch covenant and affurance, that every of them shall maintain other in all quarrels, be "they reasonable or unreasonable, to the great " mischief and oppression of the people, &c. g" This preamble contains a true picture of the state of the kingdom. The laws had been fo feebly executed, even during the long, active, and vigilant reign of Edward III. that no subject could trust to their protection. Men openly affociated themselves, under the patronage of some great baron, for their mutual defence. They wore public badges, by which their confederacy was distinguished. They supported each other in all quarrels, iniquities, extortions, murders, robberies, and other crimes. Their chief was more their fovereign than the king himfelf; and their own band was more connected with them than their country. Hence the perpetual turbulence, diforders, factions, and civil wars of those times: Hence the fmall regard paid to a character or the opinion of the public: Hence the large discretionary prerogatives of the crown, and the danger which might

f Froisfard, lib. ii. chap. 133, 134. Walfingham, p. 298, 299, 300, &c. Knyghton, p. 2671. 5 1 Richard II. chap. 7.

have

have enfued from the too great limitation of them. CHAP. If the king had possessed no arbitrary powers, while all the nobles affumed and exercised them, there must have ensued an absolute anarchy in the state.

1399.

ONE great mischief attending these confederacies, was the extorting from the king pardons for the most enormous crimes. The parliament often endeavoured, in the last reign, to deprive the prince of this prerogative; but, in the present, they were content with an abridgment of it. They enacted, that no pardon for rapes or for murder from malice prepense should be valid, unless the crime were particularly specified in it h. There were also some other circumstances required for passing any pardon of this kind: An excellent law; but ill observed, like most laws that thwart the manners of the people, and the prevailing customs of the times.

IT is easy to observe, from these voluntary associations among the people, that the whole force of the feudal fystem was in a manner dissolved, and that the English had nearly returned, in that particular, to the fame fituation in which they flood before the Norman conquest. It was, indeed, impossible that that fystem could long subsist under the perpetual revolutions to which landed property is every where subject. When the great feudal baronies were first erected, the lord lived in opulence in the midst of his vassals: He was in a situation to protect and cherish and defend them: The quality of patron naturally united itself to that of superior: And these two principles of authority mutually supported each other. But when, by the various divisions and mixtures of property, a man's superior came to live at a distance from him, and could no longer give him shelter or countenance; the tie gradually became more fictitious than real: New connections from vicinity or other causes were formed:

CHAP. Protection was fought by voluntary fervices and attachment: The appearance of valour, spirit, abilities in any great man, extended his interest very far: And if the fovereign were deficient in these qualities, he was no lefs, if not more exposed to the usurpations of the aristocracy, than even during the vigour of the feudal system.

THE greatest novelty introduced into the civil government during this reign was the creation of peers'by patent. Lord Beauchamp of Holt was the first peer that was advanced to the house of lords in this manner. The practice of levying benevolences

is also first mentioned in the present reign.

This prince lived in a more magnificent manner than perhaps any of his predecessors or successors. His household consisted of 10,000 persons: He had 300 in his kitchen; and all the other offices were furnished in proportion i. It must be remarked, that this enormous train had tables supplied them at the king's expence, according to the mode of that age. Such prodigality was probably the fource of many exactions by purveyors, and was one chief reason of the public discontents.

i Harding: This poet fays, that he speaks from the authority of a clerk of the green cloth.





## CHAP. XVIII.

## HENRY IV.

Title of the king --- An insurrection --- An insurrection in Wales - The earl of Northumberland rebels—Battle of Shrewsbury—State of Scotland — Parliamentary transactions — Death -and character of the king.

THE English had so long been familiarised to CHAP. the hereditary fuccession of their monarchs, the instances of departure from it had always borne fuch strong symptoms of injustice and violence, and Title of fo little of a national choice or election, and the the king. returns to the true line had ever been deemed fuch fortunate incidents in their history, that Henry was afraid lest, in resting his title on the consent of the people, he should build on a foundation to which the people themselves were not accustomed, and whose folidity they would with difficulty be brought to recognize. The idea too of choice feemed always to imply that of conditions, and a right of recalling the confent upon any supposed violation of them; an idea which was not naturally agreeable to a fovereign, and might, in England, be dangerous to the subjects, who, lying so much under the influence of turbulent nobles, had ever paid but an imperfect obedience even to their hereditary princes. For these reasons, Henry was determined never to have recourse to this claim; the only one on which his authority could confiftently stand: He rather chose to patch up his title in the best manner he could from other pretensions:



C H AP. And in the end, he left himself, in the eves of men of fense, no ground of right but his present possession; a very precarious foundation, which, by its very nature, was liable to be overthrown by every faction of the great, or prejudice of the people. He had indeed a present advantage over his competitor: The heir of the house of Mortimer, who had been declared, in parliament, heir to the crown, was a boy of feven years of age k: His friends confulted his fafety, by keeping filence with regard to his title: Henry detained him and his younger brother in an honourable custody at Windsor castle: But he had reason to dread, that, in proportion as that nobleman grew to man's estate, he would draw to him the attachment of the people, and make them reflect on the fraud, violence, and injustice, by which he had been excluded from the throne. Many favourable topics would occur in his behalf: He was a native of England; possessed an extensive interest from the greatness and alliances of his family; however criminal the deposed monarch, this youth was intirely innocent; he was of the fame religion, and educated in the fame manners with the people, and could not be governed by any separate interest: These views would all concur to favour his claim; and though the abilities of the prefent prince might ward off any dangerous revolution, it was justly to be apprehended, that his authority could with difficulty be brought to equal that of his predecessors.

HENRY, in his very first parliament, had reason to fee the danger attending that station which he had affumed, and the obstacles which he would meet with in governing an unruly aristocracy, always divided by faction, and at prefent inflamed with the refentments confequent on fuch recent convulsions. The peers, on their affembling, broke out into violent animofities against each other; forty gauntlets, the pledges of furious battle, were thrown on the CHAP. floor of the house by noblemen who gave mutual challenges; and liar and traiter resounded from all quarters. The king had fo much authority with these doughty champions, as to prevent all the combats which they threatened; but he was not able to bring them to a proper composure, or to an amicable disposition towards each other.

1399.

IT was not long before these passions broke into

The earls of Rutland, Kent, and Hunt- An infuringdon, and lord Spencer, who were now degraded from the respective titles of Albermarle, Surrey, Exeter, and Glocester, conferred on them by Richard, entered into a conspiracy, together with the earl of Salisbury and lord Lumley, for raising an infurrection, and for feizing the king's person at Windfor 1; but the treachery of Rutland gave him warning of the danger. He fuddenly withdrew to London; and the conspirators, who came to Windfor with a body of 500 horse, found that they had missed this blow, on which all the success of their enterprise depended. Henry appeared next day at Kingston upon Thames, at the head of 20,000 men, mostly drawn from the city; and his enemies, unable to refift his power, dispersed themselves, with a view of raising their followers in the several counties which were the feat of their interest. But the adherents of the king were hot in the pursuit, and every where opposed themselves to their progress. The earls of Kent and Salisbury were seized at Cirencester by the citizens: and were next day beheaded without farther ceremony, according to the custom of the times m. The citizens of Bristol treated Spencer and Lumley in the fame manner. The earl of Huntingdon, fir Thomas Blount, and fir Benedict Sely, who were also taken prisoners, suffered death, with many others of the conspirators, by orders from

<sup>1</sup> Walfingham, p. 362. Otterbourne, p. 224. Walfingham, p. 363. Ypod Neuft. p. 556.

XVIII.

CHAP. Henry. And when the quarters of these unhappy men were brought to London, no less than eighteen bishops and thirty-two mitred abbots joined the populace, and met them with the most indecent

marks of joy and exultation.

Bur the spectacle, the most shocking to every one who retained any fentiment either of honour or humanity, still remained. The earl of Rutland appeared, carrying on a pole, the head of lord Spencer, his brother-in-law, which he presented in triumph to Henry as a testimony of his loyalty. This infamous man, who was foon after duke of York by the death of his father, and first prince of the blood, had been instrumental in the murder of his uncle the duke of Glocester n; had then deserted Richard, by whom he was trusted; had conspired against the life of Henry, to whom he had fworn allegiance; had betrayed his affociates, whom he had feduced into this enterprise; and now displayed, in the face of the world, these badges of his multiplied dishonour.

3 .: OT.

HENRY was fenfible, that though the execution of these conspirators might seem to give security to his throne, the animofities, which remain after fuch bloody fcenes, are always dangerous to royal authority; and he therefore determined not to increase, by any hazardous enterprise, those numerous enemies with whom he was every where environed. While a fubject, he was believed to have strongly imbibed all the principles of his father, the duke of Lancaster, and to have adopted the prejudices which the Lollards inspired against the abuses of the established church: But, finding himself possessed of the throne by fo precarious a title, he thought fuperstition a necessary implement of public authority; and he resolved, by every expedient, to pav court to the clergy. There were hitherto no penal laws enacted against herefy; an indulgence which had proceeded,

not from a spirit of toleration in the Romish church, CHAP. but from the ignorance and simplicity of the people, which had rendered them unfit either for flarting or receiving any new or curious doctrines, and which needed not to be restrained by rigorous penalties. But when the learning and genius of Wickliffe had once broken, in some measure, the fetters of prejudice, the ecclefiaftics called aloud for the punishment of his disciples; and the king, who was very little fcrupulous in his conduct, was eafily induced to facrifice his principles to his interest, and to acquire the favour of the church by that most effectual method, the gratifying of their vengeance against opponents. He engaged the parliament to pass a law for that purpose: It was enacted, that when any heretic, who relapsed, or refused to abjure his opinions, was delivered over to the fecular arm by the bishop or his commissaries, he should be committed to the flames by the civil magistrate before the whole people o. This weapon did not long remain unemployed in the hands of the clergy: William Sautré, rector of St. Ofithes in London, had been condemned by the convocation of Canterbury; his sentence was ratified by the house of peers; the king issued his writ for the execution p; and the unhappy man atoned for his erroneous opinions by the penalty of fire. This is the first instance of that kind in England; and thus one horror more was added to those difinal scenes which at that time were already but too familiar to the people.

But the utmost precausion and prudence of Henry could not shield him from those numerous inquietudes which affailed him from every quarter. The connexions of Richard with the royal family of France made that court exert its activity to recover his authority, or revenge his death 9; but

o 2 Henry IV. chap, vii.

P Rymer, vol. viii. p. 178.

9 Ibid. p. 123.

Vol. III.

XVIII. 1401.

CHAP. though the confusions in England tempted the French to engage in some enterprise by which they might distress their ancient enemy, the greater confusions which they experienced at home obliged them quickly to accommodate matters; and Charles, content with recovering his daughter from Henry's hands, laid aside his preparations, and renewed the truce between the kingdoms. The attack of Guienne was also an inviting attempt, which the present factions that prevailed among the French obliged them to neglect. The Gascons, affectionate to the memory of Richard, who was born among them, refused to swear allegiance to a prince that had dethroned and murdered him; and the appearance of a French army on their frontiers would probably have tempted them to change masters. But the earl of Worcester, arriving with some English troops, gave countenance to the partisans of Henry, and overawed their opponents. Religion too was here found a cement to their union with England. The Gascons had been engaged, by Richard's authority, to acknowledge the pope of Rome; and they were fenfible that, if they submitted to France, it would be necessary for them to pay obedience to the pope of Avignon, whom they had been taught to detest as a schismatic. Their principles on this head were too fast rooted to admit of any fudden or violent alteration.

Infurrection in Wales.

THE revolution in England proved likewife the occasion of an insurrection in Wales. Owen Glendour, or Glendourduy, descended from the ancient princes of that country, had become obnoxious on account of his attachment to Richard; and Reginald lord Gray of Ruthyn, who was closely connected with the new king, and who enjoyed a great fortune in the marches of Wales, thought the opportunity favourable for oppressing his neighbour,

Rymer, vol. viii. p. 142, 152, 219.

<sup>5</sup> Ibid. vol. p. 110, 111.

and taking possession of his estate t. Glendour, CHAP. provoked at the injustice, and still more at the indignity, recovered possession by the sword ": Henry fent affistance to Gray w; the Welsh took part with Glendour: A troublesome and tedious war was kindled, which Glendour long fustained by his valour and activity, aided by the natural strength of the country, and the untamed spirit of its inhabitants.

As Glendour committed devastations promiscuously on all the English, he infested the estate of the earl of Marche; and fir Edmund Mortimer, uncle to that nobleman, led out the retainers of the family, and gave battle to the Welsh chieftain: His troops were routed, and he was taken prisoner \*: At the fame time the earl himself, who had been allowed to retire to his castle of Wigmore, and who, though a mere boy, took the field with his followers, fell also into Glendour's hands, and was carried by him into Wales y. As Henry dreaded and hated all the family of Marche, he allowed the earl to remain in captivity; and though that young nobleman was nearly allied to the Piercies, to whose affistance he himself had owed his crown, he refused to the earl of Northumberland permission to treat of his ranfom with Glendour.

THE uncertainty in which Henry's affairs stood during a long time with France, as well as the confusions incident to all great changes in government, tempted the Scots to make incursions into England; and Henry, desirous of taking revenge upon them, but afraid of rendering his new government unpopular by requiring great supplies from his subjects, fummoned at Westminster a council of the peers, without the commons, and laid before them the state of his affairs 2. The military part of the feudal

t Vita Ric. Sec. p. 171, 172.

u Walfingham, p. 364.

w Vita Ric. Sec. p. 1; 2, 173.

x Dugdale, vol. i. p. 150.

y Ibid. vol. i. p. 151.

<sup>2</sup> Rymer, vol. viii. p. 125, 126.  $\mathbf{F}_{2}$ consti-

CHAP. constitution was now much decayed: There remained only fo much of that fabric as affected the civil rights and properties of men: And the peers here undertook, but voluntarily, to attend the king in an expedition against Scotland, each of them at the head of a certain number of his retainers 2. Henry conducted this army to Edinburgh, of which he eafily made himself master; and he there summoned Robert III. to do homage to him for his crown b. But finding that the Scots would neither fubmit nor give him battle, he returned in three weeks, after making this ufeless bravado; and he disbanded his army.

1402-

In the subsequent season, Archibald earl of Douglas, at the head of 12,000 men, and attended by many of the principal nobility of Scotland, made an irruption into England, and committed devastations on the northern counties. On his return home, he was overtaken by the Piercies at Homeldon, on the borders of England, and a fierce battle enfued, where the Scots were totally routed. Douglas himself was taken prisoner; as was Mordac earl of Fife, fon of the duke of Albany, and nephew of the Scottish king, with the earls of Angus, Murray, and Orkney, and many others of the gentry and nobility c. When Henry received intelligence of this victory, he fent the earl of Northumberland orders not to ranfom his prisoners, which that nobleman regarded as his right by the laws of war received in that age. The king intended to detain them, that he might be able, by their means, to make an advantageous peace with Scotland; but by this policy he gave a fresh disgust to the family of

THE obligations which Henry had owed to Northumberland were of a kind the most likely to pro-

duce

<sup>2</sup> Rymer, vol. viii. p. 125. b Ibid. p. 155, 156, &c. c Waltingham, p. 366. Vita Ric. Sec. p. 180. Chron. Otterbourne, p. 237.

duce ingratitude on the one fide, and discontent on CHAP. the other. The fovereign naturally became jealous XVIII. of that power which had advanced him to the throne; and the subject was not easily satisfied in Theewrlof the returns which he thought so great a favour had berland merited. Though Henry, on his accession, had rebels. bestowed the office of constable on Northumberland for life , and conferred other gifts on that family, these favours were regarded as their due; the refufal of any other request was deemed an injury. The impatient spirit of Harry Piercy, and the factious disposition of the earl of Worcester, younger brother of Northumberland, inflamed the discontents of that nobleman; and the precarious title of Henry tempted him to feek revenge, by overturning that throne which he had at first established. He entered into a correspondence with Glendour: He gave liberty to the earl of Douglas, and made an alliance with that martial chief: He roused up all his partifans to arms; and fuch unlimited authority at that time belonged to the great families, that the same men, whom a few years before he had conducted against Richard, now followed his standard in opposition to Henry. When war was ready to break out, Northumberland was feized with a fudden illness at Berwic; and young Piercy, taking the command of the troops, marched towards Shrewfbury, in order to join his forces with those of Glendour. The king had happily a small army on foot, with which he had intended to act against the Scots; and knowing the importance of celerity in all civil wars, he instantly hurried down that he might give battle to the rebels. He approached Piercy near Shrewfbury, before that nobleman was joined by Glendour; and the policy of one leader, and impatience of the other, made them hasten to a general engagement.

d Rymer, vol. viii. p. 89.



THE evening before the battle, Piercy fent a manifesto to Henry, in which he renounced his allegiance, fet that prince at defiance, and, in the name of his father and uncle, as well as his own, enumerated all the grievances of which, he pretended, the nation had reason to complain. upbraided him with the perjury of which he had been guilty, when on landing at Ravenspur, he had fworn upon the gospels, before the earl of Northumberland, that he had no other intention than to recover the dutchy of Lancaster, and that he would ever remain a faithful subject to king Richard. aggravated his guilt in first dethroning, then murdering that prince, and in usurping on the title of the house of Mortimer, to whom, both by lineal fuccession, and by declarations of parliament, the throne, when vacant by Richard's demife, did of right belong. He complained of his cruel policy in allowing the young earl of Marche, whom he ought to regard as his fovereign, to remain a captive in the hands of his enemies, and in even refufing to all his friends permission to treat of his ransom. He charged him again with perjury in loading the nation with heavy taxes, after having fworn that, without the utmost necessity, he would never levy any impositions upon them. And he reproached him with the arts employed in procuring favourable elections into parliament; arts which he himself had before imputed as a crime to Richard, and which he had made one chief reason of that prince's arraignment and deposition e. This manifesto was well calculated to inflame the quarrel between the parties: The bravery of the two leaders promifed an obstinate engagement: And the equality of the armies, being each about 12,000 men, a number which was not unmanageable by the com-

e Hall, fol. 21, 22, &c.

manders, gave reason to expect a great effusion of CHAP. blood on both fides, and a very doubtful iffue to the combat.

We shall scarcely find any battle in those ages where the shock was more terrible and more con-Shrewsstant. Henry exposed his person in the thickest of bury. the fight: His gallant fon, whose military atchievements were afterwards fo renowned, and who here performed his noviciate in arms, fignalized himfelf on his father's footsteps, and even a wound, which he received in the face with an arrow, could not oblige him to quit the field. Piercy supported that fame which he had acquired in many a bloody combat: And Douglas, his ancient enemy, and now his friend, still appeared his rival, admist the horror and confusion of the day. This nobleman performed feats of valour which are almost incredible: He feemed determined that the king of England should that day fall by his arm: He fought him all over the field of battle: And as Henry, either to elude the attacks of the enemy upon his person, or to encourage his own men by the belief of his prefence every where, had accoutred feveral captains in the royal garb, the fword of Douglas rendered this honour fatal to many. But while the armies were contending in this furious manner, the death of Piercy, by an unknown hand, decided the victory, and the royalists prevailed. There are faid to have fallen that day, on both fides, near two thousand three hundred gentlemen; but the persons of greatest distinction were on the king's; the earl of Stafford, fir Hugh Shirley, fir Nicholas Gausel, sir Hugh Mortimer, sir John Masfey, fir John Calverly. About fix thousand private men perished, of whom two thirds were of Piercy's army h. The earls of Worcester and Douglas were taken prisoners: The former was beheaded at Shrews-

<sup>1</sup> f T. Livii, p. 3. 8 Walfingham, p. 366, 367. Hall, fol. 22. h Chron. Otterbourne, p. 224. Ypod. Neust. p. 560.

C H A P. bury: the latter was treated with the courtefy due to his rank and merit.

> THE earl of Northumberland, having recovered from his fickness, had levied a fresh army, and was on his march to join his fon; but being opposed by the earl of Westmoreland, and hearing of the defeat at Shrewibury, he difmiffed his forces, and came with a finall retinue to the king at York. He pretended that his fole intention in arming was to mediate between the parties: Henry thought proper to accept of the apology, and even granted him a pardon for his offence: All the other rebels were treated with equal lenity; and, except the earl of Worcester and fir Richard Vernon, who were regarded as the chief authors of the infurrection, no person engaged in this dangerous enterprise seems to have perished by the hands of the executioner \*.

140 C.

Bur Northumberland, though he had been pardoned, knew that he never should be trusted, and that he was too powerful to be cordially forgiven by a prince whose fituation gave him fuch reasonable grounds of jealoufy. It was the effect either of Henry's vigilance or good fortune, or of the narrow genius of his enemies, that no proper concert was ever formed among them: They rose in rebellion one after another; and thereby afforded him an opportunity of suppressing singly those insurrections, which, had they been united, might have proved fatal to his authority. The earl of Nottingham, fon of the duke of Norfolk, and the archbishop of York, brother to the earl of Wiltshire, whom Henry, then duke of Lancaster, had beheaded at Bristol, though they had remained quiet while Piercy was in the field, still harboured in their breast a violent hatred against the enemy of their families; and they determined, in conjunction with the earl of Northumberland, to feek revenge against him. They betook

i Chron, Otterbourne, p. 225.

k Rymer, vol. viii. p. 353. themselves

themselves to arms before that powerful nobleman CHAP. was prepared to join them; and publishing a manifesto, in which they reproached Heary with his usurpation of the crown, and the murder of the late king, they required that the right line should be restored, and all public grievances be redressed. The earl of Westmoreland, whose power lay in the neighbourhood, approached them with an inferior force at Shipton, near York; and, being afraid to hazard an action, he attempted to fubdue them by a stratagem, which nothing but the greatest folly and simplicity on their part could have rendered fuccessful. He defired a conference with the archbishop and earl between the armies: He heard their grievances with great patience: He begged them to propose the remedies: He approved of every expedient which they fuggested: He granted them all their demands: He also engaged that Henry should give them entire fatisfaction; and when he faw them pleafed with the facility of his concessions, he observed to them, that fince amity was now, in effect, restored between them, it were better on both fides to dismiss their forces, which otherwife would prove an insupportable burden to the country. The archbishop and the earl of Nottingham immediately gave directions to that purpose: Their troops disbanded upon the field: But Westmoreland, who had secretly issued contrary orders to his army, feized the two rebels without refistance, and carried them to the king, who was advancing with hafty marches to suppress the infurrection '. The trial and punishment of an archbishop might have proved a troublesome and dangerous undertaking, had Henry proceeded regularly, and allowed time for an opposition to form itfelf against that unusual measure: The celerity of the execution alone could here render it fafe and prudent. Finding that fir William Gascoigne, the chief

Walfingham, p. 373. Otterbourne, p. 255.

CHAP. justice, made some scruple of acting on this occasion, , he appointed fir William Fulthorpe for judge; who, without any indictment, trial, or defence, pronounced fentence of death upon the prelate, which was prefently executed. This was the first instance in England of a capital punishment inflicted on a bishop; whence the clergy of that rank might learn that their crimes, more than those of laics, were not to pass with impunity. The earl of Nottingham was condemned and executed in the same summary manner: But though many other persons of condition, fuch as lord Falconberg, fir Ralph Hastings, fir John Colville, were engaged in this rebellion, no others feem to have fallen victims to Henry's fe-

verity.

THE earl of Northumberland, on receiving this intelligence, fled into Scotland, together with lord Bardolf 1; and the king, without opposition, reduced all the castles and fortresses belonging to these noblemen. He thence turned his arms against Glendour, over whom his fon, the prince of Wales, had obtained fome advantages: But that enemy, more troublesome than dangerous, still found means of defending himfelf in his fastnesses, and of eluding, though not refilting, all the force of England. a subsequent season, the earl of Northumberland and lord Bardolf, impatient of their exile, entered the north in hopes of raising the people to arms; but found the country in fuch a posture as rendered all their attempts unsuccessful. Sir Thomas Rokesby, sheriff of Yorkshire, levied some forces, attacked the invaders at Bramham, and gained a victory, in which both Northumberland and Bardolf were flain m. This prosperous event, joined to the death of Glendour, which happened foon after, freed Henry from all his domestic enemies; and this prince, who had mounted the throne by fuch unjustifiable means, and held it

\$407.

<sup>1</sup> Walfingham, p 374. m Ibid. p. 377. Chron. Otterb. p. 261.

by fuch an exceptionable title, had yet, by his valour, CHAP. prudence, and address, accustomed the people to the voke, and had obtained a greater afcendant over his haughty barons than the law alone, not supported by these active qualities, was ever able to confer.

1407.

ABOUT the same time, fortune gave Henry an advantage over that neighbour, who, by his fituation, was most enabled to disturb his government. Robert III. king of Scots, was a prince, though of flender capacity, extremely innocent and inoffenfive in his conduct: But Scotland, at that time, was still less fitted than England for cherishing, or even enduring, fovereigns of that character. The duke of Albany, Robert's brother, a prince of more abilities, at least of a more boisterous and violent disposition, had affumed the government of the state; and, not fatisfied with prefent authority, he entertained the criminal purpose of extirpating his brother's children, and of acquiring the crown to his own family. He threw in prison David, his eldest nephew, who there perished by hunger: James alone, the younger brother of David, stood between that tyrant and the throne; and king Robert, sensible of his son's danger, embarked him on board a ship, with a view of fending him to France, and entrusting him to the protection of that friendly power. Unfortunately, the vessel was taken by the English; prince James, a boy about nine years of age, was carried to London; and though there subsisted at that time a truce between the kingdoms, Henry refused to restore the young prince to his liberty. Robert, worn out with cares and infirmities, was unable to bear the shock of this last misfortune; and he soon after died, leaving the government in the hands of the duke of Albany". Henry was now more fensible than ever of the importance of the acquisition which he had made: While he retained fuch a pledge, he was fure of keep-

CHAP, ing the duke of Albany in dependance; or, if offended, he could eafily, by restoring the true heir, take ample revenge upon the ufurper. But though the king, by detaining James in the English court, had shown himself somewhat desicient in generosity. he made ample amends by giving that prince an excellent education, which afterwards qualified him, when he mounted the throne, to reform, in some measure, the rude and barbarous manners of his

native country.

THE hostile dispositions which of late had prevailed between France and England were restrained, during the greater part of this reign, from appearing in action. The jealousies and civil commotions with which both nations were disturbed kept each of them from taking advantage of the unhappy fituation of its neighbour. But as the abilities and good fortune of Henry had fooner been able to compose the English factions, this prince began, in the latter part of his reign, to look abroad, and to forment the animofities between the families of Burgundy and Orleans, by which the government of France was, during that period, fo much diffracted. He knew that one great fource of the national discontent against his predecessor was the inactivity of his reign; and he hoped, by giving a new direction to the restless and unquiet spirits of his people, to prevent their breaking out in domestic wars and disorders. That he might unite policy with force, he first entered into treaty with the duke of Burgundy, and fent that prince a small body of troops, which supported him against his enemies P. Soon after, he hearkened to more advantageous propofals made him by the duke of Orleans, and dispatched a greater body to support that party 9. But the leaders of the opposite factions having made temporary accommodation, the interests of the English were facrificed; and this effort of

P Walfingham, p. 3%o.

<sup>9</sup> Rymer, vol. viii. p. 715. 738.

Henry proved, in the iffue, entirely vain and fruit. CHAP. less. The declining state of his health, and the shortness of his reign, prevented him from renewing the attempt, which his more fortunate fon carried to fo great a length against the French monarchy.

Such were the military and foreign transactions Parliaof this reign: The civil and parliamentary are fome- mentary transacwhat more memorable, and more worthy of our attions. tention. During the two last reigns, the elections of the commons had appeared a circumstance of government not to be neglected; and Richard was even accused of using unwarrantable methods for procuring to his partifans a feat in that house. This practice formed one confiderable article of charge against him in his deposition; yet Henry scrupled not to tread in his footsteps, and to encourage the fame abuses in elections. Laws were enacted against fuch undue influence, and even a sheriff was punished for an iniquitous return which he had made ': But laws were commonly, at that time, very ill executed; and the liberties of the people, fuch as they were, flood on a furer basis than on laws and parliamentary elections. Though the house of commons was little able to withstand the violent currents which perpetually ran between the monarchy and the aristocracy, and though that house might easily be brought, at a particular time, to make the most unwarrantable concessions to either; the general institutions of the state still remained invariable; the interests of the several members continued on the fame footing; the fword was in the hands of the subject; and the government, though thrown into temporary diforder, foon fettled itself on its ancient foundations.

During the greater part of this reign, the king was obliged to court popularity; and the house of commons, fensible of their own importance, began to assume powers, which had not usually been exer-

C HAP. cifed by their predecessors. In the first year of Henry, they procured a law, that no judge, in concurring with any iniquitous measure, should be excused by pleading the orders of the king, or even the danger of his own life from the menaces of the fovereign. In the fecond year, they infifted on maintaining the practice of not granting any supply before they received an answer to their petitions; which was a tacit manner of bargaining with the prince. In the fifth year, they defired the king to remove from his household four persons who had displeased them, among whom was his own confessor; and Henry, though he told them that he knew of no offence which thefe men had committed, yet, in order to gratify them, complied with their request u. In the fixth year, they voted the king supplies, but appointed treasurers of their own, to fee the money difburfed for the purposes intended, and required them to deliver in their accounts to the house w. In the eighth year, they proposed, for the regulation of the government and household, thirty important articles, which were all agreed to; and they even obliged all the members of council, all the judges, and all the officers of the household, to swear to the observance of them x. The abridger of the records remarks the unufual liberties taken by the speaker and the house during this periody. But the great authority of the commons was but a temporary advantage, arifing from the present situation. In a subsequent parliament. when the speaker made his customary application to the throne for liberty of speech, the king, having now overcome all his domestic difficulties, plainly told him, that he would have no novelties introduced. and would enjoy his prerogatives. But on the whole, the limitations of the government feem to have been more fenfibly felt, and more carefully maintained by Henry, than by any of his predecessors.

s Cotton, p. 354.

t Ibid. p. 406. u Tid. p. 426.

w Ibid. p. 438.

<sup>\*</sup> Ibid. p. 456, 457. Y Ibid. p. 462.

During this reign, when the house of commons C H A P. were, at any time, brought to make unwary conceffions to the crown, they also shewed their freedom by a speedy retractation of them. Henry, though he entertained a perpetual and well-grounded jealoufy of the family of Mortimer, allowed not their name to be once mentioned in parliament; and as none of the rebels had ventured to declare the earl of Marche king, he never attempted to procure, what would not have been refused him, an express declaration against the claim of that nobleman; because he knew that fuch a declaration, in the prefent circumstances, would have no authority, and would only ferve to revive the memory of Mortimer's title in the minds of the people. He proceeded in his purpole after a more artful and covert manner. He procured a fettlement of the crown on himfelf and his heirs-male 2, thereby tacitly excluding the females, and transferring the Salic law into the English government. He thought, that though the house of Plantagenet had at first derived their title from a female, this was a remote event, unknown to the generality of the people; and if he could once accustom them to the practice of excluding women, the title of the earl of Marche would gradually be forgotten and neglected by them. But he was very unfortunate in this attempt. During the long contests with France, the injustice of the Salic law had been fo much exclaimed against by the nation, that a contrary principle had taken deep root in the minds of men; and it was now become impossible to eradicate it. fame house of commons, therefore, in a subsequent fession, apprehensive that they had overturned the foundations of the English government, and that they had opened the door to more civil wars than might enfue even from the irregular elevation of the house of Lancaster, applied with such earnestness for

C H A P. a new fettlement of the crown, that Henry yielded to XVIII, their request, and agreed to the succession of the princesses of his family a. A certain proof, that nobody was, in his heart, fatisfied with the king's title to the crown, or knew on what principle to rest it.

> But though the commons, during this reign, showed a laudable zeal for liberty in their transactions with the crown; their efforts against the church were still more extraordinary, and feemed to anticipate very much the spirit which became so general in a little more than a century afterwards. I know, that the credit of these passages rests entirely on one ancient historian b; but that historian was contemporary, was a clergyman, and it was contrary to the interests of his order to preserve the memory of fuch transactions, much more to forge precedents, which posterity might, some time, be tempted to imitate. This is a truth fo evident, that the most likely way of accounting for the filence of the records on this head, is by supposing, that the authority of some churchmen was so great as to procure a razure, with regard to these circumstances, which the indifcretion of one of that order has happily preferved to us.

> In the fixth of Henry, the commons, who had been required to grant supplies, proposed in plain terms to the king, that he should seize all the temporalities of the church, and employ them as a perpetual fund to ferve the exigencies of the state. They infifted, that the clergy possessed a third of the lands of the kingdom; that they contributed nothing to the public burdens; and that their riches tended only to disqualify them from performing their miniflerial functions with proper zeal and attention. When this address was presented, the archbishop of Canterbury, who then attended the king, objected

<sup>2</sup> Rymer, vol. viii. p. 462.

b Walfingham.

that the clergy, though they went not in person to CHAP. the wars, fent their vassals and tenants in all cases of necessity; while, at the same time, they themselves, who staid at home, were employed night and day in offering up their prayers for the happiness and profperity of the state. The speaker smiled, and anfwered, without referve, that he thought the prayers of the church but a very flender fupply. The archbishop, however, prevailed in the dispute: The king discouraged the application of the commons: And the lords rejected the bill which the lower house had framed for stripping the church of her revenues c.

THE commons were not discouraged by this re-

pulse: In the eleventh of the king they returned to the charge with more zeal than before: They made a calculation of all the ecclefiaftical revenues, which, by their account, amounted to 485,000 marks a-year, and contained 18,400 ploughs of land. They proposed to divide this property among fifteen new earls, 1500 knights, 6000 efquires, and a hundred hospitals; besides 20,000 pounds a-year, which the king might take for his own use: And they infifted, that the clerical functions would be better performed than at present, by 15,000 parish priests, paid at the rate of feven marks a-piece of yearly stipend d. This application was accompanied with an address for mitigating the statutes enacted against the Lollards, which hows from what fource the address came. The king gave the commons a fevere reply; and farther to fatisfy the church, and to prove that he was quite in earnest, he ordered a Lollard to be burned before the diffolution of the parliament.

WE have now related almost all the memorable transactions of this reign, which was busy and active; but produced few events that deferve to be transmitted to posterity. The king was so much

e Walfingham, p. 371. Ypod. Neuft. p. 563. d Walfingham, p. 379. Tit. Livius. e Rymer, vol. viii. p. 627. Otterbourne, p. 267.

Vol. III.

XVIII. 1413.

CHAP. employed in defending his crown, which he had obtained by unwarrantable means, and poffeffed by a bad title, that he had little leifure to look abroad, or perform any action which might redound to the honour or advantage of the nation. His health declined fome months before his death; he was subject to fits, which bereaved him, for the time, of his fenses: And, though he was yet in the flower of his age, his end was vifibly approaching. He expired at Westminster in the forty-fixth year of his age, and the thirteenth of his reign.

zoth Mar. Death.

and character of the king.

THE great popularity which Henry enjoyed before he attained the crown, and which had fo much aided him in the acquisition of it, was entirely lost many years before the end of his reign; and he governed his people more by terror than by affection, more by his own policy than by their fense of duty or allegiance. When men came to reflect, in cool blood, on the crimes which had led him to the throne: the rebellion against his prince; the deposition of a lawful king, guilty fometimes, perhaps, of oppression, but more frequently of indifcretion; the exclusion of the true heir; the murder of his fovereign and near relation; these were such enormities as drew on him the hatred of his subjects, fanctified all the rebellions against him, and made the executions, though not remarkably fevere, which he found necessary for the maintenance of his authority, appear cruel as well as iniquitous to the people. Yet, without pretending to apologize for these crimes, which must ever be held in detestation, it may be remarked, that he was infenfibly led into this blamable conduct by a train of incidents, which few men possels virtue enough to withstand. The injustice with which his predecessor had treated him, in first condemning him to banishment, then despoiling him of his patrimony, made, him naturally think of revenge, and of recovering his lost rights; the headlong zeal of the people hurried him into the throne; the care of his own fecurity, as well

well as his ambition, made him an ufurper; and the CHAP. steps have always been so few between the prisons of princes and their graves, that we need not wonder that Richard's fate was no exception to the general rule. All these considerations make Henry's situation, if he retained any fense of virtue, much to be lamented; and the inquietude with which he poffessed his envied greatness, and the remorfes by which, it is faid, he was continually haunted, render him an object of our pity, even when feated upon the throne. But it must be owned, that his prudence and vigilance and forefight in maintaining his power, were admirable: His command of temper remarkable: His courage, both military and political, without blemish: And he poffessed many qualities which fitted him for his high station, and which rendered his usurpation of it, though pernicious in after-times, rather falutary, during his own reign, to the English nation.

Henry was twice married: By his first wife, Mary de Bohun, daughter and co-heir of the earl of Hereford, he had four sons, Henry, his successor in the throne, Thomas, duke of Clarence, John, duke of Bedford, and Humphrey, duke of Glocester; and two daughters, Blanche and Philippa, the former married to the duke of Bavaria, the latter to the king of Denmark. His second wife, Jane, whom he married after he was king, and who was daughter of the king of Navarre, and widow of the duke of Britanny,

brought him no iffue.

By an act of the fifth of this reign, it is made felony to cut out any person's tongue, or put out his eyes; crimes which, the act says, were very frequent. This savage spirit of revenge denotes a barbarous people; though, perhaps, it was increased by the prevailing factions and civil commotions.

COMMERCE was very little understood in this reign, as in all the preceding. In particular, a great jealousy prevailed against merchant strangers; and many restraints were, by law, imposed upon them; namely,

G 2 that

C HAP. that they should lay out in English manufactures or commodities all the money acquired by the fale of their goods; that they should not buy or sell with one another, and that all their goods should be difposed of three months after importation f. This last clause was found so inconvenient, that it was soon after repealed by parliament.

IT appears that the expence of this king's household amounted to the yearly fum of 19,500 l. money

of that age 2.

GUICCIARDIN tells us, that the Flemings, in this century, learned from Italy all the refinements in arts, which they taught the rest of Europe. The progress, however, of the arts was still very slow and backward in England.

f 4 Hen. IV. cap. 15. and 5 Hen. IV. cap. 9. 8 Rymer, tom. viii. p. 610.





From the Reyal Coll: Kenfington .

I:K:Sherwin

## CHAP. XIX.

## H ENRY V.

The king's former disorders—His reformation— The Lollards —— Punishment of lord Cobham —— State of France—Invasion of that kingdom— Battle of Azincour-State of France-New invasion of France—Assassination of the duke of Burgundy—Treaty of Troye—Marriage of the king — His death — and character — Miscellaneous transactions during this reign.

THE many jealousies to which Henry IV.'s situa- C HAP. tion naturally exposed him, had so infected his temper, that he had entertained unreasonable suspicions with regard to the fidelity of his eldest fon; The king's and, during the latter years of his life, he had ex-former difcluded that prince from all share in public business, and was even displeased to see him at the head of armies, where his martial talents, though ufeful to the support of government, acquired him a renown, which, he thought, might prove dangerous to his own authority. The active spirit of young Henry, restrained from its proper exercise, broke out into extravagancies of every kind; and the riot of pleafure, the frolic of debauchery, the outrage of wine, filled the vacancies of a mind, better adapted to the pursuits of ambition and the cares of government. This course of life threw him among companions, whose disorders, if accompanied with spirit and humour, he indulged and seconded; and he was detected in many fallies, which, to feverer eyes, appeared totally unworthy of his rank and station. There even remains a tradition, that, when heated G 3 with

CHAP. with liquor and jollity, he fcrupled not to accompany his riotous affociates in attacking the paffengers on the streets and highways, and despoiling them of their goods; and he found an amusement in the incidents which the terror and regret of these defenceless people produced on such occasions. This extreme of dissoluteness proved equally disagreeable to his father, as that eager application to bufiness which had at first given him occasion of jealoufy; and he faw, in his fon's behaviour, the fame neglect of decency, the same attachment to low company, which had degraded the perfonal character of Richard, and which, more than all his errors in government, had tended to overturn his throne. But the nation, in general, confidered the young prince with more indulgence; and observed so many gleams of generofity, spirit, and magnanimity, breaking continually through the cloud which a wild conduct threw over his character, that they never ceased hoping for his amendment; and they ascribed all the weeds, which shot up in that rich soil, to the want of proper culture and attention in the king and his ministers. There happened an incident which encouraged these agreeable views, and gave much occasion for favourable reflections to all men of sense and candour. A riotous companion of the prince's had been indicted before Gascoigne, the chief justice, for fome diforders; and Henry was not ashamed to appear at the bar with the criminal, in order to give him countenance and protection. Finding that his presence had not overawed the chief justice, he proceeded to infult that magistrate on his tribunal; but Gascoigne, mindful of the character which he then bore, and the majesty of the sovereign and of the laws, which he fustained, ordered the prince to be carried to prison for his rude behaviour. The spectators were agreeably disappointed when they

Taw the heir of the crown fubmit peaceably to this CHAP. fentence, make reparation for his error by acknowledging it, and check his impetuous nature in the midst of its extravagant career.

1413-

THE memory of this incident, and of many others His reof a like nature, rendered the prospect of the future formation. reign nowife disagreeable to the nation, and increased the joy which the death of fo unpopular a prince as the late king naturally occasioned. The first steps taken by the young prince confirmed all those prepossessions entertained in his favour. He called together his former companions, acquainted them with his intended reformation, exhorted them to imitate his example, but strictly inhibited them, till they had given proofs of their fincerity in this particular, from appearing any more in his presence; and he thus dismissed them with liberal presents k. The wife ministers of his father, who had checked his riots, found that they had unknowingly been paying the highest court to him; and were received with all the marks of favour and confidence. The chief justice himself, who trembled to approach the royal prefence, met with praises instead of reproaches for his past conduct, and was exhorted to persevere in the same rigorous and impartial execution of the laws. The furprise of those who expected an opposite behaviour, augmented their fatisfaction; and the character of the young king appeared brighter than if it had never been shaded by any errors.

BUT Henry was anxious not only to repair his own misconduct, but also to make amends for those iniquities into which policy or the necessity of affairs had betrayed his father. He expressed the deepest forrow for the fate of the unhappy Richard, did justice to the memory of that unfortunate prince, even performed his funeral obsequies with pomp and folemnity, and cherished all those who had

k Hall, fol. 33. Holingshed, p. 543. i Walfing. p. 382. Godwin's life of Henry V. p. 1. diftin-

C H A P. XIX.

distinguished themselves by their loyalty and attachment towards him 1. Instead of continuing the restraints which the jealousy of his father had imposed on the earl of Marche, he received that young nobleman with fingular courtefy and favour; and by this magnanimity so gained on the gentle aud unambitious nature of his competitor, that he remained ever after fincerely attached to him, and gave him no disturbance in his future government. The family of Piercy was restored to its fortune and honours m. The king feemed ambitious to bury all party-distinctions in oblivion: The instruments of the preceding reign, who had been advanced from their blind zeal for the Lancastrian interests, more than from their merits, gave place every where to men of more honourable characters: Virtue seemed now to have an open career, in which it might exert itself: The exhortations, as well as example, of the prince gave it encouragement: All men were unanimous in their attachment to Henry; and the defects of his title were forgotten amidst the personal regard which was univerfally paid to him.

The Loi-

THERE remained among the people only one party distinction, which was derived from religious differences, and which, as it is of a peculiar, and commonly a very obstinate nature, the popularity of Henry was not able to overcome. The Lollards were every day increasing in the kingdom, and were become a formed party, which appeared extremely dangerous to the church, and even formidable to the civil authority. The enthusiasm by which these sections which they pretended to introduce, the hatred which they expressed against the established hierarchy, gave an alarm to Henry; who, either from a sincere attachment to the ancient religion, or from a dread of the unknown consequences which attend

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>1</sup> Hift. Croyland. contin. Hall, fol 34. Holingshed, p. 544.

<sup>m</sup> Holingshed, p. 545.

<sup>n</sup> Walfingham, p. 382.

all important changes, was determined to execute CHAP. the laws against such bold innovators. The head of this fect was fir John Oldcastle lord Cobham, a nobleman who had diffinguished himself by his valour and his military talents, and had, on many occasions, acquired the esteem both of the late and of the present king. His high character and his zeal for the new fect pointed him out to Arundel, archbishop of Canterbury, as the proper victim of ecclefiaftical feverity; whose punishment would strike a terror into the whole party, and teach them that they must expect no mercy under the present administration. He applied to Henry for a permission to indict lord Cobham p; but the generous nature of the prince was averse to such fanguinary methods of conversion. He represented to the primate, that reason and conviction were the best expedients for supporting truth; that all gentle means ought first to be tried in order to reclaim men from error; and that he himself would endeavour, by a conversation with Cobham, to reconcile him to the catholic faith. But he found that nobleman obstinate in his opinions, and determined not to sacrifice truths of fuch infinite moment to his complaifance for fovereigns 9. Henry's principles of toleration, or rather his love of the practice, could carry him no farther; and he then gave full reins to ecclefiaftical feverity against the inflexible heresiarch. The primate indicted Cobham; and, with the affistance of his three suffragans, the bishops of London, Winchester, and St. David's, condemned him to the flames for his erroneous opinions. Cobham, who was confined in the Tower, made his escape before the day appointed for his execution. The bold fpirit of the man, provoked by perfecution and stimulated by zeal, was urged to attempt the most criminal enterprifes; and his unlimited authority

9 Rymer, vol. ix. p. 61. Walfingham, p. 383.

<sup>•</sup> Walfingham, p. 382. P Fox's Acls and Monuments, p. 513.

CHAP. over the new fect proved that he well merited the XIX. MAIS.

1414. 6th Jan.

attention of the civil magistrate. He formed in his retreat very violent defigns against his enemies; and dispatching his emissaries to all quarters, appointed a general rendezvous of the party, in order to feize the person of the king at Eltham, and put their perfecutors to the fword. Henry, apprifed of their intention, removed to Westminster: Cobham was not discouraged by this disappointment; but changed the place of rendezvous to the field near St. Giles's: The king, having thut the gates of the city, to prevent any reinforcement to the Lollards from that quarter, came into the field in the night-time, feized fuch of the conspirators as appeared, and afterwards laid hold of the feveral parties who were hastening to the place appointed. It appeared that a few only were in the fecret of the conspiracy: The rest implicitly followed their leaders: But upon the trial of the prisoners, the treasonable designs of the sect were rendered certain, both from evidence, and from the confession of the criminals themselves. Some were executed; the greater number pardoned t. Cobham himself, who made his escape by slight, was not brought to justice till four years after, when he was hanged as a traitor; and his body was burnt on the gibbet, in execution of the fentence pronounced against him as a heretic ". This criminal defign, which was perhaps fomewhat aggravated by the clergy, brought difcredit upon the party, and checked the progress of that fect, which had embraced the speculative doctrines of Wickliffe, and at the same time aspired to a reformation of ecclesiastical abuses.

Punishment of Lord Cobham,

> THESE two points were the great objects of the Lollards; but the bulk of the nation was not affected in the same degree by both of them.

Walfingham, p. 385. 6 Cotton, p. 554. Hall, fol. 35. Holingshed, p. 544. t Rymer, vol. ix. p. 119. 129. 193. fingham, p. 400. Otterbourne, p. 280. Holingshed, p. 561.

mon fense and obvious reflection had discovered to C H A P. the people the advantages of a reformation in discipline; but the age was not yet fo far advanced as to be feized with the spirit of controversy, or to enter into those abstruse doctrines, which the Lollards endeavoured to propagate throughout the kingdom. The very notion of herefy alarmed the generality of the people: Innovation in fundamental principles was fuspicious: Curiosity was not, as yet, a sufficient counterpoife to authority: And even many, who were the greatest friends to the reformation of abuses, were anxious to express their detestation of the speculative tenets of the Wickliffites, which they feared, threw diffrace on fo good a cause. This turn of thought appears evidently in the proceedings of the parliament which was fummoned immediately after the detection of Cobham's conspiracy. That affembly passed severe laws against the new heretics: They enacted, that whoever was convicted of Lollardy before the ordinary, befides fuffering capital punishment according to the laws formerly established, should also forfeit his lands and goods to the king; and that the chancellor, treasurer, justices of the two benches, sheriffs, justices of the peace, and all the chief magistrates in every city and borough, should take an oath to use their utmost endeavours for the extirpation of herefy w. Yet this very parliament, when the king demanded fupply, renewed the offer formerly pressed upon his father, and entreated him to feize all the ecclefiastical revenues. and convert them to the use of the crown x. clergy were alarmed: They could offer the king no bribe which was equivalent: They only agreed to confer on him all the priories alien, which depended on capital abbies in Normandy, and had been bequeathed to these abbies, when that province remained united to England: And Chicheley, now

> W 2 Hen. V. chap. 7. \* Hall, fol. 35.

CHAP. archbishop of Canterbury, endeavoured to divert the blow, by giving occupation to the king, and by perfuading him to undertake a war against France, in order to recover his loft rights to that kingdom y.

> IT was the dying injunction of the late king to his fon, not to allow the English to remain long in peace, which was apt to breed intestine commotions: but to employ them in foreign expeditions, by which the prince might acquire honour; the nobility, in sharing his dangers, might attach themselves to his person; and all the restless spirits find occupation for their inquietude. The natural disposition of Henry fufficiently inclined him to follow this advice, and the civil diforders of France, which had been prolonged beyond those of England, opened a full career to his ambition.

¥4.15. State of France.

THE death of Charles V. which followed foon after that of Edward III. and the youth of his fon. Charles VI. put the two kingdoms for fome time in a fimilar fituation; and it was not to be apprehended, that either of them, during a minority, would be able to make much advantage of the weakness of the other. The jealousies also between Charles's three uncles, the dukes of Anjou, Berri, and Burgundy, had distracted the affairs of France rather more than those between the dukes of Lancaster, York, and Glocester, Richard's three uncles. disordered those of England; and had carried off the attention of the French nation from any vigorous enterprise against foreign states. But in proportion as Charles advanced in years, the factions were composed; his two uncles, the dukes of Anjou and Burgundy, died; and the king himself, asfuming the reins of government, discovered symptoms of genius and spirit, which revived the drooping hopes of his country. This promifing state of affairs was not of long duration: The unhappy

TAIS.

prince fell fuddenly into a fit of frenzy, which ren- C H AP. dered him incapable of exercifing his authority; and XIX. though he recovered from this diforder, he was fo fubject to relapses, that his judgment was gradually but fenfibly impaired, and no steady plan of government could be purfued by him. The administration of affairs was disputed between his brother, Lewis duke of Orleans, and his coufin-german, John duke of Burgundy: The propinquity to the crown pleaded in favour of the former: The latter, who, in right of his mother, had inherited the county of Flanders, which he annexed to his father's extensive dominions, derived a lustre from his superior power: The people were divided between these contending

princes: And the king, now refuming, now dropping his authority, kept the victory undecided, and prevented any regular fettlement of the state by the

final prevalence of either party.

AT length, the dukes of Orleans and Burgundy, feeming to be moved by the cries of the nation and by the interpolition of common friends, agreed to bury all past quarrels in oblivion, and to enter into strict amity: They swore before the altar the fincerity of their friendship; the priest administered the facrament to both of them; they gave to each other every pledge which could be deemed facred among men: But all this folemn preparation was only a cover for the basest treachery, which was deliberately premeditated by the duke of Burgundy. He procured his rival to be affaffinated in the streets of Paris: He endeavoured for some time to conceal the part which he took in the crime: But being detected, he embraced a refolution still more criminal and more dangerous to fociety, by openly avowing and justifying it 2. The parliament itself of Paris, the tribunal of justice, heard the harangues of the duke's advocate in defence of affaffination, which he

E La Laboureur, liv. xxvii, chap. 23, 24.

CHAP, termed tyrannicide; and that affembly, partly influenced by faction, partly overawed by power, pronounced no fentence of condemnation against this detestable doctrine a. The same question was afterwards agitated before the council of Constance; and it was with difficulty that a feeble decision, in favour of the contrary opinion, was procured from these fathers of the church, the ministers of peace and of religion. But the mischievous effects of that tenet, had they been before anywife doubtful, appeared fufficiently from the present incidents. The commission of this crime, which destroyed all trust and fecurity, rendered the war implacable between the French parties, and cut off every means of peace and accommodation. The princes of the blood, combining with the young duke of Orleans and his brothers, made violent war on the duke of Burgundy; and the unhappy king, feized fometimes by one party, fometimes by the other, transferred alternately to each of them the appearance of legal authority. The provinces were laid waste by mutual depredations: Affaffinations were every where committed from the animofity of the feveral leaders; or, what was equally terrible, executions were ordered, without any legal or free trial, by pretended courts of judicature. The whole kingdom was distinguished into two parties, the Burgundians and the Armagnacs; fo the adherents of the young duke of Orleans were called, from the count of Armagnac, father-in-law to that prince. The city of Paris, distracted between them, but inclining more to the Burgundians, was a perpetual scene of blood and violence; the king and royal family were often detained captives in the hands of the populace; their faithful ministers were butchered or imprisoned before their face; and it was dangerous for any man, amidst these enraged factions, to be distinguished by

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>2</sup> La Laboureur, liv. 27. chap. 27. Monstrelet, chap. 39.

a strict adherence to the principles of probity and CHAP. honour.

1415.

During this scene of general violence, there rose into some consideration a body of men, which ufually makes no figure in public transactions, even during the most peaceful times; and that was the university of Paris, whose opinion was sometimes demanded, and more frequently offered, in the multiplied disputes between the parties. The schism, by which the church was at that time divided, and which occasioned frequent controversies in the university, had raised the professors to an unusual degree of importance; and this connection between literature and superstition had bestowed on the former a weight, to which reason and knowledge are not, of themselves, any wife entitled among men. But there was another fociety whose fertiments were much more decifive at Paris, the fraternity of butchers, who, under the direction of their ringleaders, had declared for the duke of Burgundy, and committed the most violent outrages against the opposite party. To counterbalance their power, the Armagnacs made interest with the fraternity of carpenters; the populace ranged themselves on one side or the other; and the fate of the capital depended on the prevalence of either party.

THE advantage which might be made of these confusions, was easily perceived in England; and, according to the maxims which usually prevail among nations, it was determined to lay hold of the favourable opportunity. The late king, who was courted by both the French parties, fomented the quarrel, by alternately fending affiftance to each; but the present sovereign, impelled by the vigour of youth, and the ardour of ambition, determined to push his advantages to a greater length, and to carry. violent war into that distracted kingdom. while he was making preparations for this end, he tried to effect his purpose by negociation; and he

fent

C H A P. fent over ambassadors to Paris, offering a perpetual peace and alliance; but demanding Catharine, the French king's daughter in marriage, two millions of crowns as her portion, one million fix hundred thousand as the arrears of king John's ransom, and the immediate possession and full sovereignty of Normandy, and of all the other provinces which had been ravished from England by the arms of Philip Augustus; together with the superiority of Britanny and Flanders b. Such exorbitant demands show that he was fensible of the present miserable condition of France; and the terms offered by the French court, though much inferior, discover their consciousness of the same melancholy truth. They were willing to give him the princess in marriage, to pay him eight hundred thousand crowns, to resign the entire sovereignty of Guienne, and to annex to that province the country of Perigord, Rovergue, Xaintonge, the Angoumois, and other territories. As Henry rejected these conditions, and scarcely hoped that his own demands would be complied with, he never intermitted a moment his preparations for war, and having affembled a great fleet and army at Southampton, having invited all the nobility and military men of the kingdom to attend him by the hopes of glory and of conquest, he came to the sea-side, with a purpose of embarking on his expedition.

BUT while Henry was meditating conquests upon his neighbours, he unexpectedly found himself in danger from a conspiracy at home, which was happily detected in its infancy. The earl of Cambridge, second fon of the late duke of York, having

b Rymer, vol. ix. p. 208.

c Ibid. p. 211. It is reported by fome historians (See Hist. Croyl. Cont. p. 500.) that the Dauphin, iu derision of Henry's claims and diffolute character, fent him a box of tennis balls, intimating that these implements of play were better adapted to him than the instruments of war. But this story is by no means credible; the great offers made by the court of France show that they had already entertained a just idea of Henry's character, as well as of their own fituation

espoused the fister of the earl of Marche, had zeal- C H A P. oully embraced the interests of that family; and had held fome conferences with lord Scrope of Masham, and fir Thomas Grey of Heton, about the means of recovering to that nobleman his right to the crown of England. The conspirators, as soon as detected, acknowledged their guilt to the king d; and Henry proceeded without delay to their trial and condemnation. The utmost that could be expected of the best king in those ages, was, that he would fo far observe the essentials of justice, as not to make an innocent person a victim to his severity: But as to the formalities of law, which are often as material as the effentials themselves; they were facrificed without scruple to the least interest or convenience. A jury of commoners was fummoned: The three conspirators were indicted before them: The constable of Southampton castle fwore that they had feparately confessed their guilt to him: Without other evidence, fir Thomas Grey was condemned and executed: But as the earl of Cambridge and lord Scrope pleaded the privilege of their peerage, Henry thought proper to fummon a court of eighteen barons, in which the duke of Clarence prefided: The evidence given before the jury was read to them: The prisoners, though one of them was a prince of the blood, were not examined, nor produced in court, nor heard in their own defence; but received fentence of death upon this proof, which was every way irregular and unfatisfactory; and the fentence was foon after executed. The earl of Marche was accused of having given his approbation to the conspiracy, and received a general pardon from the king. He was probably either innocent of the crime imputed to

d Rymer, vol. ix. p. 300. T. Livii, p. 8.

e Rymer, vol. ix. p. 303.

CHAP. him, or had made reparation by his early repentance and discovery f.

1415. France.

THE fuccesses which the arms of England have, Invation of in different ages, obtained over those of France. have been much owing to the favourable fituation of the former kingdom. The English, happily feated in an island, could make advantage of every misfortune which attended their neighbours, and were little exposed to the danger of reprifals. They never left their own country but when they were conducted by a king of extraordinary genius, or found their enemy divided by intestine factions, or were supported by a powerful alliance on the continent; and as all these circumstances concurred at present to favour their enterprise, they had reason to expect from it proportionable fuccess. The duke of Burgundy, expelled France by a combination of the princes, had been fecretly foliciting the alliance of England<sup>8</sup>; and Henry knew that this prince, though he scrupled at first to join the inveterate enemy of his country, would willingly, if he faw any probability of fuccess, both assist him with his Flemish subjects, and draw over to the same side all his numerous partifans in France. Trusting therefore to this circumstance, but without establish-14th Aug. ing any concert with the duke, he put to fea, and landed near Harfleur, at the head of an army of. 6000 men at arms, and 24,000 foot, mostly archers. He immediately began the fiege of that place, which was valiantly defended by d'Estouteville, and under him by de Guitri, de Gaucourt, and others of the French nobility: But as the garrison was weak, and the fortifications in bad repair, the governor was at last obliged to capitulate; and he promifed to furrender the place if he received no fuccour before the eighteenth of September. The

f St. Remi, chap. lv. Goodwin, p. 65.

<sup>#</sup> Rymer, vol. ix. p. 137, 138.

day came, and there was no appearance of a French C HAP. army to relieve him. Henry, taking possession of the town, placed a garrison in it, and expelled all the French inhabitants, with an intention of peo-

pling it anew with English.

THE fatigues of this fiege, and the unufual heat of the season, had so wasted the English army, that Henry could enter on no farther enterprise; and was obliged to think of returning into England. He had dismissed his transports, which could not anchor in an open road upon the enemy's coasts: And he lay under a necessity of marching by land to Calais, before he could reach a place of fafety. A numerous French army of 14,000 men at arms, and 40,000 foot, was by this time affembled in Normandy under the constable d'Albret; a force which, if prudently conducted, was fufficient either to trample down the English in the open field, or to harass and reduce to nothing their small army, before they could finish so long and difficult a march. Henry, therefore, cautiously offered to facrifice his conquest of Harsleur for a safe passage to Calais; but his proposal being rejected, he determined to make his way by valour and conduct through all the opposition of the enemy i. That he might not discourage his army by the appearance of flight, or expose them to those hazards which naturally attend precipitate marches, he made flow and deliberate journies k, till he reached the Somme, which he purposed to pass at the ford of Blanquetague, the fame place where Edward, in a like situation, had before escaped from Philip de Valois. But he found the ford rendered impassable by the precaution of the French general, and guarded by a strong body on the opposite bank 1; and he was obliged to march higher up the river, in order to feek for a fafe passage. He

i De Laboureur, liv. 35. chap: 6.

k T. Livii, p. 12.

<sup>1</sup> St. Remi, chap. 58.

T415.

CHAP. was continually haraffed on his march by flying parties of the enemy; faw bodies of troops on the other fide ready to oppose every attempt; his provisions were cut off; his foldiers languished with fickness and fatigue; and his affairs seemed to be reduced to a desperate situation: When he was so dexterous or fo fortunate as to feize by furprize a passage near St. Quintin, which had not been sufficiently guarded; and he fafely carried over his army m.

Battle of Azincour.

25th Oct.

...

HENRY then bent his march northwards to Calais; but he was still exposed to great and imminent danger from the enemy, who had also passed the Somme, and threw themselves full in his way, with a purpose of intercepting his retreat. After he had passed the small river of Ternois at Blangi, he was furprifed to observe from the heights the whole French army drawn up in the plains of Azincour, and so posted, that it was impossible for him to proceed on his march without coming to an engagement. Nothing in appearance could be more unequal than the battle, upon which his fafety and all his fortunes now depended. The English army was little more than half the number which had difembarked at Harfleur; and they laboured under every discouragement and necessity. The enemy was four times more numerous; was headed by the dauphin and all the princes of the blood; and was plentifully supplied with provisions of every kind. Henry's fituation was exactly fimilar to that of Edward at Creffy, and that of the Black Prince at Poictiers; and the memory of these great events, inspiring the English with courage, made them hope for a like deliverance from their present difficulties. The king likewise observed the same prudent conduct which had been followed by these great commanders: He drew up his army on a narrow ground

between two woods, which guarded each flank; and C HAP. he patiently expected in that posture the attack of

the enemy ".

HAD the French constable been able, either to reason justly upon the present circumstances of the two armies, or to profit by past experience, he had declined a combat, and had waited till necessity, obliging the English to advance, had made them relinquish the advantages of their fituation. But the impetuous valour of the nobility, and a vain confidence in superior numbers, brought on this fatal action, which proved the fource of infinite calamities to their country. The French archers on horseback and their men at arms, crowded in their ranks, advanced upon the English archers, who had fixed pallifadoes in their front to break the impression of the enemy, and who safely plyed them, from behind that defence, with a shower of arrows which nothing could refift . The clay foil, moiftened by fome rain which had lately fallen, proved another obstacle to the force of the French cavalry: The wounded men and horses discomposed their ranks: The narrow compass in which they were pent, hindered them from recovering any order: The whole army was a scene of confusion, terror, and difmay: And Henry, perceiving his advantage, ordered the English archers, who were light and unincumbered, to advance upon the enemy, and feize the moment of victory. They fell with their battle-axes upon the French, who, in their present posture, were incapable either of flying or of making defence: They hewed them in pieces without refistance P: And being seconded by the men at arms, who also pushed on against the enemy, they covered the field with the killed, wounded, difmounted, and overthrown. After all appearance

<sup>Remi, cap. 62.
Walfingham, p. 392. T. Livii,
P. 19. Le Laboureur, liv. 35. chap. 7. Monstrelet, chap. 147.
P Walfingham, p. 393. Ypod. Neust. p. 594.</sup> 

CHAP. of opposition was over, the English had leisure to make prisoners; and having advanced with uninterrupted fuccess to the open plain, they there saw the remains of the French rear guard, which still maintained the appearance of a line of battle. At the fame time, they heard an alarm from behind: Some gentlemen of Picardy, having collected about 600 peafants, had fallen upon the English baggage, and were doing execution on the unarmed followers of the camp, who fled before them. Henry, feeing the enemy on all fides of him, began to entertain apprehensions from his prisoners; and he thought it necessary to issue general orders for putting them to death: But on discovering the truth, he stopped the slaughter, and was still able to fave

a great number.

No battle was ever more fatal to France, by the number of princes and nability flain or taken prisoners. Among the former were the constable himself, the count of Nevers and the duke of Brabant, brothers to the duke of Burgundy, the count of Vaudemont, brother to the duke of Lorraine, the duke of Alencon, the duke of Barre, the count of Marle. The most eminent prisoners were the dukes of Orleans and Bourbon, the counts d'Eu, Vendôme, and Richemont, and the mareschal of Boucicaut. An archbishop of Sens also was slain in this battle. The killed are computed, on the whole, to have amounted to ten thousand men; and as the flaughter fell chiefly upon the cavalry, it is pretended, that of these eight thousand were gentlemen. Henry was master of 14,000 prisoners. The person of chief note, who fell among the English, was the duke of York, who perished fighting by the king's fide, and had an end more honourable than his life. He was fucceeded in his honours and fortune by his nephew, fon of the earl of Cambridge, executed in the beginning of the year. All the English who were sain exceeded

not forty; though fome writers, with greater proba- C H A P.

bility, make the number more confiderable.

THE three great battles of Cressy, Poictiers, and Azincour, bear a fingular refemblance to each other in their most considerable circumstances. In all of them, there appears the fame temerity in the English princes, who without any object of moment, merely for the fake of plunder, had ventured fo far into the enemies country as to leave themselves no retreat: and unless faved by the utmost imprudence in the French commanders, were, from their very fituation, exposed to inevitable destruction. But allowance being made for this temerity, which, according to the irregular plans of war followed in those ages, feems to have been, in some measure, unavoidable: there appears in the day of action, the same presence of mind, dexterity, courage, firmness, and precaution, on the part of the English: The same precipitation, confusion, and vain confidence, on the part of the French: And the events were fuch as might have been expected from fuch opposite conduct. The immediate confequences too of these three great victories were fimilar: Instead of pushing the French with vigour, and taking advantage of their consternation, the English princes after their victory, feem rather to have relaxed their efforts, and to have allowed the enemy leifure to recover from his loffes. Henry interrupted not his march a moment after the battle of Azincour; he carried his prisoners to Calais, thence to England; he even concluded a truce with the enemy; and it was not till after an interval of two years that any body of English troops appeared in France.

THE poverty of all the European princes, and the fmall resources of their kingdoms, were the cause of these continual interruptions in their hostilities; and though the maxims of war were in general destructive, their military operations were mere incursions,

H 4

which.

C H A P. which, without any fettled plan, they carried on against each other.' The lustre, however, attending the victory of Azincour, procured some supplies from the English parliament, though still unequal to the expences of a campaign. They granted Henry an entire fifteenth of moveables; and they conferred on him, for life, the duties of tonnage and poundage, and the jubidies on the exportation of wool and leather. This concellion is more confiderable than that which had been granted to Richard II. by his last parliament, and which was afterwards, on his deposition, made fo great an article of charge against him.

State of France.

But during this interruption of hostilities from England, France was exposed to all the furies of civil war; and the feveral parties became every day more enraged against each other. The duke of Burgundy, confident that the French ministers and generals were entirely discredited by the misfortune at Azincour, advanced with a great army to Paris, and attempted to reinstate himself in possession of the government, as well as of the person of the king. But his partifans in that city were overawed by the court, and kept in fubjection: The duke despaired of fuccess: and he retired with his forces, which he immediately disbanded in the Low Countries 9. He was foon after invited to make a new attempt, by fome violent quarrels which broke out in the royal family. The queen Isabella, daughter of the duke of Bayaria, who had been hitherto an inveterate enemy to the Burgundian faction, had received a great injury from the other party, which the implacable spirit of that princess was never able to forgive. The publick necessities obliged the count of Armagnac, created constable of France in the place of d'Albret, to feize the great treasures which Isabella had amassed: And when she expressed her displeasure at this

4 Le Laboureur, liv. 35. chap. 10.

injury, he inspired into the weak mind of the king CHAP. fome jealousies concerning her conduct, and pushed him to feize and put to the torture, and afterwards throw into the Seine, Bois-bourdon, her favourite, whom he accused of a commerce of gallantry with that princels. The queen herfelf was fent to Tours. and confined under a guard ; and, after fuffering these multiplied infults, she no longer scrupled to enter into a correspondence with the duke of Burgundy. As her fon, the dauphin Charles, a youth of fixteen, was entirely governed by the faction of Armagnac, she extended her animosity to him, and fought his destruction with the most unrelenting hatred. She had foon an opportunity of rendering her unnatural purpose effectual. The duke of Burgundy, in concert with her, entered France at the head of a great army: He made himself master of Amiens. Abbeville, Dourlens, Montreuil, and other towns in Picardy; Senlis, Rheims, Chalons, Troye, and Auxerre, declared themselves of his party's. He got possession of Beaumont, Pontoise, Vernon, Meulant, Montlheri, towns in the neighbourhood of Paris; and carrying farther his progress towards the west. he feized Etampes, Chartres, and other fortreffes: and was at last able to deliver the queen, who fled to Troye, and openly declared against those ministers who, she faid, detained her husband in captivity .

MEANWHILE the partifans of Burgundy raifed a commotion in Paris, which always inclined to that faction. Lile-Adam, one of the duke's captains, was received into the city in the night-time, and headed the infurrection of the people, which in a moment became fo impetuous that nothing could oppose it. The person of the king was seized: The dauphin made his escape with difficulty: Great numbers of the faction of Armagnac were immediately butchered: The count himself, and many persons of note, were

<sup>5</sup> St. Remi, chap. 74. Monstrelet, chap. 167. t Ibid, chap, 81. Monstrelet, chap. 178, 179. chap. 79.

CHAP. XIX.

thrown into prison: Murders were daily committed from private animosity, under pretence of faction: And the populace, not satiated with their sury, and deeming the course of public justice too dilatory, broke into the prisons, and put to death the count of Armagnac, and all the other nobility who were there confined.

New invation of France. oft Aug.

3418.

WHILE France was in fuch furious combustion. and was fo ill prepared to refift a foreign enemy, Henry, having collected fome treasure, and levied an army, landed in Normandy at the head of twentyfive thousand men; and met with no considerable opposition from any quarter. He made himself master of Falaise; Evreux and Caen submitted to him; Pont de l'Arche opened its gates; and Henry, having subdued all the lower Normandy, and having received a reinforcement of fifteen thousand men from England w, formed the fiege of Rouen, which was defended by a garrifon of four thousand men. seconded by the inhabitants, to the number of fifteen thousand x. The cardinal des Ursins here attempted to incline him towards peace, and to moderate his pretensions: But the king replied to him in such terms, as shewed that he was fully sensible of all his present advantages: "Do you not see," said he, "that God has led me hither as by the hand? France " has no fovereign: I have just pretensions to that kingdom: Every thing is here in the utmost con-" fusion: No one thinks of resisting me. Can I have

Bur though Henry had opened his mind to this scheme of ambition, he still continued to negotiate with his enemies, and endeavoured to obtain more secure, though less considerable advantages. He

a more fensible proof, that the Being who disposes of empires, has determined to put the crown of

"France upon my head ??"

made,

w Walfingham, p. 400. \* St. Remi, chap. 91. y Juvenal des Urfins.

made, at the fame time, offers of peace to both par- CHAP. ties: to the queen and duke of Burgundy on the one hand who, having possession of the king's person, carried the appearance of legal authority , and to the dauphin on the other, who, being the undoubted heir of the monarchy, was adhered to by every one that payed any regard to the true interests of their country. These two parties also carried on a continual negociation with each other. The terms proposed on all fides were perpetually varying: The events of the war, and the intrigues of the cabinet, intermingled with each other: And the fate of France remained long in this uncertainty. After many negociations, Henry offered the queen and the duke of Burgundy to make peace with them, to espouse the princess Catharine, and to accept of all the provinces ceded to Edward III. by the treaty of Bretigni, with the addition of Normandy, which he was to receive in full and entire fovereignty b. These terms were fubmitted to: There remained only some circumstances to adjust, in order to the entire completion of the treaty: But in this interval the duke of Burgundy fecretly finished his treaty with the dauphin; and these two princes agreed to share the royal authority during king Charles's lifetime, and to unite their arms in order to expel foreign enemies c.

This alliance, which feemed to cut off from Henry all hopes of farther fuccess, proved, in the issue, the most favourable event that could have happened for his pretentions. Whether the dauphin and the duke of Burgundy were ever fincere in their mutual engagements, is uncertain; but very fatal effects refulted from their momentary and feeming union. The two princes agreed to an interview, in order to concert the means of rendering effectual their common attack on the English; but how both or either of them could with fafety venture upon this confer-

ence,

1419.

<sup>\*</sup> Ibid. p. 626, &c. <sup>2</sup> Rymer, vol. ix. p. 717. 749.

b Ibid. p. 762. c Ibid. p. 776. St. Remi, chap. 95.

XIX. 1419.

CHAP. ence, it feemed fomewhat difficult to contrive. The affaffination perpetrated by the duke of Burgundy, and still more, his open avowal of the deed, and defence of the doctrine, tended to dissolve all the bands of civil fociety; and even men of honour, who detested the example, might deem it just, on a favourable opportunity, to retaliate upon the author. The duke, therefore, who neither dared to give, nor could pretend to expect, any trust, agreed to all the contrivances for mutual fecurity which were proposed by the ministers of the dauphin. The two princes came to Montereau: The duke lodged in the castle: The dauphin in the town, which was divided from the castle by the river Yonne: The bridge between them was chosen for the place of interview: Two high rails were drawn across the bridge: The gates on each fide were guarded, one by the officers of the dauphin, the other by those of the duke: The princes were to enter into the intermediate space by the opposite gates, accompanied each by ten persons; and, with all these marks of diffidence, to conciliate their mutual friendship. But it appeared that no precautions are fufficient where laws have no place, and where all principles of honour are utterly abandoned. Tannegui de Chatel, and others of the dauphin's retainers, had been zealous partifans of the late duke of Orleans; and they determined to feize the opportunity of revenging on the affaffin the murder of that prince: They no fooner entered the rails, than they tion of the drew their fwords and attacked the duke of Bur-Burgundy. gundy: His friends were aftonished, and thought not of making any defence; and all of them either shared his fate, or were taken prisoners by the retinue of the dauphin d.

A ffassina-

THE extreme youth of this prince made it doubtful whether he had been admitted into the fecret of the conspiracy: But as the deed was committed

St. Remi, chap. 97. Monstrelet, chap. 211.

under

under his eye, by his most intimate friends, who CHAP. still retained their connexions with him, the blame of the action, which was certainly more imprudent than criminal, fell entirely upon him. The whole state of affairs was every where changed by this unexpected incident. The city of Paris, passionately devoted to the family of Burgundy, broke out into the highest fury against the dauphin. The court of king Charles entered from interest into the same views; and as all the ministers of that monarch had owed their preferment to the late duke, and forefaw their downfall if the dauphin should recover posfession of his father's person, they were concerned to prevent, by any means, the fuccess of his enterprise. The queen, persevering in her unnatural animosity against her son, encreased the general flame, and infpired into the king, as far as he was susceptible of any fentiment, the fame prejudices by which she herself had long been actuated. But above all. Philip count of Charolois, now duke of Burgundy, thought himself bound, by every tie of honour and of duty, to revenge the murder of his father, and to profecute the affaffin to the utmost extremity. And in this general transport of rage, every confideration of national and family interest was buried in oblivion by all parties: The subjection to a foreign enemy, the expulsion of the lawful heir, the flavery of the kingdom, appeared but small evils if they led to the gratification of the present passion.

THE king of England had, before the death of the duke of Burgundy, profited extremely by the distractions of France, and was daily making a confiderable progress in Normandy. He had taken Rouen after an obsinate siegee: He had made himself master of Pontoise and Gisors: He even threatened Paris, and by the terror of his arms had obliged the court to remove to Troye: And in the

e T. Livii, p. 69. Monstrelet, chap. 201.

1420.

C H A P. midst of his successes, he was agreeably surprised to find his enemies, instead of combining against him for their mutual defence, disposed to rush into his arms, and to make him the instrument of their venges ance upon each other. A league was immediately concluded at Arras between him and the duke of Burgundy. This prince, without stipulating any thing for himself, except the prosecution of his father's murder, and the marriage of the duke of Bedford with his fifter, was willing to facrifice the kingdom to Henry's ambition; and he agreed to every demand made by that monarch. In order to finish this astonishing treaty, which was to transfer the crown of France to a stranger, Henry went to Trove, accompanied by his brothers, the dukes of Clarence and Glocester; and was there met by the duke of Burgundy. The imbecility into which Charles had fallen, made him incapable of feeing any thing but through the eyes of those who attenda ed him; as they, on their part, faw every thing through the medium of their passions. The treaty, being already concerted among the parties, was immediately drawn, and figned, and ratified: Henry's will feemed to be a law throughout the whole nego: ciation: Nothing was attended to but his advantages.

Treaty of Troye.

THE principal articles of the treaty were, that Henry should espouse the princess Catharine: That king Charles, during his life-time, should enjoy the title and dignity of king of France: That Henry fhould be declared and acknowledged heir of the monarchy, and be entrusted with the present administration of the government: That that kingdom fhould pass to his heirs general: That France and England should for ever be united under one king ; but should still retain their several usages, customs; and privileges: That all the princes, peers, vaffals, and communities of France should swear, that they would both adhere to the future fuccession of Henry,

and

and pay him present obedience as regent: That this CHAP. prince should unite his arms to those of king Charles and the duke of Burgundy, in order to subdue the adherents of Charles the pretended dauphin: And that these three princes should make no peace or truce with him but by common confent and agreement f.

1420.

Such was the tenour of this famous treaty; a treaty which, as nothing but the most violent animosity could dictate it, so nothing but the power of the fword could carry into execution. It is hard to fav whether its confequences, had it taken effect, would have proved more pernicious to England or to France. It must have reduced the former kingdom to the rank of a province: It would have entirely difjointed the fuccession of the latter, and have brought on the destruction of every descendant of the royal family; as the houses of Orleans, Anjou, Alencon, Britanny, Bourbon, and of Burgundy itself, whose titles were preferable to that of the English princes. would, on that account, have been exposed to perpetual jealoufy and perfecution from the fovereign. There was even a palpable deficiency in Henry's claim, which no art could palliate. For, besides the insuperable objections to which Edward IIId's pretensions were exposed, he was not heir to that monarch: If female fuccession were admitted, the right had devolved on the house of Mortimer: Allowing that Richard II. was a tyrant, and that Henry IVth's merits in deposing him were so great towards the English, as to justify that nation in placing him on the throne; Richard had nowise offended France, and his rival had merited nothing of that kingdom: It could not possibly be pretended that the crown of France was become an appendage to that of England; and that a prince who, by any means, got possession of the latter, was, without far-

f Rymer, vol. ix. p. 895. St. Remi, chap. 101. Monstrelet, chap. 223.

Marriage of the

king.

C H A P. ther question, entitled to the former. So that, on the whole, it must be allowed that Henry's claim to France was, if possible, still more unintelligible than the title by which his father had mounted the throne

of England.

But though all these considerations were overlooked, amidst the hurry of passion by which the courts of France and Burgundy were actuated, they would necessarily revive during times of more tranquillity; and it behoved Henry to push his present advantages, and allow men no leifure for reason or reflection. In a few days after he espoused the princess Catharine: He carried his father-in-law to Paris, and put himself in possession of that capital: He obtained, from the parliament and the three estates, a ratification of the treaty of Troye: He supported the duke of Burgundy in procuring a fentence against the murderers of his father: And he immediately turned his arms, with fuccels, against the adherents of the dauphin, who, as foon as he heard of the treaty of Troye, took on him the style and authority of regent, and appealed to God and his fword for the maintenance of his title.

THE first place that Henry subdued was Sens, which opened its gates after a flight refistance. With the same facility he made himself master of Montereau. The defence of Melun was more obstinate: Barbasan, the governor, held out for the space of four months against the besiegers; and it was famine alone which obliged him to capitulate. Henry stipulated to spare the lives of all the garrison, except fuch as were accomplices in the murder of the duke of Burgundy; and as Barbasan himself was suspected to be of the number, his punishment was demanded by Philip: But the king had the generofity to intercede for him, and to prevent his execution s.

8 Holingshed, p. 577.

THE necessity of providing supplies, both of men CHAP. and money, obliged Henry to go over to England; and he left the duke of Exeter, his uncle, governor of Paris during his absence. The authority which naturally attends fuccess, procured from the English parliament a fubfidy of a fifteenth; but, if we may judge by the scantiness of the supply, the nation was nowife fanguine on their king's victories; and in proportion as the prospect of their union with France became nearer, they began to open their eyes, and to fee the dangerous confequences with which that event must necessarily be attended. It was fortunate for Henry, that he had other resources besides pecuniary supplies from his native subjects. The provinces which he had already conquered maintained his troops; and the hopes of farther advantages allured to his standard all men of ambitious spirits in England, who defired to fignalife themselves by arms. He levied a new army of twenty-four thousand archers and four thousand horsemen is, and marched them to Dover, the place of rendezvous. Every thing had remained in tranquillity at Paris under the duke of Exeter; but there had happened, in another quarter of the kingdom, a misfortune which hastened the king's embarkation.

THE detention of the young king of Scots in England had hitherto proved advantageous to Henry; and, by keeping the regent in awe, had preferved, during the whole course of the French war, the northern frontier in tranquillity. But when intelligence arrived in Scotland of the progress made by Henry, and the near prospect of his succession to the crown of France, the nation was alarmed, and forefaw their own inevitable ruin, if the subjection of their ally left them to combat alone a victorious enemy, who was already fo much superior in power and riches. The regent entered into the same views; and though

h Monstrelet, chap. 242.

C H A P. he declined an open rupture with England, he permitted a body of feven thousand Scots, under the command of the earl of Buchan, his fecond fon, to be transported into France for the service of the dauphin. To render this aid ineffectual, Henry had, in his former expedition, carried over the king of Scots, whom he obliged to fend orders to his countrymen to leave the French fervice; but the Scottish general replied, that he would obey no commands which came from a king in captivity, and that a prince, while in the hands of his enemy, was nowife entitled to authority. These troops, therefore, continued still to act under the earl of Buchan; and were employed by the dauphin to oppose the progress of the duke of Clarence in Anjou. The two armies encountered at Baugé: The English were defeated: The duke himfelf was flain by fir Allan Swinton, a Scotch knight, who commanded a company of men at arms: And the earls of Somerfet i, Dorfet, and Huntingdon, were taken prisoners k. This was the first action that turned the tide of success against the English; and the dauphin, that he might both attach the Scotch to his fervice, and reward the valour and conduct of the earl of Buchan, honoured that nobleman with the office of constable.

But the arrival of the king of England with fo confiderable an army, was more than fufficient to repair this lofs. Henry was received at Paris with great expressions of joy; so obstinate were the prejudices of the people: And he immediately conducted his army to Chartres, which had long been befieged by the dauphin. That prince raifed the fiege on the approach of the English; and being resolved to decline a battle, he retired with his

i His name was John, and he was afterwards created duke of Somerfet. He was grandfon of John of Gaunt duke of Lancaster. The Earl of Dorfet was brother to Somerfet, and fucceeded him in that title.

k St. Remi, chap. 110. Monstrelet, chap. 239. Hall, fol. 76.

army! Henry made himself master of Dreux with- CHAP. but a blow: He laid fiege to Meaux at the folicitation of the Parisians, who were much incommoded by the garrison of that place. This enterprise employed the English arms during the space of eight months: The bastard of Vaurus, governor of Meaux, distinguished himself by an obstinate defence; but was at last obliged to furrender at discretion. The cruelty of this officer was equal to his bravery: He was accustomed to hang, without distinction, all the English and Burgundians who fell into his hands: And Henry, in revenge of his barbarity, ordered him immediately to be hanged on the fame tree which he had made the instrument of his inhuman executions ".

This fuccess was followed by the furrender of many other places in the neighbourhood of Paris, which held for the dauphin: That prince was chased beyond the Loire, and he almost totally abandoned all the northern provinces: He was even purfued into the fouth by the united arms of the English and Burgundians, and threatened with total destruction. Notwithstanding the bravery and fidelity of his captains, he faw himself unequal to his enemies in the field; and found it necessary to temporise, and to avoid all hazardous actions with a rival, who had gained fo much the afcendant over him. And to crown all the other prosperities of Henry, his queen was delivered of a fon, who was called by his father's name, and whose birth was celebrated by rejoicings no less pompous, and no less fincere, at Paris than at London. The infant prince feemed to be univerfally regarded as the future heir of both monarchies.

But the glory of Henry, when it had nearly reached the fummit, was stopped short by the hand

1422. Death.

m Rymer, vol. x. p. 212. T. Livii, 1 St. Remi, chap. 3. P. 92, 93. St. Remi, chap. 116. Monstrelet, chap. 260.

CHAP. of nature; and all his mighty projects vanished into finoke. He was feized with a fiftula, a malady which the furgeons at that time had not skill enough to cure; and he was at last sensible that his distemper was mortal, and that his end was approaching. He sent for his brother the duke of Bedford, the earl of Warwic, and a few noblemen more, whom he had honoured with his friendship, and he delivered to them, in great tranquillity, his last will with regard to the government of his kingdom and family. He entreated them to continue, towards his infant fon, the same fidelity and attachment which they had always professed to himself during his lifetime, and which had been cemented by fo many mutual good offices. He expressed his indifference on the approach of death; and, though he regretted that he must leave unfinished a work so happily begun, he declared himself consident, that the final acquisition of France would be the effect of their prudence and valour. He left the regency of that kingdom to his elder brother the duke of Bedford; that of England to his younger, the duke of Glocester; and the care of his fon's person to the earl of Warwic. He recommended to all of them a great attention to maintain the friendship of the duke of Burgundy; and advised them never to give liberty to the French princes taken at Azincour, till his fon were of age, and could himfelf hold the reins of government. And he conjured them, if the fuccess of their arms should not enable them to place young Henry on the throne of France, never, at least, to make peace with that kingdom, unless the enemy, by the cession of Normandy, and its annexation to the crown of England, made compensation for all the hazard and expence of his enterprise n.

HE next applied himself to his devotions, and ordered his chaplain to recite the feven penitential

A Monstrelet, chap. 265. Hall, fol. 80.

pfalms. When that passage of the fifty-first psalm CHAP. was read, build thou the walls of Jerufalem; he interrupted the chaplain, and declared his ferious intention, after he should have fully subdued France, to conduct a crusade against the infidels, and recover possession of the Holy Land ". So ingenious are men in deceiving themselves, that Henry forgot, in those moments, all the blood spilt by his ambition; and received comfort from this late and feeble refolve, which, as the mode of these enterprises was now past, he certainly would never have carried into

excution. He expired in the thirty-fourth year of 31st Aug.

his age and the tenth of his reign.

This prince possessed many eminent virtues; and and chaif we give indulgence to ambition in a monarch, or the king. rank it, as the vulgar are inclined to do, among his virtues, they were unstained by any considerable blemish. His abilities appeared equally in the cabinet and in the field: The boldness of his enterprises was no less remarkable than his personal valour in conducting them. He had the talent of attaching his friends by affability, and of gaining his enemies by address and clemency. The English, dazzled by the lustre of his character, still more than by that of his victories, were reconciled to the defects in his title: The French almost forgot that he was an enemy: And his care in maintaining justice in his civil administration, and preserving discipline in his armies, made fome amends to both nations for the calamities inseparable from those wars in which his fhort reign was almost entirely occupied. That he could forgive the earl of Marche, who had a better title to the crown than himself, is a fure indication of his magnanimity; and that the earl relied fo entirely on his friendship, is no less a proof of his established character for candour and fincerity. There remain in history few instances of such mutual trust; and

XIX.

14220

CHAP. Still fewer where neither party found reason to re-

pent it.

THE exterior figure of this great prince, as well as his deportment, was engaging. His stature was fomewhat above the middle fize; his countenance beautiful; his limbs genteel and slender, but full of vigour; and he excelled in all warlike and manly exercises P. He left, by his queen, Catherine of France, only one fon, not full nine months old: whose misfortunes, in the course of his life, surpassed

all the glories and fuccesses of his father.

In less than two months after Henry's death, Charles VI. of France, his father-in-law, terminated his unhappy life. He had, for feveral years, poffeffed only the appearance of royal authority: Yet was this mere appearance of confiderable advantage to the English; and divided the duty and affections of the French between them and the dauphin. This prince was proclaimed and crowned king of France at Poictiers, by the name of Charles VII. Rheims, the place where this ceremony is usually performed, was at that time in the hands of his enemies.

CATHERINE of France, Henry's widow, married, foon after his death, a Welsh gentleman, Sir Owen Tudor, faid to be descended from the ancient princes of that country: She bore him two fons, Edmund and Jasper, of whom the eldest was created earl of Richmond; the fecond earl of Pembroke. The family of Tudor, first raised to distinction by this alliance, mounted afterwards the throne of England.

Miscellaneous tranfactions.

THE long schism, which had divided the Latin church for near forty years, was finally terminated in this reign by the council of Constance; which deposed the pope, John XXIII. for his crimes, and elected Martin V. in his place, who was acknowledged by almost all the kingdoms of Europe. This great and unufual act of authority in the council

gave the Roman pontiffs ever after a mortal anti- CHAP. pathy to those affemblies. The same jealousy which had long prevailed in most European countries, between the civil aristrocacy and monarchy, now also took place between these powers in the ecclesiastical body. But the great feparation of the bishops in the feveral states, and the disticulty of affembling them, gave the pope a mighty advantage, and made it more eafy for him to centre all the powers of the hierarchy in his own person. The cruelty and treachery which attended the punishment of John Huss and Jerome of Prague, the unhappy disciples of Wickliffe, who, in violation of a fafe conduct, were burned alive for their errors by the council of Constance, prove this melancholy truth, that toleration is none of the virtues of priests in any form of ecclesiastical government. But as the English nation had little or no concern in these great transactions, we are here the more concife in relating them.

THE first commission of array which we meet with, was issued in this reign q. The military part of the feudal fystem, which was the most essential circumstance of it, was entirely dissolved; and could no longer ferve for the defence of the kingdom. Henry, therefore, when he went to France in 1415, impowered certain commissioners to take, in each county, a review of all the freemen able to bear arms, to divide them into companies, and to keep them in readiness for resisting an enemy. This was the æra when the feudal militia in England gave place to one which was perhaps still less orderly and

regular.

WE have an authentic and exact account of the ordinary revenue of the crown during this reign; and it amounts only to 55,714 pounds 10 shillings and 10 pence a year . This is nearly the same with the revenue of Henry III, and the kings of Eng-

Rymer, vol. ix. p. 254, 255. F Rymer, vol. x. p. 113.

C H A P. land had neither become much richer nor poorer in the course of so many years. The ordinary expence of the government amounted to 42,507 pounds 16 shillings and to pence: So that the king had a furplus only of 13,206 pounds 14 shillings for the support of his household; for his wardrobe; for the expence of embassies; and other articles. This sum was nowise sufficient: He was therefore obliged to have frequent recourse to parliamentary supplies, and was thus, even in time of peace, not altogether independent of his people. But wars were attended with a great expence, which neither the prince's ordinary revenue, nor the extraordinary fupplies, were able to bear; and the fovereign was always reduced to many milerable shifts, in order to make any tolerable figure in them. He commonly borrowed money from all quarters; he pawned his jewels, and fometimes the crown itself's; he ran in arrears to his army; and he was often obliged, notwithstanding all these expedients, to stop in the midst of his career of victory, and to grant truces to the enemy. The high pay which was given to foldiers agreed very ill with this low income. All the extraordinary fupplies granted by parliament to Henry during the course of his reign, were only seven tenths and fifteenths, about 203,000 pounds. It is easy to compute how foon this money must be exhausted by armies of 24,000 archers, and 6000 horse; when each archer had fix-pence a day ", and each horseman two shillings. The most splendid successes proved commonly fruitless, when supported by fo poor a revenue; and the debts and difficulties which the king thereby incurred made him pay dear for his victories. The civil administration like-

wife.

t Parliamentary History, vol. ii. 5 Rymer, vol. x.p. 190. p. 168.

u It appears from many paffages of Rymer, particularly vol. ix. p. 258. that the king paid 20 marks a year for an archer, which is a good deal above fix-pence a day. The price had rifen, as is natural, by raising the denomination of money.

wife, even in time of peace, could never be very re- C H A P. gular, where the government was fo ill enabled to fupport itself. Henry, till within a year of his death, owed debts which he had contracted when prince of Wales w. It was in vain that the parliament pretended to restrain him from arbitrary practices, when he was reduced to fuch necessities. Though the right of levying purveyance, for instance, had been expressly guarded against by the Great Charter itself, and was frequently complained of by the commons. it was found absolutely impracticable to abolish it: and the parliament at length, submitting to it as a legal prerogative, contented themselves with enacting laws to limit and confine it. The duke of Glocetter, in the reign of Richard II. possessed a revenue of 60,000 crowns (about 30,000 pounds a year of our prefent money), as we learn from Froisfard x, and was, confequently, richer than the king himfelf, if all circumstances be duly considered.

IT is remarkable, that the city of Calais alone was an annual expence to the crown of 19,119 pounds, that is, above a third of the common charge of the government in time of peace. This fortress was of no use to the defence of England, and only gave that kingdom an inlet to annoy France. Ireland cost two thousand pounds a year, over and above its own revenue; which was certainly very low. Every thing conspires to give us a very mean idea of the state of

Europe in those ages.

From the most early times, till the reign of Edward III. the denomination of money had never been altered: A pound sterling was still a pound troy; that is, about three pounds of our present money. That conqueror was the first that innovated in this important article. In the twentieth of his reign he coined twenty-two shillings from

w Rymer, vol. x. p. 114. \* Liv. iv. chap. 86. y Rymer, vol. x. p. 113.

CHAP. a pound troy; in his twenty-seventh year he coined twenty-five shillings. But Henry V. who was also a conqueror, raifed still farther the denomination, and coined thirty shillings from a pound troy 2: His revenue, therefore, must have been about 110,000 pounds of our present money; and, by the cheapness of provisions, was equivalent to above 330,000 pounds.

> None of the princes of the house of Lancaster ventured to impose taxes without consent of parliament: Their doubtful or bad title became so far of advantage to the constitution. The rule was then fixed, and could not fafely be broken after-

wards, even by more absolute princes.

<sup>2</sup> Fleetwood's Chronicon Freciosum, p. 52.





Publish'd March 1.1788, by T. Cudell, Strand .

## CHAP. XX.

## HENRY VI.

Government during the minority—State of France - Military operations - Battle of Verneuil -Siege of Orleans - The maid of Orleans -The fiege of Orleans raised The king of France crowned at Rheims-Prudence of the duke of Bedford- Execution of the maid of Orleans - Defection of the duke of Burgundy-Death of the duke of Bedford—Decline of the English in France - Truce with France -Marriage of the king with Margaret of Anjou - Murder of the duke of Glocester - State of France -- Renewal of the war with France-The English expelled France.

URING the reigns of the Lancastrian princes, CHAP. the authority of parliament seems to have been more confirmed, and the privileges of the people more regarded, than during any former period; and Governthe two preceding kings, though men of great spi- ing the mirit and abilities, abstained from such exertions of nority. prerogative, as even weak princes, whose title was undifputed, were tempted to think they might venture upon with impunity. The long minority, of which there was now the prospect, encouraged still farther the lords and commons to extend their influence; and without paying much regard to the verbal destination of Henry V. they assumed the power of giving a new arrangement to the whole administration. They declined altogether the name of Regent with regard to England: They appointed the

XX. 1422.

CHAP. the duke of Bedford protector or guardian of that kingdom, a title which they supposed to imply less authority: They invested the duke of Glocester with the same dignity during the absence of his elder brother 2: And, in order to limit the power of both these princes, they appointed a council without whose advice and approbation no measure of importance could be determined b. The person and education of the infant prince was committed to Henry Beaufort, bishop of Winchester, his great uncle, and the legitimated fon of John of Gaunt, duke of Lancaster; a prelate who, as his family could never have any pretensions to the crown, might fafely, they thought, be intrusted with that important charge. The two princes, the dukes of Bedford and Glocester, who seemed injured by this plan of government, yet, being persons of great integrity and honour, acquiesced in any appointment which tended to give fecurity to the public; and as the wars in France appeared to be the object of greatest moment, they avoided every dispute which might throw an obstacle in the way of foreign conquests.

State of France.

WHEN the state of affairs between the English and French kings was confidered with a fuperficial eye, every advantage feemed to be on the fide of the former; and the total expulsion of Charles appeared to be an event which might naturally be expected from the superior power of his competitor. Though Henry was yet in his infancy, the administration was devolved on the duke of Bedford, the most accomplished prince of his age; whose experience, prudence, valour, and generofity, qualified him for his high office, and enabled him both to maintain union among his friends, and to gain the confidence of his ene-

e Hall, fol. 83. Monstrelet. vol. ii. p. 27.

<sup>2</sup> Rymer, vol. x. p. 261. Cotton, p. 564. b Cotton, p. 564.

mies. The whole power of England was at his CHAP. command: He was at the head of armies enured to victory: He was seconded by the most renowned generals of the age, the earls of Somerfet, Warwic, Salifbury, Suffolk, and Arundel, Sir John Talbot, and Sir John Fastolfe: And besides Guienne, the ancient inheritance of England, he was master of the capital, and of almost all the northern provinces, which were well enabled to furnish him with supplies both of men and money, and to affift and support his English forces.

Bur Charles, notwithstanding the present inferiority of his power, possessed some advantages, derived partly from his fituation, partly from his personal character, which promised him success. and ferved, first to control, then to overbalance the fuperior force and opulence of his enemies. He was the true and undoubted heir of the monarchy: All Frenchmen, who knew the interests, or defired the independence of their country, turned their eyes towards him as its fole refource: The exclusion given him by the imbecility of his father, and the forced or precipitate confent of the states, had plainly no validity: That spirit of faction, which had blinded the people, could not long hold them in fo gross a delusion: Their national and inveterate hatred against the English, the authors of all their calamities, must soon revive, and inspire them with indignation at bending their necks under the yoke of that hostile people: Great nobles and princes, accustomed to maintain an independence against their native sovereigns, would never endure a fubjection to strangers: And though most of the princes of the blood were, fince the fatal battle of Azincour, detained prisoners in England, the inhabitants of their demesnes, their friends, their vassals, all declared a zealous attachment to the king, and exerted themselves in resisting the violence of foreign invaders.

CHARLES

CHAP. CHARLES himself, though only in his twentieth year, was of a character well calculated to become the object of these benevolent sentiments; and, perhaps, from the favour which naturally attends youth, was the more likely, on account of his tender age, to acquire the good-will of his native fubjects. He was a prince of the most friendly and benign disposition, of easy and familiar manners, and of a just and found, though not a very vigorous understanding. Sincere, generous, affable, he engaged, from affection, the services of his followers, even while his low fortunes might make it their interest to desert him; and the lenity of his temper could pardon in them those fallies of discontent to which princes in his fituation are fo frequently exposed. The love of pleasure often seduced him into indolence; but, amidst all his irregularities, the goodness of his heart still shone forth; and, by exerting at intervals his courage and activity, he proved, that his general remissiness proceeded not from the want, either of a just spirit of ambition, or of personal valour.

THOUGH the virtues of this amiable prince lay fome time in obscurity, the duke of Bedford knew that his title alone made him formidable, and that every foreign assistance would be requisite, ere an English regent could hope to complete the conquest of France; an enterprise which, however it might feem to be much advanced, was still exposed to many and great difficulties. The chief circumstance which had procured to the English all their present advantages was the resentment of the duke of Burgundy against Charles; and as that prince feemed intent rather on gratifying his passion than confulting his interests, it was the more easy for the regent, by demonstrations of respect and confidence, to retain him in the alliance of England. He bent therefore all his endeavours to that purpose: He gave the duke every proof of friendship and regard:

He

He even offered him the regency of France, which CHAP. Philip declined: And that he might corroborate national connexions by private ties, he concluded his own marriage with the princess of Burgundy, which had been stipulated by the treaty of Arras.

1422.

1423-

Being fensible, that next to the alliance of Burgundy, the friendship of the Duke of Britanny was of the greatest importance towards forwarding the English conquests; and that, as the provinces of France, already fubdued; lay between the dominions of these two princes, he could never hope for any fecurity, without preferving his connexions with them; he was very intent on strengthening himself also from that quarter. The duke of Britanny, having received many just reasons of displeasure from the ministers of Charles, had already acceded to the treaty of Troye, and had, with other vasfals of the crown, done homage to Henry V. in quality of heir to the kingdom: But as the regent knew, that the duke was much governed by his brother, the count of Richemont, he endeavoured to fix his friendship, by paying court and doing fervices to this haughty and ambitious prince.

ARTHUR, count of Richemont, had been taken prisoner at the battle of Azincour, had been treated with great indulgence by the late king, and had even been permitted on his parole to take a journey into Britanny, where the state of affairs required his presence. The death of that victorious monarch happened before Richemont's return; and 17th Apr. this prince pretended, that, as his word was given personally to Henry V. he was not bound to fulfil it towards his fon and fuccessor: A chicane which the regent, as he could not force him to compliance; deemed it prudent to overlook. An interview was fettled at Amiens between the dukes of Bedford, Burgundy, and Britanny, at which the count of Richemont was also present d. The alli-

<sup>4</sup> Hall, fol. 84. Monstrelet, vol. i. p. 4. Stowe, p. 364.

CHAP, ance was renewed between these princes: And the regent perfuaded Philip to give in marriage to Richemont his eldest sister, widow of the deceased dauphin, Lewis, the elder brother of Charles. Thus Arthur was connected both with the regent and the duke of Burgundy, and feemed engaged by interest to profecute the fame object, in forwarding the

fuocess of the English arms.

WHILE the vigilance of the duke of Bedford was employed in gaining or confirming these allies, whose vicinity rendered them so important, he did not overlook the state of more remote countries. The duke of Albany, regent of Scotland, had died; and his power had devolved on Murdac, his fon, a prince of a weak understanding and indolent disposition; who, far from possessing the talents requifite for the government of that fierce people, was not even able to maintain authority in his own family, or restrain the petulance and insolence of his fons. The ardour of the Scots to ferve in France, where Charles treated them with great honour and distinction, and where the regent's brother enjoyed the dignity of constable, broke out afresh under this feeble administration: New succours daily came over, and filled the armies of the French king: The earl of Douglas conducted a reinforcement of 5000 men to his assistance: And it was justly to be dreaded that the Scots, by commencing open hostilities in the north, would occasion a diversion still more considerable of the English power, and would ease Charles, in part, of that load by which he was at prefent fo grievously oppressed. The duke of Bedford, therefore, perfuaded the English council to form an alliance with Tames their prisoner; to free that prince from his long captivity; and to connect him with England by marrying him to a daughter of the earl of Somerfet and cousin of the young king. As the Scottish

c Hall, fol. 86. Stowe, p. 364. Grafton, p. 501.

regent, tired of his present dignity, which he was C II A P. not able to support, was now become entirely fincere in his applications for James's liberty; the treaty was foon concluded; a ranfom of forty thousand pounds was stipulated ; and the king of Scots was restored to the throne of his ancestors, and proved, in his short reign, one of the most illustrious princes that had ever governed that kingdom. He was murdered, in 1437, by his traiterous kinfman the earl of Athole. His affections inclined to the fide of France; but the English had never reason, during his life-time, to complain of any breach of the neutrality by Scotland.

Bur the regent was not fo much employed in Military these political negociations as to neglect the opera- operations

tions of war, from which alone he could hope to fucceed in expelling the French monarch. Though the chief feat of Charles's power lay in the fouthern provinces beyond the Loire; his partifans were poffessed of some fortresses in the northern, and even in the neighbourhood of Paris; and it behoved the duke of Bedford first to clear these countries from the enemy, before he could think of attempting more distant conquests. The castle of Dorsoy was taken, after a fiege of fix weeks: That of Novelle and the town of Rue in Picardy underwent the fame fate: Pont sur Seine, Vertus, Montaigu, were subjected by the English arms: And a more considerable advantage was foon after gained by the united forces of England and Burgundy. John Stuart, constable of Scotland, and the lord of Estissac, had formed the fiege of Crevant in Burgundy: The earls of Salisbury and Suffolk, with the count of Toulongeon, were fent to its relief: A fierce and well-disputed action ensued: The Scots and French were defeated: The constable of Scotland, and the count of Ventadour, were taken prisoners: And above a thousand men, among whom was fir

f Rymer, vol. x. p. 299, 300. 326. VOL. III.

William

1423-

CHAP. William Hamilton, were left on the field of battle 4. The taking of Gaillon upon the Seine, and of la Charite upon the Loire, was the fruit of this victory: And as this latter place opened an entrance into the fouthern provinces, the acquifition of it appeared on that account of the greater importance to the duke of Bedford, and feemed to promife a fuccessful iffue to the war.

1424.

THE more Charles was threatened with an invafron in those provinces which adhered to him, the more necessary it became that he should retain posfession of every fortress which he still held within the quarters of the enemy. The duke of Bedford had befreged in person, during the space of three months, the town of Yvri in Normandy; and the brave governor, unable to make any longer defence, was obliged to capitulate; and he agreed to furrender the town, if, before a certain term, no relief arrived. Charles, informed of these conditions, determined to make an attempt for faving the place. He collected, with fome difficulty, an army of 14,000 men, of whom one half were Scots; and he fent them thither under the command of the earl of Buchan, constable of France; who was attended by the earl of Douglas his countryman, the duke of Alençon, the mareschal de la Fayette, the count of Aumale, and the viscount of Narbonne. When the constable arrived within a few leagues of Yvri, he found that he was come too late, and that the place was already furrendered. He immediately turned to the left, and fat down before Verneuil, which the inhabitants, in spite of the garrison, delivered up to him b. Buchan might now have returned in fafety, and with the glory of making an acquisition no less important than the place which he was fent to relieve: But hearing of Bedford's approach, he called

2 Hall, fol. 85. Monstrelet, vol. ii. p. 2. Hollingshed, p. 586. Graften, p. 500. h Monstrelet, vol. ii. p. 14. Grafton, p. 504.

a council of war, in order to deliberate concerning C H A P. the conduct which he should hold in this emergence. The wifer part of the council declared for a retreat; and represented, that all the past misfortunes of the French had proceeded from their rafhness in giving battle when no necessity obliged them; that this army was the last resource of the king, and the only defence of the few provinces which remained to him; and that every reason invited him to embrace cautious measures, which might leave time for his fubjects to return to a fense of their duty, and give leifure for discord to arise among his enemies, who, being united by no common band of interest or motive of alliance, could not long perfevere in their animofity against him. All these prudential considerations were overborne by a vain point of honour not to turn their backs to the enemy; and they resolved to await the arrival of the duke of Bedford.

Vernüil.

THE numbers were nearly equal in this action; 27th Aug. and as the long continuance of war had introduced Battle of discipline, which however imperfect, sufficed to maintain fome appearance of order in fuch fmall armies, the battle was fierce, and well disputed, and attended with bloodshed on both sides. The constable drew up his forces under the walls of Verneuil, and resolved to abide the attack of the enemy: But the impatience of the viscount of Narbonne, who advanced precipitately, and obliged the whole line to follow him in some hurry and confusion, was the cause of the misfortune which ensued. The English archers, fixing their palifadoes before them, according to their usual custom, sent a volley of arrows amidst the thickest of the French army; and though beaten from their ground, and obliged to take shelter among the baggage, they foon rallied, and continued to do great execution upon the enemy. The duke of Bedford, meanwhile, at the head of the men at arms, made impression on the French, broke their K 2

CHAP. their ranks, chased them off the field, and rendered the victory entirely complete and decifive. The constable himself perished in battle, as well as the earl of Douglas and his fon, the counts of Aumale, Tonnerre, and Ventadour, with many other confiderable nobility. The duke of Alençon, the mareschal de la Fayette, the lords of Gaucour and Mortemar, were taken prisoners. There fell about four thousand of the French, and sixteen hundred of the English; a loss esteemed, at that time, so unufual on the fide of the victors, that the duke of Bedford forbad all rejoicings for his fuccefs. neuil was furrendered next day by capitulation k.

THE condition of the king of France now appeared very terrible, and almost desperate. He had lost the flower of his army and the bravest of his nobles in this fatal action: He had no resource either for recruiting or fubfifting his troops: He wanted money even for his personal subfishence; and though all parade of a court was banished, it was with difficulty he could keep a table, supplied with the plainest necessaries, for himself and his few followers: Every day brought him intelligence of some loss or misfortune: Towns which were bravely defended were obliged at last to surrender for want of relief or fupply: He faw his partifans entirely chafed from all the provinces which lay north of the Loire: And he expected foon to lofe, by the united efforts of his enemies, all the territories of which he had hitherto continued master; when an incident happened which faved him on the brink of ruin, and lost the English such an opportunity for completing their conquests as they never afterwards were able to recal.

JAQUELINE, countess of Hainault and Holland, and heir of these provinces, had espoused John duke

i Hall, fol. 88, 89, 90. Monstrelet, vol. ii. p. 15. Stowe, p. 365. Mollingshed, p. 588. | Monstrelet, vol. ii. p. 15.

1424-

of Brabant, coufin-german to the duke of Burgun- CHAP. dy; but having made this choice from the usual motives of princes, the foon found reason to repent of the unequal alliance. She was a princels of a masculine spirit and uncommon understanding; the duke of Brabant was of a fickly complexion and weak mind: She was in the vigour of her age; he had only reached his fifteenth year: These causes had inspired her with such contempt for her husband, which foon proceeded to antipathy, that she determined to dissolve a marriage, where, it is probable, nothing but the ceremony had as yet intervened. The court of Rome was commonly very open to applications of this nature, when feconded by power and money; but, as the princess foresaw great opposition from her husband's relations, and was impatient to effect her purpose, she made her escape into England, and threw herself under the protection of the duke of Glocester. That prince, with many noble qualities, had the defect of being governed by an impetuous temper and vehement passions; and he was rashly induced, as well by the charms of the countess herself, as by the prospect of possessing her rich inheritance, to offer himself to her as a husband. Without waiting for a papal difpensation; without endeavouring to reconcile the duke of Burgundy to the measure, he entered into a contract of marriage with Jaqueline, and immediately attempted to put himself in possession of her dominions. Philip was disgusted with so precipitate a conduct: He refented the injury done to the duke of Brabant, his near relation: He dreaded to have the English established on all sides of him: And he forefaw the confequences which must attend the extensive and uncontrolled dominion of that nation. if, before the full fettlement of their power, they infulted and injured an ally, to whom they had already been fo much indebted, and who was still so necesfary for supporting them in their farther progress. He encouraged, therefore, the duke of Brabant to K 3 make

CHAP. make refistance: He engaged many of Jaqueline's fubjects to adhere to that prince: He himself marched troops to his support: And as the duke of Glocester still persevered in his purpose, a sharp war was fuddenly kindled in the low countries quarrel foon became perfonal as well as political. The English prince wrote to the duke of Burgundy, complaining of the opposition made to his pretensions; and though, in the main, he employed amicable terms in his letter, he took notice of some falfehoods into which, he faid, Philip had been betraved during the course of these transactions. This unguarded expression was highly resented: The duke of Burgundy infifted that he should retract it: And mutual challenges and defiances passed between them on this occasion 1.

THE duke of Bedford could eafily foresee the bad effects of so ill-timed and imprudent a quarrel. All the fuccours which he expected from England, and which were fo necessary in this critical emergence, were intercepted by his brother, and employed in Holland and Hainault: The forces of the duke of Burgundy, which he also depended on, were diverted by the fame wars: And, besides this double loss, he was in imminent danger of alienating, for ever, that confederate, whose friendship was of the utmost importance, and whom the late king had enjoined him, with his dying breath, to gratify by every mark of regard and attachment. He represented all these topics to the duke of Glocester: He endeavoured to mitigate the refentment of the duke of Burgundy: He interposed with his good offices between these princes: But was not successful in any of his endeavours; and he found that the impetuofity of his brother's temper was still the chief obstacle to all accommodation m. For this reason, instead of pushing the victory gained at Verneuil, he

| Monstrelet, vol. ii. p. 19, 20, 21.

m Monstrelet, p. 18.

found himself obliged to take a journey into Eng- CHAP. land, and to try, by his counsels and authority, to moderate the measures of the duke of Glocoster.

1425

THERE had likewife broken out fome differences among the English ministry, which had proceeded to great extremities, and which required the regent's presence to compose them ". The bishop of Winchefter, to whom the care of the king's person and education had been entrusted, was a prelate of great capacity and experience, but of an intriguing and dangerous character; and as he aspired to the government of affairs, he had continual disputes with his nephew the protector; and he gained frequent advantages over the vehement and impolitic temper of that prince. The duke of Bedford employed the authority of parliament to reconcile them; and these rivals were obliged to promise, before that affembly, that they would bury all quar-rels in oblivion. Time also feemed to open expedients for composing the difference with the duke of Burgundy. The credit of that prince had procured a bull from the pope; by which not only Jaqueline's contract with the duke of Glocester was annulled; but it was also declared, that even in case of the duke of Brabant's death, it should never be lawful for her to espouse the English prince. Humphrey, despairing of success, married another lady of inferior rank, who had lived fome time with him as his mistress P. The duke of Brabant died; and his widow, before the could recover poffession of her dominion's, was obliged to declare the duke of Burgundy her heir, in case she should die without issue, and to promise never to marry without his confent. But though the affair was thus terminated to the fatisfaction of Philip, it left a difagreeable

n Stowe, p. 368. Hollingshed, p. 590. • Hall, fol 98, 98:. Hollingshed, p. 593, 594. Polydore Virgil, p. 466. Grafton, P Stowe, p. 357. P. 512. 519.

CHAP. impression on his mind: It excited an extreme jealoufy of the English, and opened his eyes to his true interests: And as nothing but his animosity against Charles had engaged him in alliance with them, it counterbalanced that passion by another of the fame kind, which, in the end, became prevalent, and brought him back, by degrees, to his natural connexions with his family and his native

country.

ABOUT the fame time the duke of Britanny began to withdraw himself from the English alliance. His brother, the count of Richemont, though connected by marriage with the dukes of Burgundy and Bedford, was extremely attached by inclination to the French interest; and he willingly hearkened to all the advances which Charles made him for obtaining his friendship. The staff of constable, vacant by the earl of Buchan's death, was offered him; and, as his martial and ambitious temper afpired to the command of armies, which he had in vain attempted to obtain from the duke of Bedford, he not only accepted that office, but brought over his brother to an alliance with the French monarch. The new constable, having made this one change in his measures, firmly adhered, ever after, to his engagements with France. Though his pride and violence, which would admit of no rival in his master's confidence, and even prompted him to asfassinate his other favourites, had so much disgusted Charles, that he once banished him the court, and refused to admit him to his presence, he still acted with vigour for the fervice of that monarch, and obtained, at last, by his perseverance, the pardon of all past offences.

In this fituation the duke of Bedford, on his return, found the affairs of France, after passing eight months in England. The duke of Burgundy was much difgusted. The duke of Britanny had entered into engagements with Charles, and had

done

8426.

done homage to that prince for his dutchy. The CHAP. French had been allowed to recover from the aftonishment into which their frequent disasters had thrown them. An incident too had happened, which ferved extremely to raife their courage. The earl of Warwic had befieged Montargis with a fmall army of three thousand men, and the place was reduced. to extremity, when the bastard of Orleans undertook to throw relief into it. This general, who was natural fon to the prince affaffinated by the duke of Burgundy, and who was afterwards created count of Dunois, conducted a body of fixteen hundred men to Montargis; and made an attack on the enemy's trenches with fo much valour, prudence, and good fortune, that he not only penetrated into the place, but gave a fevere blow to the English, and obliged Warwic to raise the siege q. This was the first fignal action that raised the same of Dunois, and opened him the road to those great honours which he afterwards attained.

But the regent, foon after his arrival, revived the reputation of the English arms, by an important enterprife which he happily atchieved. He fecretly brought together, in separate detachments, a considerable army to the frontiers of Britanny; and fell so unexpectedly upon that province, that the duke, unable to make refistance, yielded to all the terms required of him: He renounced the French alliance; he engaged to maintain the treaty of Troye; he acknowledged the duke of Bedford for regent of France; and promifed to do homage for his dutchy to king Henry'. And the English prince, having thus freed himself from a dangerous enemy who lay behind him, refolved on an undertaking which, if fuccessful, would, he hoped, cast the balance between the two nations, and prepare the way for the final conquest of France.

Monstrelet, vol. ii. p. 35, 36.

<sup>9</sup> Monstrelet, vol. ii. p. 32, 33. Hollingshed, p. 597.

C H A P-XX. 1428 Siege of Orleans.

THE city of Orleans was fo fituated between the provinces commanded by Henry, and those possessed by Charles, that it opened an eafy entrance to either: and as the duke of Bedford intended to make a great effort for penetrating into the fouth of France, it behoved him to begin with this place, which, in the present circumitances, was become the most important in the kingdom. He committed the conduct of the enterprise to the earl of Salisbury, who had newly brought him a reinforcement of fix thousand men from England, and who had much distinguished himself, by his abilities, during the course of the present war. Salisbury, passing the Loire, made himself master of several small places, which surrounded Orleans on that fide '; and as his intentions were thereby known, the French king used every expedient to supply the city with a garrison and provisions, and enable it to maintain a long and obstinate fiege. The lord of Gaucour, a brave and experienced captain, was appointed governor: Many Officers of distinction threw themselves into the place: The troops which they conducted were enured to war, and were determined to make the most obstinate resistance: And even the inhabitants, disciplined by the long continuance of hostilities, were well qualified, in their own defence, to second the efforts of the most veteran forces. The eyes of all Europe were turned towards this scene; where, it was reasonably supposed, the French were to make their last stand for maintaining the independence of their monarchy. and the rights of their fovereign.

The earl of Salisbury at last approached the place with an army, which consisted only of ten thousand men; and not being able, with so small a force, to invest so great a city, that commanded a bridge over the Loire, he stationed himself on the southern side towards Sologne, leaving the other, towards the

<sup>5</sup> Monstrelet, vol. ii. p. 38, 39. Polyd. Virg. p. 468.

Beausse, still open to the enemy. He there attacked CHAP. the fortifications which guarded the entrance to the bridge; and, after an obstinate refistance, he carried feveral of them: But was himfelf killed by a cannon ball as he was taking a view of the enemy. The earl of Suffolk flicceeded to the command; and being reinforced with great numbers of English and Burgundians, he passed the river with the main body of his army, and invested Orleans on the other side. As it was now the depth of winter, Suffolk, who found it difficult in that feafon to throw up entrenchments all around, contented himself, for the present, with erecting redoubts at different distances, where his men were lodged in fafety, and were ready to intercept the fupplies which the enemy might attempt to throw into the place. Though he had feveral pieces of artillery in his camp (and this is among the first fieges in Europe where cannon were found to be of importance), the art of engineering was hitherto fo imperfect, that Suffolk trusted more to famine than to force for fubduing the city; and he purposed in the spring to render the circumvallation more complete, by drawing intrenchments from one redoubt to another. Numberless feats of valour were performed both by the befiegers and befieged during the winter: Bold fallies were made, and repulsed with equal boldness: Convoys were sometimes introduced and often intercepted: The supplies were still unequal to the confumption of the place: And

vancing towards the completion of their enterprise. BUT while Suffolk lay in this fituation, the French parties ravaged all the country around; and the befiegers, who were obliged to draw their provisions from a distance, were themselves exposed to the danger of want and famine. Sir John Fastolffe was bringing up a large convoy of every kind of stores,

the English seemed daily, though slowly, to be ad-

1429.

Hall, fol. 105. Monstrelet, vol. ii. p. 39. Stowe, p. 369. Hollingshed, p. 599, Grafton, p. 531.

which

CHAP, which he escorted with a detachment of two thousand five hundred men; when he was attacked by a body of four thousand French, under the command of the counts of Clermont and Dunois, Fastolffe drew up his troops behind the waggons; but the French generals, afraid of attacking him in that posture, planted a battery of cannon against him, which threw every thing into confusion, and would have infured them the victory, had not the impatience of some Scottish troops, who broke the line of battle, brought on an engagement, in which Fastolsse was victorious. The count of Dunois was wounded; and about five hundred French were left on the field of battle. This action, which was of great importance in the prefent conjuncture, was commonly called the battle of Herrings; because the convoy brought a great quantity of that kind of provisions, for the use of the English army during the Lent season ".

CHARLES feemed now to have but one expedient for faving this city, which had been fo long invelted. The duke of Orleans, who was still prisoner in England, prevailed on the protector and the council to confent that all his demefnes should be allowed to preserve a neutrality during the war, and should be fequestered, for greater security, into the hands of the duke of Burgundy. This prince, who was much less cordial in the English interests than formerly, went to Paris, and made the proposal to the duke of Bedford; but the regent coldly replied, That he was not of a humour to beat the bushes while others ran away with the game: An answer which fo difgusted the duke, that he recalled all the troops of Burgundy that acted in the fiege w. The place however was every day more and more closely invested by the English: Great scarcity began already

u Hall, fol. 106. Monstrelet, vol. ii. p. 41, 42. Stowe, p. 369. Hollingshed, p. 600. Polyd. Virg. p. 469. Grafton, p. 532.

w Hall, fol. 106. Monstrelet, vol. ii. p. 42. Stowe, p 369. Grafton, p. 533.

to be felt by the garrison and inhabitants: Charles, CHAP. in despair of collecting an army which should dare, to approach the enemy's entrenchments, not only gave the city for loft, but began to entertain a very difmal prospect with regard to the general state of his affairs. He faw that the country, in which he had hitherto, with great difficulty, subfisted, would be laid entirely open to the invafion of a powerful and victorious enemy; and he already entertained thoughts of retiring with the remains of his forces into Languedoc and Dauphiny, and defending himfelf as long as possible in those remote provinces. But it was fortunate for this good prince, that, as he lay under the dominion of the fair, the women, whom he confulted, had the spirit to support his finking refolution in this desperate extremity. Mary of Anjou, his queen, a princess of great merit and prudence, vehemently opposed this measure, which, the forefaw, would discourage all his partisans, and ferve as a general fignal for deferting a prince who feemed himself to despair of success. His mistress too, the fair Agnes Sorel, who lived in entire amity with the queen, fcconded all her remonstrances, and threatened that, if he thus pufillanimoufly threw away the sceptre of France, she would seek in the court of England a fortune more correspondent to her wishes. Love was able to rouse in the breast of Charles that courage which ambition had failed to excite: He refolved to dispute every inch of ground with an imperious enemy; and rather to perish with honour in the midst of his friends, than yield ingloriously to his bad fortune: When relief was unexpectedly brought him by another female of a very different character, who gave rife to one of the most singular revolutions that is to be met with in history.

In the village of Domremi near Vaucouleurs, on The maid the borders of Lorraine, there lived a country girl of Orof twenty-seven years of age, called Joan d'Arc,

CHAP, who was fervant in a fmall inn, and who in that station had been accustomed to tend the horses of the guests, to ride them without a saddle to the watering-place, and to perform other offices, which, in well-frequented inns, commonly fall to the share of the men-fervants x. This girl was of an irreproachable life, and had not hitherto been remarked for any fingularity; whether that she had met with no occasion to excite her genius, or that the unskilful eves of those who conversed with her, had not been able to difcern her uncommon merit. It is easy to imagine, that the present situation of France was an interesting object even to persons of the lowest rank, and would become the frequent fubject of conversation: A young prince expelled his throne by the fedition of native subjects, and by the arms of strangers, could not fail to move the compassion of all his people whose hearts were uncorrupted by faction; and the peculiar character of Charles, fo strongly inclined to friendship, and the tender passions, naturally rendered him the hero of that fex whose generous minds know no bounds in The fiege of Orleans, the protheir affections. gress of the English before that place, the great distress of the garrison and inhabitants, the importance of faving this city and its brave defenders, had turned thither the public eye; and Joan, inflamed by the general fentiment, was feized with a wild desire of bringing relief to her sovereign in his present distresses. Her unexperienced mind, working day and night on this favourite object, mistook the impulses of passion for heavenly inspirations; and she fancied that she saw visions, and heard voices, exhorting her to re-establish the throne of France, and to expel the foreign invaders. An uncommon intrepidity of temper made her overlook all the dangers which might attend her in

<sup>\*</sup> Hall, fol. 107. Monstrelet, vol. ii. p. 42. Grafton, p. 534. 8 fuch

fuch a path; and thinking herfelf destined by CHAP. Heaven to this office, she threw aside all that bashfulness and timidity so natural to her sex, her years, and her low flation. She went to Vaucouleurs; procured admission to Baudricourt the governor; informed him of her inspirations and intentions; and conjured him not to neglect the voice of God, who spoke through her, but to second those heavenly revelations which impelled her to this glorious enterprife. Baudricourt treated her at first with some neglect; but on her frequent returns to him, and importunate folicitations, he began to remark fomething extraordinary in the maid, and was inclined, at all hazards, to make fo eafy an experiment. It is uncertain whether this gentleman had discernment enough to perceive that great use might be made with the vulgar of fo uncommon an engine; or, what is more likely, in that credulous age, was himself a convert to this visionary: But he adopted at last the schemes of Joan; and he gave her fome attendants, who conducted her to the French court, which at that time resided at Chinon.

It is the business of history to distinguish between the miraculous and the marvellous; to reject the first in all narrations merely profane and human; to doubt the fecond; and when obliged by unquestionable testimony, as in the present case, to admit of something extraordinary, to receive as little of it as is confistent with the known facts and circumstances. It is pretended, that Joan, immediately on her admission, knew the king, though she had never seen his face before, and though he purposely kept himself in the crowd of courtiers, and had laid afide every thing in his drefs and apparel which might diffinguish him: That she offered him, in the name of the supreme Creator, to raise the siege of Orleans, and conduct him to Rheims to be there crowned and anointed:

and

CHAP. XX.

and on his expressing doubts of her mission, revealed to him, before some sworn confidents, a secret, which was unknown to all the world befide himself, and which nothing but a heavenly inspiration could have discovered to her: And that she demanded, as the instrument of her future victories, a particular fword which was kept in the church of St. Catharine of Fierbois, and which, though she had never feen it, she described by all its marks. and by the place in which it had long lain neglected y. This is certain, that all these miraculous stories were spread abroad, in order to captivate the vulgar. The more the king and his ministers were determined to give into the illusion, the more scruples they pretended. An affembly of grave doctors and theologians cautiously examined Joan's mission, and pronounced it undoubted and supernatural. She was fent to the parliament, then refiding at Poictiers; and was interrogated before that affembly: The prefidents, the counfellors, who came perfuaded of her imposture, went away convinced of her inspiration. A ray of hope began to break through that despair in which the minds of all men were before enveloped. Heaven had now declared itself in favour of France, and had laid bare its outstretched arm to take vengeance on her invaders. Few could distinguish between the impulse of inclination and the force of conviction; and none would submit to the trouble of so disagreeable a fcrutiny.

AFTER these artificial precautions and preparations had been for some time employed, Joan's requests were at last complied with: She was armed cap-a-pee, mounted on horseback, and shown in that martial habiliment before the whole people. Her dexterity in managing her steed, though acquired in her former occupation, was regarded as

a fresh proof of her mission; and she was received C HAP. with the loudest acclamations by the spectators. Her former occupation was even denied: She was no longer the fervant of an inn: She was converted into a shepherdess, an employment much more agreeable to the imagination. To render her still more interesting, near ten years were substracted from her age; and all the fentiments of love and of chivalry were thus united to those of enthusiasin, in order to inflame the fond fancy of the people with preposeessions in her favour.

WHEN the engine was thus dreffed up in full splendour, it was determined to essay its force against the enemy. Joan was fent to Blois, where a large convoy was prepared for the supply of Orleans, and an army of ten thousand men, under the command of St. Severe, affembled to efcort it. She ordered all the foldiers to confess themselves before they set out on the enterprise: She banished from the camp all women of bad fame: She displayed in her hands a confecrated banner; where the Supreme Being was reprefented grasping the globe of earth, and furrounded with flower de luces: And she insisted, in right of her prophetic mission, that the convoy should enter Orleans by the direct road from the fide of Beausse: But the count of Dunois, unwilling to fubmit the rules of the military art to her inspirations, ordered it to approach by the other fide of the river, where, he knew, the weakest part of the English army was stationed.

Previous to this attempt, the maid had written to the regent, and to the English generals before Orleans, commanding them, in the name of the omnipotent Creator, by whom she was commisfioned, immediately to raife the fiege, and to evacuate France; and menacing them with divine vengeance in case of their disobedience. All the English affected to speak with derision of the maid, and of her heavenly commission; and said, that

VOL. III. the

CHAP, the French king was now indeed reduced to a forry pass when he had recourse to such ridiculous expedients: But they felt their imagination fecretly struck with the vehement perfuasion which prevailed in all around them; and they waited with an anxious expectation, not unmixed with horror, for the issue of these extraordinary preparations.

As the convoy approached the river, a fally was made by the garrison on the fide of Beausse, to prevent the English general from fend-29thApril. ing any detachment to the other fide: The provisions were peaceably embarked in boats, which the inhabitants of Orleans had fent to receive them: The maid covered with her troops the embarkation: Suffolk did not venture to attack her: And the French general carried back the army in fafety to Blois; an alteration of affairs which was already visible to all the world, and which had a proportional effect on the minds of both parties.

THE maid entered the city of Orleans arrayed in her military garb, and displaying her confecrated flandard; and was received as a celeftial deliverer by all the inhabitants. They now believed themfelves invincible under her influence; and Dunois himself, perceiving such a mighty alteration both in friends and foes, confented that the next convoy, which was expected in a few days, should enter by the fide of Beausse. The convoy approached: No fign of refistance appeared in the befiegers: The waggons and troops passed without interruption between the redoubts of the English: A dead silence and aftonishment reigned among those troops, formerly fo elated with victory, and fo fierce for the combat.

4th May.

THE earl of Suffolk was in a fituation very unufual and extraordinary, and which might well confound the man of the greatest capacity and firmest temper. He faw his troops overawed, and strongly impressed with the idea of a divine influence.

accom-

accompanying the maid. Instead of banishing these CHAPvain terrors by hurry, and action, and war, he waited till the foldiers should recover from the panic; and he thereby gave leifure for those prepossessions to fink still deeper into their minds. The military maxims which are prudent in common cases, deceived him in these unaccountable events. The English felt their courage daunted and overwhelmed; and thence inferred a divine vengeance hanging over them. The French drew the fame inference from an inactivity fo new and unexpected. Every circumstance was now reversed in the opinions of men, on which all depends: The spirit resulting from a long course of uninterrupted fuccess was on a sudden transferred from the victors to the vanquished.

THE maid called aloud, that the garrifon should remain no longer on the defensive; and she promifed her followers the affiltance of heaven in attacking those redoubts of the enemy which had fo long kept them in awe, and which they had never hitherto dared to infult. The generals feconded her ardour: An attack was made on one redoubt, and it proved fuccessful\*: All the English who defended the entrenchments were put to the fword, or taken prisoners: And Sir John Talbot himself, who had drawn together, from the other redoubts, some troops to bring them relief, durst not appear in the open field against so formidable

Nothing, after this fuccess, feemed impossible to the maid and her enthusiastic votaries. She urged the generals to attack the main body of the English in their entrenchments: But Dunois, still unwilling to hazard the fate of France by too great temerity, and fensible that the least reverse of fortune would make all the prefent visions eva-

an enemy.

CHAP. porate, and restore every thing to its former condition, checked her vehemence, and proposed to her first to expel the enemy from their forts on the other fide of the river, and thus lay the communication with the country entirely open, before the attempted any more hazardous enterprise. Joan was perfuaded, and thefe forts were vigorously affailed. In one attack the French were repulfed; the maid was left almost alone; she was obliged to retreat, and join the runaways; but displaying her facred standard, and animating them with her countenance, her gestures, her exhortations, she led them back to the charge, and overpowered the English in their entrenchments. In the attack of another fort, she was wounded in the neck with an arrow; she retreated a moment behind the asfailants; she pulled out the arrow with her own hands; she had the wound quickly dressed; and the haltened back to head the troops, and to plant her victorious banner on the ramparts of the enemy.

By all these successes, the English were entirely chased from their fortifications on that side: They had lost above fix thousand men in these different actions; and, what was still more important, their wonted courage and confidence was wholly gone, and had given place to amazement and despair. The maid returned triumphant over the bridge, and was again received as the guardian angel of the city. After performing fuch miracles, she convinced the most obdurate incredulity of her divine mission: Men felt themselves animated as by a fuperior energy, and thought nothing impossible to that divine hand which fo visibly conducted them. It was in vain even for the English generals to oppose with their foldiers the prevailing opinion of supernatural influence: They themselves were probably moved by the fame belief: The utmost they dared to advance was, that Joan was not an instru-

ment

ment of God; she was only the implement of the CHAP. Devil: But as the English had felt, to their sad XX. experience, that the Devil might be allowed fometimes to prevail, they derived not much confolation

from the enforcing of this opinion.

IT might prove extremely dangerous for Suffolk, The fiege with fuch intimidated troops, to remain any longer of Orleans in the prefence of fo courageous and victorious an 8th May. enemy; he therefore raifed the fiege, and retreated with all the precaution imaginable. The French refolved to push their conquests, and to allow the English no leisure to recover from their consternation. Charles formed a body of fix thousand men, and fent them to attack Jergeau, whether Suffolk had retired with a detachment of his army. The fiege lasted ten days; and the place was obstinately defended. Joan displayed her wonted intrepidity on the occasion. She descended into the fossee in leading the attack; and she there received a blow on the head with a stone, by which she was confounded and beaten to the ground: But she soon recovered herfelf; and in the end rendered the affault fuccessful: Suffolk was obliged to yield himself prisoner to a Frenchman called Renaud: but, before he fubmitted, he asked his adversary, whether he were a gentleman? On receiving a fatisfactory answer, he demanded, whether he were a knight? Renaud replied, that he had not yet attained that honour. Then I make you one, replied Suffolk: Upon which he gave him the blow with his fword, which dubbed him into that fraternity; and he immediately furrendered himself his prifoner.

THE remainder of the English army was commanded by Fastolffe, Scales, and Talbot, who thought of nothing but of making their retreat, as foon as possible, into a place of safety; while the French esteemed the overtaking them equivalent to a victory. So much had the events which paffed

CHAP. before Orleans altered every thing between the two nations! Thewanguard of the French, under Richemont and Xaintrailles, attacked the rear of the 18th June, enemy at the village of Patay. The battle lasted not a moment: The English were discomsited, and fled: The brave Fastolsfe himself showed the example of flight to his troops; and the order of the garter was taken from him, as a punishment for this instance of cowardice b. Two thousand men were killed in this action, and both Talbot and Scales taken prisoners.

> In the account of all these successes, the French writers, to magnify the wonder, represent the maid (who was now known by the appellation of the Maid of Orleans) as not only active in combat, but as performing the office of general; directing the troops, conducting the military operations, and fwaying the deliberations in all councils of war. It is certain, that the policy of the French court endeavoured to maintain this appearance with the public: But it is much more probable, that Dunois and the wifer commanders prompted her in all her measures, than that a country girl, without experience or education, could, on a fudden, become expert in a profession which requires more genius and capacity than any other active scene of life. It is sufficient praise that fhe could diftinguish the persons on whose judgment fhe might rely; that she could seize their hints and fuggestions, and, on a sudden, deliver their opinions as her own; and that she could curb, on occasion, that visionary and enthusiastic spirit with which she

> THE raising of the siege of Orleans was one part of the maid's promise to Charles: The crowning of him at Rheims was the other: And she now vehemently infitted that he should forthwith set out on

> was actuated, and could temper it with prudence and

discretion.

that enterprise. A few weeks before, such a proposal C HAP. would have appeared the most extravagant in the world. Rheims lay in a distant quarter of the kingdom; was then in the hands of a victorious enemy; the whole road which led to it was occupied by their garrisons; and no man could be so fanguine as to imagine that fuch an attempt could fo foon come within the bounds of possibility. But as it was extremely the interest of Charles to maintain the belief of fomething extraordinary and divine in these events, and to avail himself of the present consternation of the English, he resolved to follow the exhortations of his warlike prophetess, and to lead his army upon this promifing adventure. Hitherto he had kept remote from the scene of war: As the safety of thestate depended upon his person, he had been perfuaded to restrain his military ardour: But observing this prosperous turn of affairs, he now determined to appear at the head of his armies, and to fet the example of valour to all his foldiers. And the French nobility faw at once their young fovereign affuming a new and more brilliant character, feconded by fortune and conducted by the hand of heaven; and they caught fresh zeal to exert themselves in replacing him on the throne of his ancestors.

CHARLES fet out for Rheims at the head of twelve The king thousand men: He passed by Troye, which opened of France its gates to him: Chalons imitated the example: Rheims. Rheims fent him a deputation with its keys, before his approach to it: And he fcarcely perceived, as he passed along, that he was marching through an enemy's country. The ceremony of his coronation was here performed with the holy oil, which a 17th July, pigeon had brought to king Clovis from heaven on the first establishment of the French monarchy: The maid of Orleans stood by his side in complete armour, and displayed her facred banner, which had

CHAP. fo often diffipated and confounded his fiercest ener mies: And the people shouted with the most unfeigned joy on viewing fuch a complication of wonders. After the completion of the ceremony, the maid threw herfelf at the king's feet, embraced his knees, and with a flood of tears, which pleafure and tenderness extorted from her, she congratulated him

on this fingular and marvellous event.

CHARLES, thus crowned and anointed, become more respectable in the eyes of all his subjects, and feemed, in a manner, to receive anew, from a heavenly commission, his title to their allegiance. inclinations of men fwaying their belief, no one doubted of the inspirations and prophetic spirit of the maid: So many incidents, which passed all human comprehension, left little room to question a fuperior influence: And the real and undoubted facts brought credit to every exaggeration. which could fcarcely be rendered more wonderful. Laon, Soiffons, Chateau-Thierri, Provins, and many other towns and fortresses in that neighbourhood, immediately after Charles's coronation, submitted to him on the first summons; and the whole nation was disposed to give him the most zealous testimonies of their duty and affection.

Prudence of the duke of Bed ford.

Northing can impress us with a higher idea of the wisdom, address, and resolution of the duke of Bed, ford, than his being able to maintain himself in so perilous a figuation, and to preferve fome footing in France, after the defection of so many places, and amidst the universal inclination of the rest to imitate that contagious example. This prince feemed prefent every where by his vigilance and forefight: He employed every resource which fortune had yet left him: He put all the English garrisons in a posture of defence: He kept a watchful eye over every attempt among the French towards an insurrection: He retained the Parisians in obedience, by alternately employing careffes and feverity: And know-

ing

ing that the duke of Burgundy was already waver- CHAP. ing in his fidelity, he acted with fo much skill and prudence, as to renew, in this dangerous crifis, his alliance with that prince; an alliance of the utmost importance to the credit and support of the English

1429.

government. THE fmall fupplies which he received from England fet the talents of this great man in a still stronger light. The ardour of the English for foreign conquests was now extremely abated by time and reflection: The parliament feems even to have become fensible of the danger which might attend their farther progress: No supply of money could be obtained by the regent during his greatest distresses: And men enlisted flowly under his standard, or foon deferted, by reason of the wonderful accounts which had reached England, of the magic, and forcery, and diabolical power of the maid of Orleans d. It happened fortunately, in this emergency, that the bishop of Winchester, now created a cardinal, landed at Calais with a body of five thousand men, which he was conducting into Bohemia, on a crufade against the Hussites. He was perfuaded to lend these troops to his nephew during the prefent difficulties e; and the regent was thereby enabled to take the field, and to oppose the French king, who was advancing with his army to the gates of Paris.

THE extraordinary capacity of the duke of Bedford appeared also in his military operations. He attempted to restore the courage of his troops by boldly advancing to the face of the enemy; but he chose his posts with so much caution, as always to decline a combat, and to render it impossible for Charles to attack him. He still attended that prince in all his movements; covered his own towns and garrisons; and kept himself in a posture to reap advantage from every imprudence or false step of the

<sup>&</sup>amp; Rymer, vol. x. p. 459, 472.

<sup>\*</sup> Ibid. vol. x. p. 421.

C HAP. enemy. The French army, which confifted mostly of volunteers, who ferved at their own expence, foon after retired, and was disbanded: Charles went to Bourges, the ordinary place of his refidence; but not till he made himself master of Compiegne, Beauvais, Senlis, Sens, Laval, Lagni, St. Denis, and of many places in the neighbourhood of Paris, which the affections of the people had put into his hands.

THE regent endeavoured to revive the declining state of his affairs by bringing over the young king of England, and having him crowned and anointed at Paris f. All the vassals of the crown who lived within the provinces possessed by the English, swore a new allegiance, and did homage to him. But this ceremony was cold and infipid, compared with the luftre which had attended the coronation of Charles at Rheims; and the duke of Bedford expected more effect from an accident, which put into his hands the person that had been the author of all his calamities.

THE maid of Orleans, after the coronation of Charles, declared to the count of Dunois, that her wishes were now fully gratified, and that she had no farther defire than to return to her former condition and to the occupation and course of life which became her fex: But that nobleman, fenfible of the great advantages, which might still be reaped from her presence in the army, exhorted her to persevere, till, by the final expulsion of the English, she had brought all her prophecies to their full completion. In pursuance of this advice, she threw herself into the town of Compiegne, which was at that time befieged by the duke of Burgundy, affifted by the earls of Arundel and Suffolk; and the garrison, on her appearance, believed themselves thenceforth invincible. But their joy was of short duration. The

24th May. maid, next day after her arrival, headed a fally upon

the quarters of John of Luxembourg; fhe twice CHAP. drove the enemy from their entrenchments; finding their numbers to increase every moment, she ordered a retreat; when hard pressed by the pursuers, she turned upon them, and made them again recoil; but being here deferted by her friends, and furrounded by the enemy, she was at last, after exerting the utmost valour, taken prisoner by the Burgundians 8. The common opinion was, that the French officers, finding the merit of every victory ascribed to her, had, in envy to her renown, by which they themselves were so much eclipsed, wil-

lingly exposed her to this fatal accident.

THE envy of her friends, on this occasion, was not a greater proof of her merit than the triumph of her enemies. A complete victory would not have given more joy to the English and their partisans. The fervice of Te Deum, which has so often been profaned by princes, was publicly celebrated, on this fortunate event, at Paris. The duke of Bedford fancied, that, by the captivity of that extraordinary woman, who had blafted all his fucceffes, he should again recover his former afcendant over France; and, to push farther the present advantage, he purchased the captive from John of Luxembourg, and formed a profecution against her, which, whether it proceeded from vengeance or policy, was equally barbarous and dishonourable.

THERE was no possible reason, why Joan should not be regarded as a prisoner of war, and be entitled to all the courtefy and good ufage, which civilized nations practife towards enemies on these occasions. She had never, in her military capacity, forfeited, by any act of treachery or cruelty, her claim to that treatment: She was unstained by any civil crime: Even the virtues and the very decorums of her fex had ever been rigidly observed by her: And though

1431#

\$431.

CHAP. her appearing in war, and leading armies to battle. may feem an exception, she had thereby performed fuch fignal fervice to her prince, that she had abundantly compensated for this irregularity; and was, on that very account, the more an object of praise and admiration. It was necessary, therefore, for the duke of Bedford to interest religion some way in the profecution; and to cover, under that cloak, his

violation of justice and humanity.

THE bishop of Beauvais, a man wholly devoted to the English Interests, presented a petition against Joan, on pretence that she was taken within the bounds of his diocese; and he desired to have her tried by an ecclefiaftical court for forcery, impiety, idolatry, and magic: The university of Paris was so mean as to join in the fame request: Several prelates, among whom the cardinal of Winchester was the only Englishman, were appointed her judges: They held their court in Rouen, where the young king of England then refided: And the maid, cloathed in her former military apparel, but loaded with irons,

was produced before this tribunal.

. SHE first desired to be eased of her chains: Her judges answered, that she had once already attempted an escape, by throwing herself from a tower: She confessed the fact, maintained the justice of her intention, and owned that, if she could, she would still execute that purpose. All her other speeches shewed the same firmness and intrepidity: Though haraffed with interrogatories during the course of near four months, she never betrayed any weakness or womanish submission; and no advantage was gained over her. The point, which her judges pushed most vehemently, was her visions and revelations, and intercourse with departed faints; and they asked her, whether she would submit to the church the truth of these inspirations: She replied, that she would submit them to God, the fountain of truth. They then exclaimed, that she was a here-

tic,

tic, and denied the authority of the church. She ap- C II A P.

pealed to the pope: They rejected her appeal.

C II Λ P. XX.

THEY asked her, why she put trust in her standard, which had been confecrated by magical incantations: She replied, that she put trust in the Supreme Being alone, whose image was impressed upon it. They demanded, why she carried in her hand that standard at the anointment and coronation of Charles at Rheims: She answered, that the person who had shared the danger, was entitled to share the glory. When accused of going to war, contrary to the decorums of her fex, and of affuming government and command over men; she fcrupled not to reply, that her fole purpose was to defeat the English, and to expel them the Kingdom. In the issue, she was condemned for all the crimes of which she had been accused, aggravated by herefy; her revelations were declared to be inventions of the devil to delude the people; and she was fentenced to be delivered over to the fecular arm.

JOAN, fo long furrounded by inveterate enemies, who treated her with every mark of contumely; brow-beaten and overawed by men of superior rank, and men invested with the ensigns of a facred character, which she had been accustomed to revere. felt her spirit at last subdued; and those visionary dreams of inspiration, in which she had been buoyed up by the triumphs of fuccess and the applauses of her own party, gave way to the terrors of that punishment to which she was sentenced. She publickly declared herself willing to recant; she acknowledged the illusion of those revelations which the church had rejected; and she promised never more to maintain them. Her fentence was then mitigated: She was condemned to perpetual imprisonment, and to be fed during life on bread and water.

ENOUGH was now done to fulfil all political views, and to convince both the French and the English, that the opinion of divine influence, which had so

CHAP. much encouraged the one and daunted the other, was entirely without foundation. But the barbarous vengeance of Joan's enemies was not fatisfied with this victory. Suspecting, that the female dress, which she had now consented to wear, was disagreeable to her, they purpofely placed in her apartment a fuit of men's apparel; and watched for the effects of that temptation upon her. On the fight of a dress in which she had acquired so much renown, and which, the once believed, the wore by the particular appointment of heaven, all her former ideas and passions revived; and she ventured in her solitude to clothe herself again in the forbidden garment. Her infidious enemies caught her in that fituation: Her fault was interpreted to be no less than a relapse into herefy: No recantation would now fuffice, and no pardon could be granted her. She was condemned to be burned in the marketplace of Rouen; and the infamous fentence was accordingly executed. This admirable heroine, to whom the more generous superstition of the ancients would have erected altars, was, on pretence of herefy and magic, delivered over alive to the flames, and expiated, by that dreadful punishment, the fignal fervices which she had rendered to her prince and to her native country.

Execution of the Maid of Orleans, 14th June.

-8432a

THE affairs of the English, far from being advanced by this execution, went every day more and more to decay: The great abilities of the regent were unable to refift the strong inclination, which had feized the French, to return under the obedience of their rightful fovereign, and which that act of cruelty was ill fitted to remove. Chartres was furprifed by a stratagem of the count of Dunois: A body of the English, under lord Willoughby, was defeated at St. Celerin upon the Sarte h: The fair in the suburbs of Caën, seated in the midst of the

English territories, was pillaged by de Lore, a CHAP. French officer: The duke of Bedford himself was obliged by Dunois to raife the fiege of Lagni, with fome loss of reputation: And all these misfortunes. though light, yet being continued and uninterrupted, brought discredit on the English, and menaced them with an approaching revolution. But the chief detriment which the regent fustained, was by the death of his duchefs, who had hitherto preferved fome appearance of friendship between him and her brother, the duke of Burgundy i: And his marriage foon afterwards, with Jaqueline of Luxembourg, was the beginning of a breach between them k. Philip complained, that the regent had never had the civility to inform him of his intentions, and that fo sudden a marriage was a slight on his sister's me-The cardinal of Winchester mediated a reconciliation between these princes, and brought both of them to St. Omer's for that purpose. The duke of Bedford here expected the first visit, both as he was fon, brother, and uncle to a king, and because he had already made fuch advances as to come into the duke of Burgundy's territories, in order to have an interview with him: But Philip, proud of his great power and independent dominions, refused to pay this compliment to the regent: And the two princes, unable to adjust the ceremonial, parted without feeing each other! A bad prognostic of their cordial intentions to renew past amity!

Northing could be more repugnant to the in- Defection terests of the house of Burgundy, than to unite the of the duke Burgundy. crowns of France and England on the same head; an event which, had it taken place, would have reduced the duke to the rank of a petty prince, and have rendered his fituation entirely dependant and precarious. The title also to the crown of France,

1 Monstrelet, vol. ii. p. 90. Grafton, p. 561.

Monstrelet, vol. ii. p. 87. k Stowe, p. 373. Grafton. p. 554 --

C H A P. which, after the failure of the elder branches, might accrue to the duke or his posterity, had been facrificed by the treaty of Trove; and strangers and enemies where thereby irrevocably fixed upon the throne. Revenge alone had carried Philip into these impolitic measures; and a point of honour had hitherto induced him to maintain them. But as it is the nature of passion gradually to decay, while the sense of interest maintains a permanent influence and authority; the duke had, for some years, appeared sensibly to relent in his animofity against Charles, and to hearken willingly to the apologies made by that prince for the murder of the late duke of Burgundy. His extreme youth was pleaded in his favour; his incapacity to judge for himself; the ascendant gained over him by his ministers; and his inability to refent a deed, which, without his knowledge, had been perpetrated by those under whose guidance he was then placed. The more to flatter the pride of Philip, the king of France had banished from his court and presence Tanegui de Chatel, and all those who were concerned in that affaffination: and had offered to make every other atonement which could be required of him. The diffress which Charles had already fuffered, had tended to gratify the duke's revenge; the miseries, to which France had been fo long exposed, had begun to move his compassion; and the cries of all Europe admonished him, that his refentment, which might hitherto be deemed pious, would, if carried farther, be univerfally condemned as barbarous and unrelenting. While the duke was in this disposition, every disgust which he received from England, made a double impression upon him; the entreaties of the count of Richemont and the duke of Bourbon, who had married his two fifters, had weight; and he finally determined to unite himself to the royal family of France, from which his own was descended. For this purpose, a congress was appointed at Arras under

¥435.

der the mediation of deputies from the pope and the CHAP. council of Basse: The duke of Burgundy came thither in person: The duke of Bourbon, the count of Richemont, and other persons of high rank, appeared as ambaffadors from France: And the English having also been invited to attend, the cardinal of Winchester, the bishops of Norwich and St. David's, the earls of Huntingdon and Suffolk, with others, received from the protector and council a commission for that purpose m.

1435.

THE conferences were held in the abbey of August. St. Vaast; and began with discussing the proposals of the two crowns, which were fo wide of each other as to admit of no hopes of accommodation. France offered to cede Normandy with Guienne, but both of them loaded with the usual homage and vasfalage to the crown. As the claims of England upon France were univerfally unpopular in Europe, the mediators declared the offers of Charles very reasonable; and the cardinal of Winchester, with the other English ambassadors, without giving a particular detail of their demands, immediately left the congress. There remained nothing but to discuss the mutual pretentions of Charles and Philip. These were eafily adjusted: The vasfal was in a situation to give law to his fuperior; and he exacted conditions, which, had it not been for the present necessity, would have been deemed, to the last degree, difhonourable and difadvantageous to the crown of France. Besides making repeated atonements and acknowledgments for the murder of the duke of Burgundy, Charles was obliged to cede all the towns of Picardy which lay between the Somme and the Low Countries; he yielded feveral other territories; he agreed, that these and all the other dominions of Philip should be held by him, during his life, without doing any homage, or swearing fealty to the preXX. 1435.

CHAP, fent king; and he freed his subjects from all obligations to allegiance, if ever he infringed this treaty n. Such were the conditions upon which France purchased the friendship of the duke of Burgundy.

THE duke fent a herald to England with a letter, in which he notified the conclusion of the treaty of Arras, and apologifed for his departure from that of Trove. The council received the herald with great coldness: They even assigned him his lodgings in a shoemaker's house, by way of insult; and the populace were fo incenfed, that, if the duke of Glocester had not given him guards, his life had been exposed to danger, when he appeared in the streets. The Flemings, and other subjects of Philip, were infulted, and fome of them murdered by the Londoners; and every thing feemed to tend towards a rupture between the two nations °. These violences were not difagreeable to the duke of Burgundy; as they afforded him a pretence for the farther measures which he intended to take against the English, whom he now regarded as implacable and dangerous enemies.

14th Sept. Death of the duke of Bed. ford.

A FEW days after the duke of Bedford received intelligence of this treaty, fo fatal to the interests of England, he died at Rouen; a prince of great abilities, and of many virtues; and whose memory, except from the barbarous execution of the Maid of Orleans, was unfullied by any confiderable blemish. Isabella, queen of France, died a little before him, despised by the English, detested by the French. and reduced in her later years to regard, with an unnatural horror, the progress and successes of her own fon, in recovering pollession of his kingdom. This period was also fignalized by the death of the earl of Arundel P, a great English general, who,

though

n Monstrelet, vol. ii. p. 112. Grafton, p. 565. o Monstrelet, vol. ii. p. 120. Hollingshed, p. 612. P Monstrelet. vol. ii. p. 105. Hollingshed, p. 610.

though he commanded three thousand men, was CHAP. foiled by Xaintrailles at the head of fix hundred, and foon after expired of the wounds which he received in the action.

1436.

THE violent factions, which prevailed between the duke of Glocester and the cardinal of Winchester, prevented the English from taking the proper measures for repairing these multiplied losses, and threw all their affairs into confusion. The popularity of the duke, and his near relation to the crown, gave him advantages in the contest, which he often loft by his open and unguarded temper, unfit to fruggle with the politic and interested spirit of his rival. The balance, meanwhile, of thefe parties kept every thing in fuspense: Foreign affairs were much neglected: And though the duke of York, fon to that earl of Cambridge who was executed in the beginning of the last reign, was appointed succeffor to the duke of Bedford, it was feven months before his commission passed the seals; and the English remained fo long in an enemy's country without a proper head or governor.

THE new governor, on his arrival, found the ca- Decline of pital already loft. The Parifians had always been the English in France. more attached to the Burgundian than to the English interest; and after the conclusion of the treaty of Arras, their affections, without any farther control, univerfally led them to return to their allegiance under their native sovereign. The constable, together with Lile-Adam, the same person who had before put Paris into the hands of the duke of Burgundy, was introduced in the night-time by intelligence with the citizens: Lord Willoughby, who commanded only a finall garrison of 1500 men, was expelled: This nobleman discovered valour and prefence of mind on the occasion; but unable to guard fo large a place against such multitudes, he retired into the Bastile, and being there invested, he delivered up that fortress, and was contented to stipu-

M 2

C H A P. late for the safe retreat of his troops into Nor-

1436.

In the same season the duke of Burgundy openly took part against England, and commenced hoftilities by the fiege of Calais, the only place which now gave the English any sure hold of France, and still rendered them dangerous. As he was beloved among his own fubjects, and had acquired the epithet of Good, from his popular qualities, he was able to interest all the inhabitants of the Low Countries in the fuccess of this enterprise; and he invested that place with an army, formidable from its numbers, but without experience, discipline, or military spirit . On the first alarm of this siege, the duke of Glocester assembled some forces, sent a defiance to Philip, and challenged him to wait the event of a battle, which he promifed to give, as foon as the wind would permit him to reach Calais. The warlike genius of the English had at that time rendered them terrible to all the northern parts of Europe; especially to the Flemings, who were more expert in manufactures than in arms; and the duke of Burgundy, being already foiled in some attempts before Calais, and observing the discontent and terror of his own army, thought proper to raife the fiege, and to retreat before the arrival of the enemy's.

26th June.

THE English were still masters of many fine provinces in France; but retained possession, more by the extreme weakness of Charles, than by the strength of their own garrisons, or the force of their armies. Nothing indeed can be more surprising than the feeble efforts made, during the course of several years, by these two potent nations against each other; while the one struggled for independence, and the other aspired to a total conquest of its

rival.

<sup>9</sup> Monstrelet, vol. ii. p. 127. Grafton, p. 568.

r Monstrelet, vol. ii. p. 126. 130. 132. Hollingshed, p. 613. Grafton, p. 571.

Monstrelet, vol. ii. p. 136. Hollingshed, p. 614.

rival. The general want of industry, commerce, CHAP. and police, in that age, had rendered all the European nations, and France and England no less than the others, unfit for bearing the burthens of war, when it was prolonged beyond one feafon; and the continuance of hostilities had, long ere this time, exhausted the force and patience of both kingdoms. Scarcely could the appearance of an army be brought into the field on either fide; and all the operations confifted in the furprifal of places, in the rencounter of detached parties, and in incursions upon the open country; which were performed by fmall bodies, affembled on a fudden from the neighbouring garrisons. In this method of conducting the war, the French king had much the advantage: The affections of the people were entirely on his fide: Intelligence was early brought him of the state and motions of the enemy: The inhabitants were ready to join in any attempts against the garrisons: And thus ground was continually, though flowly, gained upon the English. The duke of York, who was a prince of abilities, struggled against these difficulties during the course of five years; and being affifted by the valour of lord Talbot, foon after created earl of Shrewsbury, he performed actions which acquired him honour, but merit not the attention of posterity. It would have been well, had this feeble war, in sparing the blood of the people. prevented likewise all other oppressions; and had the fury of men, which reason and justice cannot restrain, thus happily received a check from their impotence and inability. But the French and English, though they exerted such small force. were, however, stretching beyond their resources, which were still smaller; and the troops, destitute of pay, were obliged to subfift by plundering and oppressing the country, both of friends and enemies. The fields in all the north of France, which

1436.

I440.



CHAP. was the feat of war, were laid waste and left uncultivated t. The cities were gradually depopulated, not by the blood spilt in battle, but by the more destructive pillage of the garrisons ": And both parties, weary of hostilities which decided nothing, feemed at last desirous of peace, and they fet on foot negociations for that purpose. But the propofals of France, and the demands of England, were still fo wide of each other, that all hope of accommodation immediately vanished. The English ambassadors demanded restitution of all the provinces which had once been annexed to England, together with the final cession of Calais and its district; and required the possession of these extensive territories without the burthen of any fealty or homage on the part of their prince: The French offered only part of Guienne, part of Normandy, and Calais, loaded with the usual burdens. peared in vain to continue the negociation, while there was fo little prospect of agreement. The English were still too haughty to stoop from the vast hopes which they had formerly entertained, and to accept of terms more fuitable to the present condition of the two kingdoms.

THE duke of York foon after refigned his government to the earl of Warwic, a nobleman of reputation, whom death prevented from long enjoying this dignity. The duke, upon the demise of that nobleman, returned to his charge, and during his administration, a truce was concluded between the king of England and the duke of Burgundy, which had become necessary for the commercial interests of

t Grafton, p. 562.

u Fortescue, who soon after this period visited France in the train of prince Henry, speaks of that kingdom, as a defert in comparison of England. See his treatife de laudibus Anglia. Though we make allowance for the partialities of Fortescue, there must have been some foundation for his account; and these destructive wars are the most likely reason to be assigned for the difference remarked by this author.

their subjects \*. The war with France continued in C HAP.

the same languid and feeble state as before.

THE captivity of five princes of the blood, taken prisoners in the battle of Azincour, was a confiderable advantage which England long enjoyed over its enemy; but this fuperiority was now entirely loft. Some of these princes had died; some had been ransomed; and the duke of Orleans, the most powerful among them, was the last that remained in the hands of the English. He offered the sum of 54,000 nobles y for his liberty; and when this proposal was laid before the council of England, as every question was there an object of faction, the party of the duke of Glocester, and that of the cardinal of Winchester, were divided in their sentiments with regard to it. The duke reminded the council of the dying advice of the late king, that none of these prisoners should on any account be releafed, till his fon should be of sufficient age to hold, himself, the reins of government. The cardinal infifted on the greatness of the sum offered, which, in reality, was near equal to two-thirds of all the extraordinary fupplies that the parliament, during the course of seven years, granted for the support of the war. And he added, that the release of this prince was more likely to be advantageous than prejudicial to the English interests; by filling the court of France with faction, and giving a head to those numerous malcontents whom Charles was at prefent able, with great difficulty, to restrain. The cardinal's party, as usual, prevailed: The duke of Orleans was released, after a melancholy captivity of twenty-five years 2: And the duke of Burgundy,

<sup>\*</sup> Grafton, p. 573. 

Y Rymer, vol. x. p. 764. 776. 782.

795, 796. This fum was equal to 36,000 pounds sterling of our present money. A subsidy of a tenth and sistenth was fixed by Edward III. at 29,000 pounds, which, in the reign of Henry VI. made only 58,000 pounds of our present money. The parliament granted only one subsidy during the course of seven years, from 1437 to 1444.

2 Grafton, p. 578.

CHAP. as a pledge of his entire reconciliation with the family of Orleans, facilitated to that prince the payment of his ranfom. It must be confessed, that the princes and nobility, in those ages, went to war on very difadvantageous terms. If they were taken prisoners, they either remained in captivity during life, or purchased their liberty at the price which the victors were pleafed to impose, and which often reduced their families to want and beggary.

1443.

THE fentiments of the cardinal, some time after. prevailed in another point of still greater moment. That prelate had always encouraged every propofal of accommodation with France; and had represented the utter impossibility, in the present circumstances, of pushing farther the conquests in that kingdom, and the great difficulty of even maintaining those that were already made. He insisted on the extreme reluctance of the parliament to grant supplies; the disorders in which the English affairs in Normandy were involved; the daily progress made by the French king; and the advantage of stopping his hand by a temporary accommodation, which might leave room for time and accidents to operate in favour of the English. The duke of Glocester, high-spirited and haughty, and educated in the lofty pretentions which the first successes of his two brothers had rendered familiar to him, could not yet be induced to relinquish all hopes of prevailing over France; much less could he see, with patience, his own opinion thwarted and rejected by the influence of his rival in the English council. But, notwithstanding his opposition, the earl of Suffolk, a nobleman who adhered to the cardinal's party, was dispatched to Tours, in order to negociate with the French ministers. It was found impossible to adjust the terms of a lasting peace; but a truce for twenty-two months was concluded, which left every thing on the prefent footing between the parties. The numerous disorders under which 5

28th May. Truce with France.

which the French government laboured, and which CHAP. time alone could remedy, induced Charles to affent to this truce; and the fame motives engaged him afterwards to prolong it a. But Suffolk, not content with executing this object of his commission, proceeded also to finish another business; which feems rather to have beem implied than expressed in

the powers that had been granted him b.

In proportion as Henry advanced in years, his character became fully known in the court, and was no longer ambiguous to either faction. Of the most harmless, inoffensive, simple manners; but of the most slender capacity; he was fitted, both by the foftness of his temper, and the weakness of his understanding, to be perpetually governed by those who furrounded him; and it was eafy to forefee that his reign would prove a perpetual minority. As he had now reached the twenty-third year of his age, it was natural to think of choosing him a queen; and each party was ambitious of having him receive one from their hand; as it was probable that this circumstance would decide, for ever, the victory between them. The duke of Glocester proposed a daughter of the count of Armagnac; but had not credit to effect his purpose. The cardinal and his friends had cast their eye on Margaret of Anjou, daughter of Regnier, titular king of Sicily, Naples, and Jerusalem, descended from the count of Anjou, brother of Charles V. who had left these magnificent titles, but without any real power or poffessions, to his posterity. This princess herself was the most accomplished of her age both in body and mind; and feemed to possess those qualities which would equally qualify her to acquire the afcendant over Henry, and to supply all his defects and weaknesses. Of a masculine, courageous spirit, of an enterprising temper, endowed

<sup>2</sup> Rymer, vol. xi. p. 101. 103. 206. 214.

CHAP.

1443.

Marriage of the king with Mar garet of Anjou.

with folidity as well as vivacity of understanding. fhe had not been able to conceal these great talents even in the privacy of her father's family; and it was reasonable to expect, that when she should mount the throne, they would break out with still superior lustre. The earl of Suffolk, therefore, in concert with his affociates of the English council. made propofals of marriage to Margaret, which were accepted. But this nobleman, besides preoccupying the princess's favour, by being the chief means of her advancement, endeavoured to ingratiate himself with her and her family, by very extraordinary concessions: Though Margaret brought no dowry with her, he ventured, of himself, without any direct authority from the council, but probably with the approbation of the cardinal and the ruling members, to engage, by a fecret article, that the province of Maine, which was at that time in the hands of the English, should be ceded to Charles of Anjou, her uncle ', who was prime minister and favourite of the French king, and who had already received from his master the grant of that province as his appanage.

THE treaty of marriage was ratified in England: Suffolk obtained first the title of marguis, then that of duke; and even received the thanks of parliament for his fervices in concluding it d. The princess fell immediately into close connexions with the cardinal and his party, the dukes of Somerfet, Suffolk, and Buckingham e; who, fortified by her powerful patronage, refolved on the final ruin of the duke of

Glocester.

3447.

This generous prince, worsted in all court intrigues, for which his temper was not fuited; but possessing, in a high degree, the favour of the public, had already received from his rivals a cruel mortifi-

c Grafton, p. 590.

e Hollingshed, p. 626.

d Cotton, p. 630.

cation, which he had hitherto borne without violating CHAP. public peace, but which it was impossible that a per-Ion of his spirit and humanity could ever forgive. His duchels, the daughter of Reginald, lord Cobham, had been accused of the crime of witchcraft. and it was pretended that there was found in her possession a waxen figure of the king, which she and her affociates, fir Roger Bolingbroke a prieft, and one Margery Jordan of Eye, melted in a magical manner before a flow fire, with an intention of making Henry's force and vigour waste away by like infensible degrees. The accusation was well calculated to affect the weak and credulous mind of the king, and to gain belief in an ignorant age; and the duchefs was brought to trial with her confederates. The nature of this crime, fo opposite to all common fense, seems always to exempt the accufers from observing the rules of common sense in their evidence: The prisoners were pronounced guilty; the duchefs was condemned to do public penance, and to fuffer perpetual imprisonment; the others were executed '. But, as these violent proceedings were afcribed folely to the malice of the duke's enemies, the people, contrary to their usual practice in fuch marvellous trials, acquitted the unhappy fufferers; and encreased their esteem and affection towards a prince, who was thus exposed. without protection, to those mortal injuries.

THESE fentiments of the public made the cardinal of Winchester and his party sensible that it was necessary to destroy a man whose popularity might become dangerous, and whose resentment they had fo much cause to apprehend. In order to effect their purpose, a parliament was summoned to meet, not at London, which was supposed to be too well

f Stowe, p. 381. Hollingshed, p. 622. Grafton, p. 587.

1447. 28th Feb. Murder of the duke of Glocefter.

C H A P. affected to the duke, but at St. Edmondsbury, where they expected that he would lie entirely at their mercy. As foon as he appeared, he was accused of treason, and thrown into prison. He was soon after found dead in his bed 5; and though it was pretended that his death was natural, and though his body, which was exposed to public view, bore no marks of outward violence, no one doubted but he had fallen a victim to the vengeance of his enemies. An artifice, formerly practifed in the case of Edward II. Richard II. and Thomas of Woodstock, duke of Glocester, could deceive nobody. The reason of this affaffination of the duke feems not, that the ruling party apprehended his acquittal in parliament on account of his innocence, which, in fuch times, was feldom much regarded; but that they imagined his public trial and execution would have been more invidious than his private murder, which they pretended to deny. Some gentlemen of his retinue were afterwards tried as accomplices in his treasons, and were condemned to be hanged, drawn, and quartered. They were hanged and cut down; but just as the executioner was proceeding to quarter them, their pardon was produced, and they were recovered to life h. The most barbarous kind of mercy that can possibly be imagined!

> This prince is faid to have received a better education than was usual in his age, to have founded one of the first public libraries in England, and to have been a great patron of learned men. Among other advantages which he reaped from this turn of mind, it tended much to cure him of credulity; of which the following instance is given by fir Thomas More. There was a man who pretended, that, though he was born blind, he had recovered his fight

1447-

by touching the shrine of St. Albans. The duke, CHAP. happening foon after to pass that way, questioned the man, and, feeming to doubt of his fight, asked him the colours of feveral cloaks, worn by persons of his retinue. The man told them very readily. are a knave, cried the prince; had you been born blind, you could not fo foon have learned to distinguish colours: And immediately ordered him to be fet in

the stocks as an impostor i. THE cardinal of Winchester died fix weeks after his nephew, whose murder was univerfally ascribed to him as well as to the duke of Suffolk, and which. it is faid, gave him more remorfe in his last moments, than could naturally be expected from a man hardended, during the course of a long life, in falsehood

and in politics. What share the queen had in this guilt, is uncertain; her usual activity and spirit made the public conclude, with some reason, that the duke's enemies durst not have ventured on such a deed without her privity. But there happened, foon after, an event of which she and her favourite, the duke of Suffolk, bore incontellibly the whole odium.

THAT article of the marriage treaty, by which the province of Maine was to be ceded to Charles of Anjou, the queen's uncle, had probably been hitherto kept fecret; and, during the lifetime of the duke of Glocester, it might have been dangerous to venture on the execution of it. But, as the court of France strenuously insisted on performance, orders were now dispatched, under Henry's hand, to Sir Francis Surienne, governor of Mans, commanding him to furrender that place to Charles of Anjou. Surienne, either questioning the authenticity of the order, or regarding his government as his fole fortune, refused compliance; and it became necessary

3448.

CHAP. for a French army, under the count of Dunois, to lay fiege to the city. The governor made as good a defence as his fituation could permit; but, receiving no relief from Edmund duke of Somerset, who was at that time governor of Normandy, he was at last obliged to capitulate, and to furrender not only Mans, but all the other fortresses of that province, which was thus entirely alienated from the crown of

England.

THE bad effects of this measure stopped not here. Surienne, at the head of all his garrisons, amounting to two thousand five hundred men, retired into Normandy, in expectation of being taken into pay, and of being quartered in some towns of that province. But Somerset, who had no means of subsisting such a multitude, and who was probably incenfed at Surienne's disobedience, refused to admit him; and this adventurer, not daring to commit depredations on the territories either of the king of France or of England, marched into Britanny, feized the town of Fougeres, repaired the fortifications of Pontorson and St. James de Beuvron, and subsisted his troops by the rayages which he exercised on that whole province k. The duke of Britanny complained of this violence to the king of France, his liege lord: Charles remonstrated with the duke of Somerset: That nobleman replied, that the injury was done without his privity, and that he had no authority over Surienne and his companions 1. Though this anfwer ought to have appeared fatisfactory to Charles, who had often felt feverely the licentious, independent spirit of such mercenary foldiers, he never would admit of the apology. He still insisted that these plunderers should be recalled, and that reparation

k Monstrelet, vol. iii. p. 6.

<sup>1</sup> Monstrelet, vol. iii. p. 7. Hollingshed, p. 629.

should be made to the duke of Britanny for all the CHAP. damages which he had fultained: And, in order to render an accommodation absolutely impracticable, he made the estimation of damages amount to no less a sum than 1,600,000 crowns. He was sensible of the fuperiority which the prefent state of his affairs gave him over England; and he determined to take advantage of it.

1448.

No fooner was the truce concluded between the State of two kingdoms, than Charles employed himfelf, France. with great industry and judgment, in repairing those numberless ills to which France, from the continuance of wars both foreign and domestic, had to long been exposed. He restored the course of public justice; he introduced order into the finances; he established discipline in his troops; he repressed faction in his court; he revived the languid state of agriculture and the arts; and, in the course of a few vears, he rendered his kingdom flourishing within itself, and formidable to its neighbours. Meanwhile, affairs in England had taken a very different turn. The court was divided into parties, which were enraged against each other: The people were discontented with the government: Conquests in France, which were an object more of glory than of interest, were overlooked amidst domestic incidents, which engroffed the attention of all men: The governor of Normandy, ill supplied with money, was obliged to difinifs the greater part of his troops, and to allow the fortifications of the towns and castles to become ruinous: And the nobility and people of that province had, during the late open communication with France, enjoyed frequent opportunities of renewing connexions with their ancient master, and of concerting the means for expelling the English. The occasion, therefore, seemed favourable to Charles for breaking the truce. Normandy was at once invaded by four powerful armies;

T449. Renewal of the war with France.

CHAP. one commanded by the king himself; a second by the duke of Britanny; a third by the duke of Alençon; and a fourth by the count of Dunois. The places opened their gates almost as foon as the French appeared before them: Verneüil, Nogent, Chateau Gaillard, Ponteau de Mer, Gifors, Mante. Vernon, Argentan, Lifieux, Fecamp, Coutances, Belesme, Pont de l'Arche, fell in an instant into the hands of the enemy. The duke of Somerset, fo far from having an army which could take the field, and relieve these places, was not able to supply them with the necessary garrisons and provisions. He retired, with the few troops of which he was master, into Rouen; and thought it fufficient, if, till the arrival of fuccours from England, he could fave that capital from the general fate of the province. The king of France, at the head of a formidable army, fifty thousand strong, presented himself before the gates: The dangerous example of revolt had infected the inhabitants; and they called aloud for a capitulation. Somerfet, unable to refift, at once. both the enemies within and from without, retired with his garrison into the palace and castle, which, being places not tenable, he was obliged to furrender: He purchased a retreat to Harsleur by the payment of 56,000 crowns, by engaging to furrender Arques, Tancarville, Caudebec, Honfleur, and other places in the higher Normandy, and by delivering hostages for the performance of articles m. The governor of Honfleur refused to obey his orders; upon which the earl of Shrewsbury, who was one of the hostages, was detained prisoner; and the English were thus deprived of the only general capable of recovering them from their prefent diftreffed fituation. Harfleur made a better defence under fir Thomas Curfon the governor; but was

4th Nov.

m Monstrelet, vol. iii. p. 21. Grafton, p. 643.

finally

14500

finally obliged to open its gates to Dunois. Suc- C HAP. cours at last appeared from England under fir Thomas Kyriel, and landed at Cherbourgh: But these came very late, amounted only to 4000 men, and were foon after put to rout at Fourmigni by the count of Clermont". This battle, or rather skirmish, was the only action fought by the English for the defence of their dominions in France, which they had purchased at such an expence of blood and treasure. Somerset, shut up in Caën without any prospect of relief, found it necessary to capitulate: Falaise opened its gates, on condition that the earl of Shrewsbury should be restored to liberty: And Cherbourgh, the last place of Normandy which remained in the hands of the English, being delivered up, the conquest of that important province was finished in a twelvemonth by Charles, to the great joy of the inhabitants and of his whole kingdom °.

A LIKE rapid fuccess attended the French arms in Guienne; though the inhabitants of that province were, from long custom, better inclined to the English government. Dunois was dispatched thither, and met with no refistance in the field, and very little from the towns. Great improvements The English had been made, during this age, in the structure ed France. and management of artillery, and none in fortification; and the art of defence was by that means more unequal, than either before or fince, to the art of attack. After all the small places about Bourdeaux were reduced, that city agreed to fubmit, if not relieved by a certain time; and as no one in England thought feriously of these distant concerns, no relief appeared; the place furrendered; and Bayonne being taken foon after, this whole province, which had remained united to

n Hollingshed, p. 631.

· Grafton, p. 646.

Vol. III.

N

England

CHAP 1450.

England fince the accession of Henry II. was, after a period of three centuries, finally swallowed up in

the French monarchy.

Though no peace or truce was concluded between France and England, the war was, in a manner, at an end. The English, torn in pieces by the civil diffensions which ensued, made but one fceble effort more for the recovery of Guienne: And Charles, occupied at home in regulating the government, and fencing against the intrigues of his factious fon, Lewis the Dauphin, scarcely ever attempted to invade them in their island, or to retaliate upon them, by availing himself of their intestine confusions.

## CHAP. XXI.

## HENRY VI.

Claim of the duke of York to the crown-The earl of Warwic - Impeachment of the duke of Suffolk - His banishment and death Popular infurrection - The parties of York and Lancaster -First armament of the duke of York-First Battle of St. Albans-Battle of Blore-heath -of Northampton-A parliament - Battle of Wakefield -- Death of the duke of York-Battle of Mortimer's Cross-Second Battle of St. Albans -- Edward IV. assumes the crown - Miscellaneous transactions of this reign.

WEAK prince, feated on the throne of Eng. CHAP. land, had never failed, how gentle foever and innocent, to be infested with faction, discontent, rebellion, and civil commotions; and as the incapacity of Henry appeared every day in a fuller light, these dangerous consequences began, from past experience, to be univerfally and justly apprehended. Men also of unquiet spirits, no longer employed in foreign wars, whence they were now excluded by the fituation of the neighbouring states, were the more likely to excite intestine disorders, and, by their emulation, rivalship, and animosities, to tear the bowels of their native country. But though these causes alone were sufficient to breed confusion, there concurred another circumstance of the most dangerous nature: A pretender to the crown appeared: The title itself of the weak prince, who enjoyed the name of fovereignty, was dif-N 2 puted:

1450.

~ 1450.

CHAP. puted: And the English were now to pay the fevere, though late, penalty of their turbulence under Richard II. and of their levity in violating, without any necessity or just reason, the lineal succession of their monarchs.

Claim of the duke of York to the crown.

ALL the males of the house of Mortimer were extinct; but Anne, the fifter of the last earl of Marche, having espoused the earl of Cambridge, beheaded in the reign of Henry V. had transmitted her latent, but not yet forgotten, claim to her fon, Richard duke of York. This prince, thus defcended by his mother from Philippa, only daughter of the duke of Clarence, fecond fon of Edward III. flood plainly in the order of fuccession before the king, who derived his defcent from the duke of Lancaster, third son of that monarch; and that claim could not, in many respects, have fallen into more dangerous hands than those of the duke of York. Richard was a man of valour and abilities, of a prudent conduct and mild dispositions: He had enjoyed an opportunity of displaying these virtues in his government of France: And though recalled from that command by the intrigues and fuperior interest of the duke of Somerset, he had been sent to suppress a rebellion in Ireland; had succeeded much better in that enterprise than his rival in the defence of Normandy; and had even been able to attach to his person and family the whole Irish nation, whom he was fent to fubdue". In the right of his father, he bore the rank of first prince of the blood; and by this station he gave a lustre to his title derived from the family of Mortimer, which, though of great nobility, was equalled by other families in the kingdom, and had been eclipfed by the royal descent of the house of Lancaster. He possessed an immense fortune from the union of so many successions, those of Cambridge and York on the one

hand, with those of Mortimer on the other: Which C II A P. XXI. last inheritance had before been augmented by an union of the estates of Clarence and Ulster with the patrimonial possessions of the family of Marche. The alliances too of Richard, by his marrying the daughter of Ralph Nevil earl of Westmoreland, had widely extended his interest among the nobility. and had procured him many connexions in that formidable order.

THE family of Nevil was, perhaps, at this time the most potent, both from their opulent possessions. and from the characters of the men, that has ever appeared in England. For, besides the earl of Westmoreland, and the lords Latimer, Fauconberg, and Abergavenny; the earls of Salisbury and Warwic were of that family, and were of themfelves, on many accounts, the greatest noblemen in the kingdom. The earl of Salifbury, brother-inlaw to the duke of York, was the eldest fon by a fecond marriage of the earl of Westmoreland; and inherited by his wife, daughter and heir of Montacute earl of Salifbury, killed before Orleans, the possessions and title of that great family. fon, Richard, had married Anne, the daughter and heir of Beauchamp earl of Warwic, who died governor of France; and by this alliance he enjoyed the possessions, and had acquired the title, of that other family, one of the most opulent, most ancient, and most illustrious in England. The personal qualities also of these two earls, especially of Warwic, enhanced the splendour of their nobility, and increafed their influence over the people. This latter nobleman, commonly known, from the subsequent events, by the appellation of the King-maker, had distinguished himself by his gallantry in the field, by the hospitality of his table, by the magnificence, and still more by the generofity of his expence, and by the spirited and bold manner which attended him in all his actions. The undefigning frankness

N 3

C H'A P. and openness of his character rendered his conquest over men's affections the more certain and infallible: His prefents were regarded as fure testimonies of esteem and friendship; and his professions as the overflowings of his genuine fentiments. No less than 30,000 persons are said to have daily lived at his board in the different manors and castles which he possessed in England: The military men, allured by his munificence and hospitality, as well as by his bravery, were zealously attached to his interests: The people in general bore him an unlimited affection: His numerous retainers were more devoted to his will, than to the prince or to the laws: And he was the greatest, as well as the last, of those mighty barons, who formerly overawed the crown, and rendered the people incapable of any regular fystem of civil government.

But the duke of York, besides the family of Nevil, had many other partifans among the great nobility. Courtney earl of Devonshire, descended from a very noble family of that name in France, was attached to his interests: Moubray duke of Norfolk had, from his hereditary hatred to the family of Lancaster, embraced the same party: And the discontents, which universally prevailed among the people, rendered every combination of the great the more dangerous to the established govern-

ment.

Though the people were never willing to grant the supplies necessary for keeping possession of the conquered provinces in France, they repined extremely at the lofs of these boasted acquisitions; and fancied, because a sudden irruption could make conquests, that without steady counsels, and a uniform expence, it was possible to maintain them. The voluntary cession of Maine to the queen's uncle had made them suspect treachery in the loss of Normandy and Guienne. They still considered Margaret as a French woman and a latent enemy of the kingkingdom. And when they faw her father and all CHAP her relations active in promoting the fuccess of the French, they could not be perfuaded that she, who was all powerful in the English council, would very zealously oppose them in their enterprises.

14;0.

But the most fatal blow given to the popularity of the crown, and to the interests of the house of Lancaster, was by the affassination of the virtuous duke of Glocester, whose character, had he been alive, would have intimidated the partifans of York; but whose memory, being extremely cherished by the people, ferved to throw an odium on all his murderers. By this crime the reigning family suffered a double prejudice: It was deprived of its firmest support; and it was loaded with all the infamy of that imprudent and barbarous affaffination.

As the duke of Suffolk was known to have had an active hand in the crime, he partook deeply of the hatred attending it; and the clamours, which necessarily rose against him, as prime minister, and declared favourite of the queen, were thereby augmented to a tenfold pitch, and became absolutely uncontrollable. The great nobility could ill brook to fee a subject exalted above them; much more one who was only great grandfon to a merchant, and who was of a birth fo much inferior to theirs. The people complained of his arbitrary measures; which were, in some degree, a necessary consequence of the irregular power then possessed by the prince, but which the least distaffection easily magnified into tyranny. The great acquisitions which he daily made were the object of envy; and as they were gained at the expence of the crown, which was itself reduced to poverty, they appeared, on that account, to all indifferent persons, the more exceptionable and invidious.

THE revenues of the crown, which had long been disproportioned to its power and dignity, had been

XXI. 1450

C H A P. extremely dilapidated during the minority of Henry ; both by the rapacity of the courtiers, which the king's uncles could not control, and by the necesfary expences of the French war, which had always been very ill supplied by the grants of parliament. The royal demesnes were dislipated; and at the fame time the king was loaded with a debt of 372,000 pounds, a fum fo great, that the parliament could never think of discharging it. This unhappy situation forced the ministers upon many arbitrary meafures: The household itself could not be supported without stretching to the utmost the right of purveyance, and rendering it a kind of universal robbery upon the people: The public clamour rose high upon this occasion, and no one had the equity to make allowance for the necessity of the king's fituation. Suffolk, once become odious, bore the blame of the whole; and every grievance, in every part of the administration, was universally imputed to his tyranny and injustice.

Impeachment of the duke of Suffolk.

This nobleman, fenfible of the public hatred under which he laboured, and foreseeing an attack from the commons, endeavoured to overawe his enemies by boldly prefenting himself to the charge, and by infifting upon his own innocence, and even upon his merits, and those of his family, in the He rose in the house of peers; public fervice. took notice of the clamours propagated against him; and complained, that after ferving the crown in thirty-four campaigns; after living abroad feventeen years without once returning to his native country; after losing a father and three brothers in the wars with France; after being himself a prifoner, and purchasing his liberty by a great ransom; it should yet be suspected, that he had been debauched from his allegiance by that enemy whom he had ever opposed with such zeal and fortitude,

and that he had betraved his prince, who had re- C HAP. warded his fervices by the highest honours and greatest offices that it was in his power to confer. This speech did not answer the purpose intended. The commons, rather provoked at his challenge, opened their charge against him, and sent up to the peers an accusation of high treason, divided into feveral articles. They infifted, that he had perfuaded the French king to invade England with an armed force, in order to depose the king, and to place on the thronehisown fon, John dela Pole, whom he intended to marry to Margaret, the only daughter of the late John duke of Somerset, and to whom, he imagined, he would by that means acquire a title to the crown: That he had contributed to the releafe of the duke of Orleans, in hopes that that prince would affift king Charles in expelling the English from France, and recovering full possession of his kingdom: That he had afterwards encouraged that monarch to make open war on Normandy and Guienne, and had promoted his conquests by betraying the fecrets of England, and obstructing the succours intended to be sent to those provinces: And that he had, without any powers or commission, promised by treaty to cede the province of Maine to Charles of Anjou, and had accordingly ceded it; which proved in the issue the chief cause of the loss of Normandy's.

It is evident, from a review of these articles, that the commons adopted, without inquiry, all the popular clamours against the duke of Suffolk, and charged him with crimes, of which none but the vulgar could feriously believe him guilty. Nothing can be more incredible, than that a nobleman, fo little eminent by his birth and character, could think of acquiring the crown to his family, and of deposing Henry by foreign force, and, together

cotton, p. 641. 3 Ibid. p. 642. Hall, fol. 157. Hollingshed, p. 631. Grafton, p. 607.

C H A P. XXI. with him, Margaret, his patron, a princess of so much spirit and penetration. Suffolk appealed to many noblemen in the house, who knew that he had intended to marry his fon to one of the coheirs of the earl of Warwic, and was disappointed in his views, only by the death of that lady: And he observed, that Margaret of Somerset could bring to her husband no title to the crown; because she herfelf was not fo much as comprehended in the entail fettled by act of parliament. It is eafy to account for the loss of Normandy and Guienne, from the fituation of affairs in the two kingdoms, without supposing any treachery in the English ministers; and it may safely be affirmed, that greater vigour was requisite to defend these provinces from the arms of Charles VII. than to conquer them at first from his predecessor. It could never be the interest of any English minister to betray and abandon fuch acquifitions; much less of one who was fo well established in his master's favour, who enjoyed fuch high honours and ample possessions in his own country, who had nothing to dread but the effects of popular hatred, and who could never think, without the most extreme reluctance, of becoming a fugitive and exile in a foreign land. The only article which carries any face of probability, is his engagement for the delivery of Maine to the queen's uncle: But Suffolk maintained, with great appearance of truth, that this measure was approved of by feveral at the council table; and it feems hard to ascribe to it, as is done by the commons, the subsequent loss of Normandy, and expulfion of the English. Normandy lay open on every fide to the invasion of the French: Maine, an inland province, must soon after have fallen without any attack: And as the English possessed in other parts more fortresses than they could garrison

14500

or provide for, it feemed no bad policy to contract CHAP. their force, and to render the defence practicable,

by reducing it within a narrower compass.

THE commons were probably fensible that this charge of treason against Suffolk would not bear a strict fcrutiny; and they therefore, foon after, fent up against him a new charge of misdemeanors, which they also divided into feveral articles. They affirmed, among other imputations, that he had procured exorbitant grants from the crown, had embezzled the public money, had conferred offices on improper persons, had perverted justice by maintaining iniquitous causes, and had procured pardons for notorious offenders ". The articles are mostly general; but are not improbable: And as Suffolk feems to have been a bad man and a bad minister. it will not be rash in us to think that he was guilty, and that many of these articles could have been proved against him. The court was alarmed at the profecution of a favourite minister, who lay under fuch a load of popular prejudices; and an expedient was fallen upon to fave him from prefent ruin. The king fummoned all the lords, spiritual and temporal, to his apartment: The prisoner was produced before them, and asked what he could say in his own defence? He denied the charge; but submitted to the king's mercy: Henry expressed himself not fatisfied with regard to the first impeachment for treason; but in consideration of the second, for misdemeanors, he declared, that, by virtue of Suffolk's own submission, not by any judicial authority, he banished him the kingdom during five years. The lords remained filent; but as foon as they re- His baturned to their own house, they entered a protest, nichment, that this fentence should nowife infringe their privileges; and that, if Suffolk had infifted upon his right, and had not voluntarily submitted to the

C H AP. king's commands, he was entitled to a trial by his

peers in parliament.

It was eafy to fee, that these irregular proceedings were meant to favour Suffolk, and that, as he still possessed the queen's confidence, he would, on the first favourable opportunity, be restored to his country, and be reinstated in his former power and credit. A captain of a vessel was therefore em. ployed by his enemies to intercept him in his passand death. age to France: He was feized near Dover; his head struck off on the fide of a long-boat; and his body thrown into the fea w. No inquiry was made after the actors and accomplices in this atrocious deed of violence.

> THE duke of Somerfet fucceeded to Suffolk's power in the ministry, and credit with the queen; and as he was the person under whose government the French provinces had been loft, the public, who always judge by the event, foon made him equally the object of their animofity and hatred. The duke of York was abfent in Ireland during all these transactions; and however it might be suspected that his partifans had excited and supported the profecution against Suffolk, no immediate ground of complaint could, on that account, lie against him. But there happened, foon after, an incident which roused the jealousy of the court, and discovered to them the extreme danger to which they were exposed from the pretentions of that popular prince.

> THE humours of the people, fet affoat by the parliamentary impeachment, and by the fall of fo great a favourite as Suffolk, broke out in various commotions, which were foon suppressed; but there arose one in Kent, which was attended with more dangerous confequences. A man of low condition, one John Cade, a native of Ireland, who had been

Popular infurrections.

> w Hall, fol. 158. Hift. Croyland, contin. p. 525. p. 388. Grafton, p. 610.

> > obliged

obliged to fly into France for crimes, observed, on CHAP. his return to England, the discontents of the people; and he laid on them the foundation of projects which were at first crowned with furprising fuccess. He took the name of John Mortimer; intending, as is supposed, to pass himself for a son of that fir John Mortimer who had been sentenced to death by parliament, and executed, in the beginning of this reign, without any trial or evidence, merely upon an indictment of high treason given in against him . On the first mention of that popular name, the common people of Kent, to the number of 20,000, flocked to Cade's standard, and he excited their zeal by publishing complaints against the numerous abuses in government, and demanding a redrefs of grievances. The court, not yet fully fensible of the danger, fent a small force against the rioters, under the command of fir Humphrey Stafford, who was defeated and flain in an action near Sevenoke, and Cade advancing with his followers towards London, encamped on Blackheath. Though elated by his victory, he still maintained the appearance of moderation; and fending to the court a plaufible list of grievances z, he promifed, that when these should be redressed, and when lord Say the treasurer and Cromer sheriff of Kent, should be punished for their malverfations, he would immediately lay down his arms. The council, who observed that nobody was willing to fight against men so reasonable in

1450.

y Hall, fol. 159. Hollingshed, p. 634. 2 Stowe, p. 388, 389. Hollingshed, p. 633.

their

<sup>\*</sup> Stowe, p. 346. Cotton, p. 564. This author admires that such a piece of injustice should have been committed in peaceable times: He might have added, and by fuch virtuous princes as Bedford and Glocester. But it is to be prefumed that Mortimer was guilty: though his condemnation was highly irregular and illegal. The people had at this time a very feeble fense of law and a constitution; and power was very imperfectly restrained by these limits. When the proceedings of a parliament were so irregular, it is easy to imagine that those of a king would be more fo.

C H A P. their pretentions, carried the king, for prefent fafety, to Kenilworth; and the city immediately opened its gates to Cade, who maintained, during fome time, great order and discipline among his followers. He always led them into the fields during the night-time; and published severe edicts against plunder and violence of every kind: But being obliged, in order to gratify their malevolence against Say and Cromer, to put these men to death without a legal trial , he found that, after the commiffion of this crime, he was no longer master of their riotous disposition, and that all his orders were neglected b. They broke into a rich house, which they plundered; and the citizens, alarmed at this act of violence, shut their gates against them; and being feconded by a detachment of foldiers fent them by lord Scales, governor of the Tower, they repulfed the rebels with great flaughter. The Kentishmen were so discouraged by the blow, that, upon receiving a general pardon from the primate, then chancellor, they retreated towards Rochester, and there dispersed. The pardon was soon after annulled, as extorted by violence: A price was fet on Cade's head d, who was killed by one Iden, a gentleman of Suffex; and many of his followers were capitally punished for their rebellion.

IT was imagined by the court, that the duke of York had fecretly infligated Cade to this attempt, in order to try, by that experiment, the dispositions of the people towards his title and family . And as the event had fo far fucceeded to his wish, the ruling party had greater reason than ever to apprehend the future confequences of his pretentions. At the fame time they heard that he intended to return from Ireland; and fearing that he meant to bring an armed force along with him, they issued

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>2</sup> Grafton, p. 612. b Hall, fol. 160. e Hist. Croyland, contin. p. 526. d Rymer, vol. xi. p. 275. c Cotton, p. 661. Stowe, p. 391.

orders, in the king's name, for opposing him, and C HAP. for debarring him entrance into England f. But the duke refuted his enemies by coming attended with no more than his ordinary retinue: The precautions of the ministers served only to shew him their jealoufy and malignity against him: He was fenfible that his title, by being dangerous to the king, was also become dangerous to himself: He now faw the impossibility of remaining in his prefent fituation, and the necessity of proceeding forward in support of his claim. His partisans, therefore, were instructed to maintain, in all companies, his right by fuccession, and by the established laws and conftitution of the kingdom: These questions became every day more and more the subject of conversation: The minds of men were infensibly sharpened against each other by disputes, before they came to more dangerous extremities: And various topics were pleaded in support of the pretenfions of each party.

THE partifans of the house of Lancaster main- The partained, that though the elevation of Henry IV. ties of Lancaster might at first be deemed somewhat irregular, and and York. could not be justified by any of those principles on which that prince chose to rest his title, it was yet founded on general confent, was a national act, and was derived from the voluntary approbation of a free people, who, being loofened from their allegiance by the tyranny of the preceding government, were moved by gratitude, as well as by a tenfe of public interest, to entrust the sceptre into the hands of their deliverer: That, even if that establishment were allowed to be at first invalid, it had acquired folidity by time; the only principle which ultimately gives authority to government, and removes those scruples which the irregular steps attending almost all revolutions naturally excite in the minds

. ....

CHAP. of the people: That the right of fuccession was a rule admitted only for general good, and for the maintenance of public order; and could never be pleaded to the overthrow of national tranquillity, and the subversion of regular establishments: That the principles of liberty, no less than the maxims of internal peace, were injured by these pretentions of the house of York: and if so many reiterated acts of the legislature, by which the crown was entailed on the present family, were now invalidated, the English must be considered, not as a free people, who could dispose of their own government. but as a troop of flaves, who were implicitly transmitted by fuccession from one master to another: That the nation was bound to allegiance under the house of Lancaster by moral, no less than by political duty; and were they to infringe those numerous oaths of fealty which they had fworn to Henry and his predecessors, they would thenceforth be thrown loose from all principles, and it would be found difficult ever after to fix and restrain them: That the duke of York himself had frequently done homage to the king as his lawful fovereign, and had thereby, in the most solemn manner, made an indirect renunciation of those claims with which he now dares to disturb the tranquillity of the public: That, even though the violation of the rights of blood, made on the deposition of Richard, was perhaps rash and imprudent, it was too late to remedy the mischief; the danger of a disputed succession could no longer be obviated; the people, accustomed to a government, which, in the hands of the late king, had been fo glorious, and in that of his predeceffor fo prudent and falutary, would still ascribe a right to it; by caufing multiplied diforders, and by fhedding an inundation of blood, the advantage would only be obtained of exchanging one pretender for another; and the house of York itself, if established on the throne, would, on the first opportunity,

be exposed to those revolutions which the giddy spi- C H A P. rit excited in the people gave fo much reason to apprehend: And that though the prefent king enjoyed not the shining talents which had appeared in his father and grandfather, he might still have a fon who should be endowed with them; he is himself eminent for the most harmless and inosfensive manners; and if active princes were dethroned on pretence of tyranny, and indolent ones on the plea of incapacity, there would thenceforth remain, in the constitution, no established rule of obedience to any

fovereign.

THESE strong topics, in favour of the house of Lancaster, were opposed by arguments no less convincing on the fide of the house of York. The partifans of this latter family afferted, that the maintenance of order in the fuccession of princes, far from doing injury to the people, or invalidating their fundamental title to good government, was established only for the purposes of government, and ferved to prevent those numberless confusions which must ensue, if no rule were followed but the uncertain and disputed views of present convenience and advantage: That the fame maxims which enfured public peace, were also falutary to national liberty; the privileges of the people could only be maintained by the observance of laws; and if no account were made of the rights of the fovereign, it could less be expected that any regard would be paid to the property and freedom of the fubject: That it was never too late to correct any pernicious precedent; an unjust establishment, the longer it itood, acquired the greater fanction and validity; it could, with more appearance of reason, be pleaded as an authority for a like injustice; and the maintenance of it, instead of favouring public tranquillity, tended to disjoint every principle by which human fociety was supported: That usurpers would be happy, if their prefent possession of power, or VOL. III.

¥450,

CHAP, their continuance for a few years, could convert them into legal princes; but nothing would be more miserable than the people, if all restraints on violence and ambition were thus removed, and a full scope given to the attempts of every turbulent innovator: That time, indeed, might bestow solidity on a government whose first foundations were the most infirm; but it required both a long course of time to produce this effect, and the total extinction of those claimants, whose title was built on the original principles of the constitution: That the deposition of Richard II. and the advancement of Henry IV. were not deliberate national acts, but the result of the levity and violence of the people, and proceeded from those very defects in human nature, which the establishment of political society, and of an order in fuccession, was calculated to prevent: That the subsequent entails of the crown were a continuance of the fame violence and usurpation; they were not ratified by the legislature, fince the confent of the rightful king was still wanting; and the acquiescence, first of the family of Mortimer, then of the family of York, proceeded from present necessity, and implied no renunciation of their pretentions: That the restoration of the true order of fuccession could not be considered as a change which familiarifed the people to revolutions; but as the correction of a former abuse, which had itself encouraged the giddy spirit of innovations, rebellion, and disobedience: And that, as the original title of Lancaster stood only in the person of Henry IV. on present convenience, even this principle, unjustifiable as it was, when not supported by laws, and warranted by the constitution, had now entirely gone over to the other fide; nor was there any comparison between a prince utterly unable to fway the fceptre, and blindly governed by corrupt ministers, or by an imperious queen, engaged in foreign and hostile interests; and a prince

of mature years, of approved wisdom and expe- CHAP. rience, a native of England, the lineal heir of the XXI crown, who, by his restoration, would replace every

thing on ancient foundations.

So many plaufible arguments could be urged on both fides of this interesting question, that the people were extremely divided in their fentiments; and though the noblemen of greatest power and influence feem to have espoused the party of York, the opposite cause had the advantage of being supported by the present laws, and by the immediate posfession of royal authority. There were also many great noblemen in the Lancastrian party, who balanced the power of their antagonists, and kept the nation in suspense between them. The earl of Northumberland adhered to the prefent government: The earl of Westmoreland, in spite of his connexions with the duke of York, and with the family of Nevil, of which he was the head, was brought over to the same party; and the whole north of England, the most warlike part of the kingdom, was, by means of thefe two potent noblemen, warmly engaged in the interests of Lancaster. Edmund Beaufort, duke of Somerset, and his brother Henry, were great supports of that cause; as were also Henry Holland duke of Exeter, Stafford duke of Buckingham, the earl of Shrewsbury, the lords Clifford, Dudley, Scales, Audley, and other noblemen.

WHILE the kingdom was in this fituation, it might naturally be expected that fo many turbulent barons, possessed of so much independent authority. would immediately have flown to arms, and have decided the quarrel, after their usual manner, by war and battle, under the standards of the contending princes. But there still were many causes which retarded these desperate extremities, and made a long train of faction, intrigue, and cabal, precede the military operations. By the gradual progress of

CHAP. arts in England, as well as in other parts of Europe, the people were now become of fome importance; laws were beginning to be respected by them; and it was requifite, by various pretences, previously to reconcile their minds to the overthrow of fuch an ancient establishment as that of the house of Lancaster, ere their concurrence could reasonably be expected. The duke of York himself, the new claimant, was of a moderate and cautious character, an enemy to violence, and disposed to trust rather to time and policy, than to fanguinary meafures, for the fuccess of his pretensions. The very imbecility itself of Henry, tended to keep the factions in suspense, and make them stand long in awe of each other: It rendered the Lancastrian party unable to firike any violent blow against their enemies; it encouraged the Yorkists to hope, that, after banishing the king's ministers, and getting posfession of his person, they might gradually undermine his authority, and be able, without the perilous expedient of a civil war, to change the fucceffion by parliamentary and legal authority.

7451. 6th Nov.

THE dispositions which appeared in a parliament affembled foon after the arrival of the duke of York from Ireland, favoured these expectations of his partifans, and both discovered an unusual boldness in the commons, and were a proof of the general difcontents which prevailed against the administration. The lower house, without any previous enquiry or. examination, without alleging any other ground of complaint than common fame, ventured to present a petition against the duke of Somerset, the duchess of Suffolk, the bishop of Chester, Sir John Sutton, lord Dudley, and feveral others of inferior rank; and they prayed the king to remove them for ever from his person and councils, and to prohibit them from approaching within twelve miles of the court 8.

g Parliamentary History, vol. ii. p. 263.

This was a violent attack, fomewhat arbitrary, and C II A P. fupported but by few precedents, against the ministry; yet the king durst not openly oppose it: He replied, that, except the lords, he would banish all the others from court during a year, unless he should have occasion for their service in suppressing any rebellion. At the fame time he rejected a bill which had passed both houses, for attaining the late duke of Suffolk, and which, in feveral of its clauses, discovered a very general prejudice against the meafures of the court.

1451.

THE duke of York, trusting to these symptoms, The first raifed an army of 10,000 men, with which he armament marched towards London; demanding a reforma- of the tion of the government, and the removal of the duke of duke of Somerfet from all power and authority h. He unexpectedly found the gates of the city thut against him; and, on his retreating into Kent, he was followed by the king at the head of a fuperior army; in which feveral of Richard's friends, particularly Salisbury and Warwic, appeared; probably with a view of mediating between the parties, and of feconding, on occasion, the duke of York's pretensions. A parley ensued; Richard still insisted upon the removal of Somerfet, and his fubmitting to a trial in parliament: The court pretended to comply with his demand; and that nobleman was put in arrest: The duke of York was then perfuaded to pay his respects to the king in his tent: and, on repeating his charge against the duke of Somerfet, he was surprised to see that minister step from behind the curtain, and offer to maintain his innocence. Richard now found that he had been betrayed; that he was in the hands of his enemies; and that it was become necessary, for his own safety, to lower his pretenfions. No violence, however, was attempted against him: The nation was not in

CHAP, a disposition to bear the destruction of so popular a prince: He had many friends in Henry's camp: And his fon, who was not in the power of the court, might still be able to revenge his death on all his enemies: He was therefore difmissed; and he retired to his feat of Wigmore on the borders of Wales i.

WHILE the duke of York lived in this retreat, there happened an incident, which, by encreafing the public discontents, proved favourable to his pretentions. Several Gascon lords, affectionate to the English government, and disgusted at the new dominion of the French, came to London, and offered to return to their allegiance under Henry k. The earl of Shrewsbury, with a body of 8000 men, was fent over to support them. Bourdeaux opened its gates to him: He made himself master of Fronfac, Castillon, and some other places: Affairs be-20th July. gan to wear a favourable aspect: But, as Charles hastened to resist this dangerous invasion, the fortunes of the English were soon reversed: Shrewsbury, a venerable warrior, above fourfcore years of age, fell in battle; his conquests were lost; Bourdeaux was again obliged to fubmit to the French king, and all hopes of recovering the province of Gasconv were for ever extinguished.

> THOUGH the English might deem themselves happy to be fairly rid of distant dominions which were of no use to them, and which they never could defend against the growing power of France, they expressed great discontent on the occasion; and they threw all the blame on the ministry, who had not been able to effect impossibilities. While they were in this disposition, the Queen's delivery of a fon, who received the name of Edward, was deemed no joyful incident; and as it removed all hopes of the

13th Ost.

k Hollingshed, p. 640. i Grafton, p. 620.

Polyd. Virg. p. 501. Grafton, p. 123.

peaceable fuccession of the duke of York, who was otherwife, in the right of his father, and, by the laws enacted fince the accession of the house of Lancaster, next heir to the crown, it had rather a tendency to inflame the quarrel between the parties. But the duke was incapable of violent countels; and even when no visible obstacle lay between him and the throne, he was prevented by his own scruples from mounting it. Henry, always unfit to exercise the government, fell at this time into a distemper. which fo far encreased his natural imbecility, that it rendered him incapable of maintaining even the appearance of royalty. The queen and the council, destitute of this support, found themselves unable to refift the York party; and they were obliged to yield to the torrent. They fent Somerset to the Tower: and appointed Richard lieutenant of the kingdom, with powers to open and hold a fession of parliament<sup>m</sup>. That affembly also, taking into confideration the state of the kingdom, created him protector during pleafure. Men who thus entrusted fovereign authority to one that had fuch evident and strong pretensions to the crown, were not furely averse to his taking immediate and full possession of it: Yet the duke, instead of pushing them to make farther concessions, appeared somewhat timid and irrefolute, even in receiving the power which was tendered to him. He defired that it might be recorded in parliament, that this authority was conferred on him from their own free motion, without any application on his part: He expressed his hopes that they would affift him in the exercise of it: He made it a condition of his acceptance, that the other lords, who were appointed to be of his council, should also accept of the trust, and should exercise it: And he required that all the powers of his office should be specified and defined by act of parliament.

C II A P.
XXI.

CIIAP. This moderation of Richard was certainly very unufual and very amiable; yet was it attended with bad confequences in the present juncture, and, by giving time to the animolities of faction to rife and ferment, it proved the source of all those furious wars and commotions which enfued.

THE enemies of the duke of York foon found it in their power to make advantage of his excessive caution. Henry, being fo far recovered from his distemper as to carry the appearance of exercising the royal power; they moved him to refume his authority, to annul the protectorship of the duke, to release Somerset from the Tower n, and to commit the administration into the hands of that nobleman. Richard, fenfible of the dangers which might attend his former acceptance of the parliamentary commiffion, should he submit to the annulling of it, levied an army; but still without advancing any pretenfions to the crown. He complained only of the king's ministers, and demanded a reformation of the go-Fir battle vernment. A battle was fought at St. Albans, in which the Yorkists were superior, and, without suffering any material lofs, flew about 5000 of their enemies; among whom were the duke of Somerfet, the earl of Northumberland, the earl of Stafford, eldest son of the duke of Buckingham, lord Clifford,

of St. Alban :. 22d May.

2455.

THIS was the first blood spilt in that fatal quarrel, which was not finished in less than a course of thirty vears, which was fignalized by twelve pitched battles, which opened a scene of extraordinary fierce-

and many other persons of distinction . The king himself fell into the hands of the duke of York, who treated him with great respect and tenderness: He was only obliged (which he regarded as no hardship) to commit the whole authority of the crown into the

Stowe, p. 309. Hollingshed, p. 643.

hands of his rival.

n Rymer, vol. xi. p. 361. Hollingshed, p. 642. Grafton, p. 626.

ness and cruelty, is computed to have cost the lives CHAP. of eighty princes of the blood, and almost entirely annihilated the ancient nobility of England. The strong attachments which at that time, men of the fame kindred bore to each other, and the vindictive fpirit, which was confidered as a point of honour, rendered the great families implacable in their refentments, and every moment widened the breach between the parties. Yet affairs did not immediately proceed to the last extremities: The nation was kept some time in suspense: The vigour and spirit of queen Margaret, supporting her small power, still proved a balance to the great authority of Richard, which was checked by his irresolute temper. A parliament, which was foon after affem- oth July. bled plainly discovered, by the contrariety of their proceedings, the contrariety of the motives by which they were actuated. They granted the Yorkists a general indemnity; and they restored the protectorfhip to the duke, who, in accepting it, still perfevered in all his former precautions: But at the same time they renewed their oaths of fealty to Henry, and fixed the continuance of the protectorship to the majority of his fon Edward, who was vested with the usual dignities of prince of Wales, duke of Cornwal, and earl of Chefter. The only decifive act, passed in this parliament, was a full resumption of all the grants which had been made fince the death of Henry V. and which had reduced the crown to great poverty.

IT was not found difficult to wrest power from hands fo little tenacious as those of the duke of York. Margaret, availing herfelf of that prince's absence, produced her husband before the house of lords; and, as his state of health permitted him at that time to act his part with some tolerable decency, he declared his intentions of refuming the government, and of putting an end to Richard's au-

JA56.

5

thority.

\$457.

1458.

C H A P. thority. This measure being unexpected, was not opposed by the contrary party: The house of lords. who were many of them difgusted with the late act of refumption, affented to Henry's proposal: And the king was declared to be reinstated in sovereign authority. Even the duke of York acquiesced in this irregular act of the peers; and no disturbance enfued. But that prince's claim to the crown was too well known, and the steps which he had taken to promote it, were too evident, ever to allow fincere trust and confidence to have place between the parties. The court retired to Coventry, and invited the duke of York and the earls of Salisbury and Warwic to attend the king's person. When they were on the road they received intelligence that designs were formed against their liberties and l v :s. They immediately separated themselves: Richard withdrew to his castle of Wigmore; Salisbury to Middleham in Yorkshire: And Warwic to his government of Calais, which had been committed to him after the battle of St. Albans, and which, as it gave him the command of the only regular military force maintained by England, was of the utmost importance in the present juncture. Still, men of peaceable dispositions, and among the rest, Bourchier, archbishop of Canterbury, thought it not too late to interpose with their good offices, in order to prevent that effusion of blood with which the kingdom was threatened; and the awe in which each party stood of the other, rendered the mediation for fome time fuccessful. It was agreed that all the great leaders on both fides should meet in London, and be folemnly reconciled. The duke of York and his partifans came thither with numerous retinues, and took up their quarters near each other for mutual fecurity. The leaders of the Lancastrian party used the same precaution. The mayor, at the head of 5000 men, kept a strict watch

watch night and day; and was extremely vigilant CHAP. in maintaining peace between them P. Terms were adjusted, which removed not the ground of difference. An outward reconciliation only was procured: And in order to notify this accord to the whole people, a folemn procession to St. Paul's was appointed, where the duke of York led queen Margaret, and a leader of one party marched hand in hand with a leader of the opposite. The less real cordiality prevailed, the more were the exterior demonstrations of amity redoubled. But it was evident, that a contest for a crown could not thus be peaceably accommodated; that each party watched only for an opportunity of subverting the other; and that much blood must yet be spilt, ere the nation could be restored to perfect tranquillity, or enjoy a tettled and established government.

EVEN the fmallest accident, without any formed design, was sufficient in the present disposition of men's minds, to dissolve the seeming harmony between the parties; and had the intentions of the leaders been ever fo amicable, they would have found it difficult to restrain the animosity of their followers, One of the king's retinue infulted one of the earl of Warwic's: Their companions on both fides took part in the quarrel: A fierce combat enfued: The earl apprehended his life to be aimed at: He fled to his government of Calais; and both parties, in every county of England, openly made preparations for deciding the contest by war and

THE earl of Salisbury, marching to join the duke Battle of of York, was overtaken, at Blore-heath, on the Bloreborders of Staffordshire, by lord Audley, who com- 23d Sept. manded much superior forces; and a small rivulet

1458.

1459.

P Fabian Chron anno 1458. The author fays, that fome lords brought 900 retainers, some 600, none less than 400. See also Grafton, p. 633.

I459.

C H A P. with steep banks ran between the armies. Salisbury XXI., here supplied his defect in numbers by stratagem; a refinement, of which there occur few instances in the English civil wars, where a headlong courage, more than military conduct, is commonly to be remarked. He feigned a retreat, and allured Audley to follow him with precipitation: But when the van of the royal army had passed the brook, Salifbury, fuddenly turned upon them; and partly by the furprife, partly by the division, of the enemies' forces, put this body to rout: The example of flight was followed by the rest of the army: And Salisbury, obtaining a complete victory, reached the general rendezvous of the Yorkists at Ludlow 9.

THE earl of Warwic brought over to this rendezvous a choice body of veterans from Calais, on whom it was thought the fortune of the war would much depend; but this reinforcement occasioned, in the issue, the immediate ruin of the duke of York's party. When the royal army approached, and a general action was every hour expected, Sir Andrew Trollop, who commanded the veterans, deferted to the king in the night-time; and the Yorkists were so dismayed at this instance of treachery, which made every man fuspicious of his fellow, that they separated next day without striking a stroker: The duke fled to Ireland: The earl of Warwic, attended by many of the other leaders, escaped to Calais; where his great popularity among all orders of men, particularly among the military, foon drew to him partifans, and rendered his power very formidable. The friends of the house of York, in England, kept themselves every where in readiness to rise on the first summons from their leaders.

1460.

AFTER meeting with fome fuccesses at fea, Warwic landed in Kent, with the earl of Salisbury, and

<sup>4</sup> Hollingshed, p. 649. Grafton, p. 936. p. 650. Grafton, p. 537.

Hollingshed,

the earl of Marche, eldest son of the duke of York; CHAP. and being met by the primate, by lord Cobham, and other persons of distinction, he marched, amidst the acclamations of the people, to London. The city immediately opened its gates to him; and his troops encreasing on every day's march, he foon found himself in a condition to face the royal army, which hastened from Coventry to attack him. The Battle of battle was fought at Northampton; and was foon Northdecided against the royalists by the infidelity of lord ampton. Grey of Ruthin, who, commanding Henry's van, deferted to the enemy during the heat of action, and spread a consternation through the troops. The duke of Buckingham, the earl of Shrewbury, the lords Beaumont and Egremont, and Sir William Lucie, were killed in the action or purfuit: The flaughter fell chiefly on the gentry and nobility; the common people were spared by orders of the earls of Warwic and Marche'. Henry himself, that empty shadow of a king, was again taken prisoner; and as the innocence and fimplicity of his manners, which bore the appearance of fanctity, had procured him the tender regard of the people', the earl of Warwic and the other leaders took care to diftinguish themselves by their respectful demeanour towards him.

1460.

A PARLIAMENT was fummoned in the king's A parlianame, and met at Westminster, where the duke foon after appeared from Ireland. This prince had never hitherto advanced openly any claim to the crown: He had only complained of ill ministers, and demanded a redrefs of grievances: And even, in the present crisis, when the parliament was furrounded by his victorious army, he showed such a regard to law and liberty, as is unufual during the prevalence of a party in any civil diffensions; and was still less to be expected in those violent and li-

<sup>\*</sup> Stowe, p. 409.

t Hall, fol. 169. Grafton, p. 195.

C H A P. centious times. He advanced towards the throne: and being met by the archbishop of Canterbury. who asked him, whether he had yet paid his respects to the king? he replied, that he knew of none to whom he owed that title. He then stood near the throne u, and addressing himself to the house of peers, he gave them a deduction of his title by descent, mentioned the cruelties by which the house of Lancaster had paved their way to sovereign power, infifted on the calamities which had attended the government of Henry, exhorted them to return into the right path, by doing justice to the lineal fucceffor, and thus pleaded his cause before them as his natural and legal judges w. This cool and moderate manner of demanding a crown, intimidated his friends, and encouraged his enemies: The lords remained in fuspense x; and no one ventured to utter a word on the occasion. Richard. who had probably expected that the peers would have invited him to place himself on the throne, was much disappointed at their filence; but defiring them to reflect on what he had proposed to them, he departed the house. The peers took the matter into confideration, with as much tranquillity as if it had been a common subject of debate: They defired the affiftance of some confiderable members among the commons in their deliberations: They heard, in feveral fuccessive days, the reasons alleged for the duke of York: They even ventured to propose objections to his claim, founded on former entails of the crown, and on the oaths of fealty fworn to the house of Lancaster, They also observed, that, as Richard had all along borne the arms of York, not those of Clarence, he could not claim as fuccessor to the latter family: And after receiving answers to these objections, derived from the violence and power by which the house of Lancaster

u Hollingshed, p 655. w Cotton, p. 665. Grafton, p. 643. Hollingshed, p. 657. Grafton, p. 645. Y. Cotton, p. 666.

fupported their present possession of the crown, they C H A P. proceeded to give a decision. Their fentence was calculated, as far as possible, to please both parties: They declared the title of the duke of York to be certain and indefeafible; but in confideration that Henry had enjoyed the crown, without dispute or controversy, during the course of thirty-eight years, they determined, that he should continue to possess the title and dignity during the remainder of his life; that the administration of the government, meanwhile, should remain with Richard; that he should be acknowledged the true and lawful heir of the monarchy; that every one should swear to maintain his fuccession, and it should be treason to attempt his life; and that all former fettlements of the crown, in this and the two last reigns, should be abrogated and rescinded 2. The duke acquiesced in this decision: Henry himself, being a prisoner, could not oppose it: Even if he had enjoyed his liberty, he would not probably have felt any violent reluctance against it: And the act thus passed with the unanimous confent of the whole legislative body. Though the mildness of this compromise is chiefly to be ascribed to the moderation of the duke of York, it is impossible not to observe in those transactions visible marks of a higher regard to law, and of a more fixed authority, enjoyed by parliament, than has appeared in any lormer period of English history.

IT is probable that the duke, without employing either menaces or violence, could have obtained from the commons a fettlement more confistent and uniform: But as many, if not all the members of the upper house had received grants, concessions, or dignities, during the last fixty years, when the house of Lancaster was possessed of the government; they were afraid of invalidating their

<sup>2</sup> Cotton, p. 666. Grafton, p. 647.

×460.

C H A P. own titles by too fudden and violent an overthrow of that family; and in thus temporifing between the parties, they fixed the throne on a basis upon which it could not possibly stand. The duke, apprehending his chief danger to arise from the genius and spirit of queen Margaret, sought a pretence for banishing her the kingdom: He sent her, in the king's name, a fummons to come immediately to London; intending, in case of her disobedience, to proceed to extremities against her. But the queen needed not this menace to excite her activity in defending the rights of her family. After the defeat at Northampton, she fled with her infant son to Durham, thence to Scotland; but foon returning, she applied to the northern barons, and employed every motive to procure their affistance. Her affability, infinuation, and address, qualities in which she excelled; her careffes, her promifes, wrought a powerful effect on every one who approached her: The admiration of her great qualities was succeeded by compassion towards her helpless condition: The nobility of that quarter, who regarded themselves as the most warlike in the kingdom, were moved by indignation to find the fouthern barons pretend to dispose of the crown and settle the government: And that they might allure the people to their standard, they promifed them the spoils of all the provinces on the other fide of the Trent. By these means, the queen had collected an army twenty thousand strong, with a celerity which was neither expected by her friends, nor apprehended by her enemies.

THE duke of York, informed of her appearance in the north, hastened thither with a body of 5000 men, to suppress, as he imagined, the beginnings of an infurrection; when, on his arrival at Wakefield, he found himself so much outnumbered by the enemy. He threw himself into Sandal castle, which was fituated in the neighbourhood; and he was advised by the earl of Salisbury, and other

prudent

prudent counsellors, to remain in that fortress, till CHAP. his fon, the earl of Marche, who was levying forces in the borders of Wales, could advance to his affistance 2. But the duke, though deficient in political courage, possessed personal bravery in an eminent degree; and notwithstanding his wisdom and experience, he thought that he should be for ever difgraced, if, by taking shelter behind walls, he should for a moment resign the victory to a woman. He descended into the plain, and offered Battle of battle to the enemy, which was inftantly accepted. Wake-field,
The great inequality of numbers was fufficient alone 24th Dec. to decide the victory; but the queen, by fending a detachment, who fell on the back of the duke's army, rendered her advantage still more certain and undifputed. The duke himself was killed in the Death of action; and as his body was found among the the duke of York. flain, the head was cut off by Margaret's orders, and fixed on the gates of York, with a paper crown upon it, in derision of his pretended title. His son, the earl of Rutland, a youth of seventeen, was brought to lord Clifford; and that barbarian, in revenge of his father's death, who had perished in the battle of St. Albans, murdered in cool blood, and with his own hands, this innocent prince, whose exterior figure, as well as other accomplishments, are represented by historians as extremely amiable. The earl of Salisbury was wounded and taken prifoner, and immediately beheaded, with feveral other persons of distinction, by martial law at Pomfret b. There fell near three thousand Yorkists in this battle: The duke himself was greatly and justly lamented by his own party; a prince who merited a better fate, and whose errors in conduct proceeded entirely from fuch qualities, as render him the more an object of esteem and affection. He perished in the fiftieth year of his age, and left three fons, Ed-

1460.

a Stowe, p. 412. Vol. III.

b Folyd. Virg. p. 510.

CHAP. ward, George, and Richard, with three daughters

Anne, Elizabeth, and Margaret.

THE queen, after this important victory, divided her army. She fent the smaller division, under Jasper Tudor, earl of Pembroke, half brother to the king, against Edward, the new duke of York. She herfelf marched with the larger division towards London, where the earl of Warwic had been left with the command of the Yorkists. Pembroke was defeated by Edward at Mortimer's Crofs in Herefordshire, with the loss of near 4000 men: His army was dispersed; he himself escaped by slight; but his father, fir Owen Tudor, was taken prisoner, and immediately beheaded by Edward's orders. This barbarous practice, being once begun, was continued by both parties, from a spirit of revenge, which covered itself under the pretence of retaliation c.

Battle of Mortimer's Cross.

Second bittle of St.Albans.

MARGARET compensated this defeat by a victory which the obtained over the earl of Warwic. That nobleman, on the approach of the Lancastrians, led out his army, reinforced by a strong body of the Londoners, who were affectionate to his cause: and he gave battle to the queen at St. Albans. While the armies were warmly engaged, Lovelace, who commanded a confiderable body of the Yorkists, withdrew from the combat; and this treacherous conduct, of which there are many instances in those civil wars, decided the victory in favour of the queen. About 2300 of the vanquished perished in the battle and pursuit; and the person of the king fell again into the hands of his own party. This weak prince was fure to be almost equally a prisoner whichever faction had the keeping of him; and scarcely any more decorum was observed by one than by the other, in their method of treating him. Lord Bonville, to whose care he had been entrusted by the Yorkists,

· Hollingshed, p. 660. Grafton, p. 650.

remained

remained with him after the defeat, on affurances C H A P. of pardon given him by Henry: But Margaret, regardless of her husband's promise, immediately ordered the head of that nobleman to be struck off by the executioner d. Sir Thomas Kiriel, a brave warrior, who had fignalifed himself in the French wars. was treated in the same manner.

THE queen made no great advantage of this victory: Young Edward advanced upon her from the other fide; and collecting the remains of Warwic's army, was foon in a condition of giving her battle with superior forces. She was fensible of her danger. while she lay between the enemy and the city of London; and she found it necessary to retreat with her army to the north . Edward entered the capital amidst the acclamations of the citizens, and immediately opened a new scene to his party. This prince. in the bloom of youth, remarkable for the beauty of his person, for his bravery, his activity, his affability. and every popular quality, found himself so much possessed of public favour, that, elated with the spirit natural to his age, he resolved no longer to confine himself within those narrow limits which his father had prescribed to himself, and which had been found by experience so prejudicial to his cause. He determined to assume the name and dignity of king; to infift openly on his claim; and thenceforth to treat the opposite party as traitors and rebels to his lawful authority. But as a national confent, or the appearance of it, still seemed, notwithstanding his plausible title, requisite to precede this bold measure, and as the affembling of a parliament might occasion too many delays, and be attended with other inconveniencies, he ventured to proceed in a less regular manner, and to put it out of the power of his enemies to throw obstacles in the way of his elevation. His army was ordered to affemble in St. John's Fields:

d Hollingshed, p. 660.

· Grafton, p. 652.

C H A P. great numbers of people furrounded them; an harangue was pronounced to this mixed multitude, fetting forth the title of Edward, and inveighing against the tyranny and usurpation of the rival family; and the people were then asked, whether they would have Henry of Lancaster for king? They unanimously exclaimed against the proposal. It was then demanded, whether they would accept of Edward, eldest fon of the late duke of York? They expressed their assent by loud and joyful acclamations f. A great number of bishops, lords, magistrates, and other persons of distinction, were next assembled at Baynard's castle, who ratified the popular election: and the new king was on the subsequent day proclaimed in London, by the title of Edward IV g.

Edward IV. affumes the crown.

thMarch.

In this manner ended the reign of Henry VI. a monarch who, while in his cradle, had been proclaimed king both of France and England, and who began his life with the most splendid prospects that any prince in Europe had ever enjoyed. The revolution was unhappy for his people, as it was the fource of civil wars; but was almost entirely indifferent to Henry himself, who was utterly incapable of exercising his authority, and who, provided he perfonally met with good usage, was equally easy, as he was equally enflaved in the hands of his enemies and of his friends. His weakness and his disputed title were the chief causes of the public calamities: But whether his queen, and his ministers, were not also guilty of some great abuses of power, it is not easy for us at this distance of time to determine: There remain no proofs on record of any confiderable violation of the laws, except in the affaffination of the duke of Glocester, which was a private crime, formed no precedent, and was but too much of a piece with the usual ferocity and cruelty of the times.

<sup>5</sup> Stowe, p. 415. Hollingshed, p. 661.

<sup>8</sup> Grafton, p. 653.

THE most remarkable law, which passed in this CHAP. reign, was that for the due election of members of parliament in counties. After the fall of the feudal fystem, the distinction of tenures was in some measure Miscellaloft; and every freeholder, as well those who held of mesne lords, as the immediate tenants of the crown, were by degrees admitted to give their votes at elections. This innovation (for fuch it may probably be esteemed) was indirectly confirmed by a law of Henry IV. h, which gave right to fuch a multitude of electors as was the occasion of great disorder. In the eighth and tenth of this king, therefore, laws were enacted, limiting the electors to fuch as possessed forty shillings a year in land, free from all burdens, within the county'. This fum was equivalent to near twenty pounds a year of our present money; and it were to be wished, that the spirit, as well as letter of this law, had been maintained.

1461 actions of this reign.

THE preamble of the statute is remarkable: "Whereas the elections of knights have of late, in " many counties of England, been made by out-" rages and excessive numbers of people, many of "them of fmall fubstance and value, vet pretending " to a right equal to the best knights and esquires; " whereby manslaughters, riots, batteries, and divi-" fions among the gentlemen and other people of " the fame counties, shall very likely rife and be, " unless due remedy be provided in this behalf, &c." We may learn from these expressions, what an important matter the election of a member of parliament was now become in England: That affembly was beginning in this period to assume great authority: The commons had it much in their power to enforce the execution of the laws; and if they failed of fuccess in this particular, it proceeded less from any exorbitant power of the crown, than from the licentious spirit of the aristocracy, and perhaps from

h Statutes at Large, 7 Henry IV. cap. 15.

i Ibid. 8 Henry VI. cap. 7. 10 Henry VI. cap. 2.

CHAP. the rude education of the age, and their own ignorance of the advantages resulting from a regular ad-

ministration of justice.

WHEN the duke of York, the earls of Salifbury and Warwic, fled the kingdom upon the defertion of their troops, a parliament was fummoned at Coventry in 1460, by which they were all attainted. This parliament feems to have been very irregularly constituted, and scarcely deserves the name: Infomuch, that an act paffed in it, " that all fuch " knights of any county as were returned by virtue of the king's letters, without any other election, " should be valid, and that no sheriff should, for returning them, incur the penalty of the statute " of Henry IV k." All the acts of that parliament were afterwards reverfed; " because it was unlaw-" fully fummoned, and the knights and barons not " duly chosen '."

THE parliaments in this reign, instead of relaxing their vigilance against the usurpations of the court of Rome, endeavoured to enforce the former statutes enacted for that purpose. The commons petitioned. that no foreigner should be capable of any church preferment, and that the patron might be allowed to present anew upon the non-residence of any incumbent m: But the king eluded these petitions. Pope Martin wrote him a fevere letter against the statute of provifors; which he calls an abominable law, that would infallibly damn every one who observed it ". The cardinal of Winchester was legate; and as he was also a kind of prime minister, and immenfely rich from the profits of his clerical dignities, the parliament became jealous lest he should extend the papal power; and they protested, that the cardinal should absent himself in all affairs and councils

k Cotton, p. 664. m Cotton, p. 585. P. 99.

<sup>1</sup> Statutes at Large, 39 Henry VI. cap. 1, n Burnet's Collection of Records, vol.i.

of the king, whenever the pope or fee of Rome was C HAP. touched upon °.

Permission was given by parliament to export

Permission was given by parliament to export corn when it was at low prices; wheat at fix shillings and eight pence a quarter, money of that age; barley at three shillings and four pence? It appears from these prices, that corn still remained at near half its present value; though other commodities were much cheaper. The inland commerce of corn was also opened in the eighteenth of the king, by allowing any collector of the customs to grant a licence for carrying it from one county to another? The same year a kind of navigation act was proposed with regard to all places within the Streights; but the king rejected it.

THE first instance of debt contracted upon parliamentary security occurs in this reigns. The commencement of this pernicious practice deserves to be noted; a practice the more likely to become pernicious, the more a nation advances in opulence and credit. The ruinous effects of it are now become but too apparent, and threaten the very existence of

the nation.

Cotton, p. 593.
 P Statutes at Large, 15 Henry VI. cap. 26
 Henry VI. cap. 6.
 Cotton, p. 625.
 Ibid. p. 626.
 Ibid. p. 593. 634. 638.

## CHAP. XXII.

## É D W A R D IV.

Battle of Touton—Henry escapes into Scotland—A parliament—Battle of Hexham—Henry taken prisoner, and confined in the Tower—King's marriage with the Lady Elizabeth Gray—Warwic disgusted——Illiance with Burgundy—Insurrection in Yorkshire—Battle of Banbury—Warwic and Clarence banished—Warwic and Clarence return—Edward IV. expelled—Henry VI. restored—Edward IV. returns—Battle of Barnet,—and death of Warwic—Battle of Teukesbury, and murder of prince Edward—Death of Henry VI.—Invasion of France—Peace of Pecquigni—Trial and execution of the duke of Clarence—Death and character of Edward IV.

C H A P. XXII.

Was of a temper well fitted to make his way through fuch a fcene of war, havoc, and devastation, as must conduct him to the full possession of that crown, which he claimed from hereditary right, but which he had assumed from the tumultuary election alone of his own party. He was bold, active, enterprising; and his hardness of heart and severity of character rendered him impregnable to all those movements of compassion, which might relax his vigour in the prosecution of the most bloody revenges upon his enemies. The very commencement of his reign gave symptoms of his sanguinary disposition.

A trades-



From the Original in Thensington Pulace



A tradefman of London, who kept shop at the sign CHAP. of the Crown, having faid that he would make his fon heir to the Crown; this harmless pleasantry was interpreted to be spoken in derision of Edward's affumed title; and he was condemned and executed for the offence t. Such an act of tyranny was a proper prelude to the events which enfued. The fcaffold, as well as the field, incessantly streamed with the noblest blood of England, spilt in the quarrel between the two contending families, whose animosity was now become implacable. The people, divided in their affections, took different symbols of party: The partifans of the house of Lancaster chose the red rose as their mark of distinction; those of York were denominated from the white; and thefe civil wars were thus known, over Europe, by the name of the quarrel between the two roses.

THE licence, in which queen Margaret had been obliged to indulge her troops, infuted great terror and aversion into the city of London, and all the fouthern parts of the kingdom; and as the there expected an obstinate resistance, she had prudently retired northwards among her own partifans. fame licence, joined to the zeal of faction, foon brought great multitudes to her standard; and she was able, in a few days, to affemble an army, fixty thousand strong, in Yorkshire. The king and the earl of Warwic hastened with an army of forty thoufand men, to check her progress; and when they reached Pomfret they dispatched a body of troops, under the command of lord Fitzwalter, to fecure the paffage of Ferrybridge over the river Ayre, which lay between them and the enemy. Fitzwalter took possession of the post assigned him; but was not able to maintain it against lord Clifford, who attacked him with fuperior numbers. The Yorkists were chased tack with great flaughter; and lord

Habington in Kennet, p. 431. Grafton, p. 791.

CHAP. Fitzwalter himself was slain in the action ". The earl of Warwic, dreading the confequences of this disaster, at a time when a decisive action was every hour expected. immediately ordered his horse to be brought him, which he stabbed before the whole army; and, kiffing the hilt of his fword, fwore that he was determined to share the fate of the meanest foldier w. And, to shew the greater security, a proclamation was at the fame time issued, giving to every one full liberty to retire; but menacing the feverest punishment to those who should discover any fymptoms of cowardice in the enfuing battle x. Lord Falconberg was fent to recover the post which had been lost: He passed the river some miles above Ferrybridge, and, falling unexpectedly on lord Clifford, revenged the former difafter by the defeat of the party and the death of their leader y.

Battle of Touton, 29th of March.

THE hostile armies met at Touton; and a fierce and bloody battle enfued. While the Yorkifts were advancing to the charge, there happened a great fall of fnow, which driving full in the faces of their enemies, blinded them; and this advantage was improved by a stratagem of lord Falconberg's. nobleman ordered fome infantry to advance before the line, and, after having fent a volley of flight arrows, as they were called, amidst the enemy, immediately to retire. The Lancastrians, imagining that they were gotten within reach of the opposite army, discharged all their arrows, which thus fell short of the Yorkists z. After the quivers of the enemy were emptied, Edward advanced his line, and did execution with impunity on the dismayed Lancastrians: The bow, however, was foon laid aside, and the sword decided the combat, which ended in a total victory on the fide of the Yorkists.

u W. Wyrcester, p. 489. w Habington, p. 432. Croyl. contin. p 532.

Hall, fol. 186. Hollingshed, p. 664. x Hollingshed, p. 664. y Hift. z Hall, fol. 186.

Edward

Edward iffued orders to give no quarter?. The CHAP. routed army was pursued to Tadcaster with great bloodshed and confusion; and above thirty-six thoufand men are computed to have fallen in the battle and pursuit b: Among these were the earl of Westmoreland, and his brother, fir John Nevil, the earl of Northumberland, the lords Dacres and Welles. and fir Andrew Trollop . The earl of Devonshire. who was now engaged in Henry's party, was brought a prisoner to Edward; and was, soon after, beheaded by martial law at York. His head was fixed on a pole erected over a gate of that city; and the head of duke Richard, and that of the earl of Salisbury, were taken down, and buried with their bodies. Henry and Margaret had remained at York during the action; but learning the defeat of their army, and being fenfible that no place in England could now afford them shelter, they fled with great precipitation into Scotland. They were accompanied by the duke of Exeter, who, though he had married Edward's fifter, had taken part with the Lancastrians, and by Henry duke of Somerset, who had commanded in the unfortunate battle of Touton, and who was the fon of that nobleman killed in the first battle of St. Albans.

Notwithstanding the great animofity which Henry prevailed between the kingdoms, Scotland had never efcapes into Scotexerted itself with vigour, to take advantage, either land. of the wars which England carried on with France, or of the civil commotions which arose between the James I. more laudably emcontending families. ployed, in civilizing his fubjects, and taming them to the falutary yoke of law and justice, avoided all hostilities with foreign nations; and though he feemed interested to maintain a balance between France

a Habington, p. 432. b Hollingshed, p. 665. Grafton, p. 656. Hift. Croyl. cont. p. 533. c Hall, fol. 187. Habington, p. 433.

C H A P. XXII.

and England, he gave no farther affiftance to the former kingdom in its greatest distresses, than permitting, and perhaps encouraging, his fubjects to enlist in the French service. After the murder of that excellent prince, the minority of his fon and fuccessor, James II. and the distractions incident to it, retained the Scots in the fame state of neutrality; and the fuperiority, visibly acquired by France, rendered it then unnecessary for her ally to interpose in her defence. But, when the quarrel commenced between the houses of York and Lancaster, and became absolutely incurable, but by the total extinction of one party; James, who had now rifen to man's estate, was tempted to seize the opportunity, and he endeavoured to recover those places which the English had formerly conquered from his ancestors. He laid fiege to the castle of Roxborough in 1460, and had provided himself with a small train of artillery for that enterprise: But his cannon were so ill framed, that one of them burst as he was firing it, and put an end to his life in the flower of his age. His fon and fucceffor, James III. was also a minor on his accession: The usual distractions enfued in the government: The queen-dowager, Anne of Gueldres, aspired to the regency: The family of Douglas opposed her pretensions: And queen Margaret, when she sled into Scotland, found there a people little less divided by faction, than those by whom she had been expelled. Though she pleaded the connexions between the royal family of Scotland and the house of Lancaster, by the young king's grandmother, a daughter of the earl of Somerset; The could engage the Scottish council to go no farther than to express their good wishes in her favour: But, on her offer to deliver to them immediately the important fortress of Berwic, and to contract her fon in marriage with a fifter of king James, the found a better reception; and the Scots promifed the affistance of their arms to reinstate her family C II A P. upon the throne d. But, as the danger from that quarter feemed not very urgent to Edward, he did not purfue the fugitive king and queen into their retreat: but returned to London, where a parliament was fummoned for fettling the government.

1461.

On the meeting of this affembly, Edward found 4th Nov. the good effects of his vigorous measure in assuming A partathe crown, as well as of his victory at Touton, by which he had fecured it: The parliament no longer hesitated between the two families, or proposed any of those ambiguous decisions, which could only serve to perpetuate and inflame the animofities of party. They recognized the title of Edward, by hereditary descent, through the family of Mortimer; and declared that he was king by right, from the death of his father, who had also the same lawful title; and that he was in possession of the crown from the day that he affumed the government, tendered to him by the acclamations of the people e. They expressed their abhorrence of the usurpation and intrusion of the house of Lancaster, particularly that of the earl of Derby, otherwise called Henry IV. which, they faid, had been attended with every kind of diforder, the murder of the fovereign and the oppression of the subject. They annulled every grant which had paffed in those reigns; they reinflated the king in all the possessions which had belonged to the crown at the pretended deposition of Richard II. and though they confirmed judicial deeds, and the decrees of inferior courts, they reverfed all attainders passed in any pretended parliament; particularly the attainder of the earl of Cambridge, the king's grandfather; as well as that of the earls of Salisbury and Glocester, and of lord Lumley, who had been forfeited for adhering to Richard II f.

MANY

d Hall, fol. 137. Habington, p. 434. e Cotton, p. 670.

f Cotton, p. 672. Statutes at Large, 1 Edw. IV. cap. 1.



C HAP. MANY of these votes were the result of the usual violence of party: The common fense of mankind. in more peaceable times, repealed them: And the statutes of the house of Lancaster, being the deeds of an established government, and enacted by princes long poffeffed of authority, have always been held as valid and obligatory. The parliament, however, in subverting such deep foundations, had still the pretence of replacing the government on its ancient and natural basis: But, in their subsequent meafures, they were more guided by revenge, at least by the views of convenience, than by the maxims of equity and justice. They passed an act of forseiture and attainder against Henry VI. and queen Margaret, and their infant fon, prince Edward: The same act was extended to the dukes of Somerset and Exeter: to the earls of Northumberland, Devonshire, Pembroke, Wilts; to the viscount Beaumont; the lords Roos, Nevil, Clifford, Welles, Dacre, Gray of Rugemont, Hungerford; to Alexander Hedie, Nicholas Latimer, Edmond Mountfort, John Heron, and many other persons of distinction g. The parliament vested the estates of all these attainted persons in the crown; though their fole crime was the adhering to a prince, whom every individual of the parliament had long recognifed, and whom that very king himfelf, who was now feated on the throne, had acknowledged and obeyed as his lawful fovereign.

THE necessity of supporting the government established will more fully justify some other acts of violence; though the method of conducting them may still appear exceptionable. John earl of Oxford, and his fon Aubrey de Vere, were detected in a correspondence with Margaret, were tried by martial law before the constable, were condemned and ex-

8 Cotton, p. 670. W. Wyrcester, p. 490.

ecuted.

ecuted h. Sir William Tyrrel, fir Thomas Tuden. CHAP. ham, and John Montgomery, were convicted in the fame arbitary court, were executed, and their estates forfeited. This introduction of martial law into civil government was a high strain of prerogative; which, were it not for the violence of the times, would probably have appeared exceptionable to a nation fo jealous of their liberties as the English were now become. It was impossible but such a great and fudden revolution must leave the roots of discontent and dissatisfaction in the subject, which would require great art, or in lieu of it, great violence, to extirpate them. The latter was more fuitable to the genius of the nation in that uncultivated age.

But the new establishment still seemed precarious and uncertain; not only from the domestic discontents of the people, but from the efforts of foreign powers. Lewis, the eleventh of the name, had fucceeded to his father Charles in 1460; and was led, from the obvious motives of national interest, to feed the flames of civil difcord among fuch dangerous neighbours, by giving support to the weaker party. But the intriguing and politic genius of this prince was here checked by itself: Having attempted to subdue the independent spirit of his own valfals, he had excited fuch an opposition at home, as prevented him from making all the advantage which the opportunity afforded, of the diffensions among the English. He sent, however, a small body to Henry's assistance under Varenne, seneschal of Normandy k; who landed in Northumberland, and got possession of the castle of Alnewic: But as the indefatigable Margaret went in person to France, where she solicited larger supplies and promised Lewis to deliver up Calais if her family should

1462-

h W. de Wyrcester, p. 492. Hall, fol. 189. Grafton, p. 658. Fabian, fol. 215. Fragm. ad finem T. Sproti.

i See note [H] at the end of the volume,

Monstrelet, vol. iii. p. 95.

CHAP. XXII. 3464.

Battle of Hesham. s th May.

by his means be restored to the throne of England: he was induced to fend along with her a body of 2000 men at arms, which enabled her to take the field, and to make an inroad into England. Though reinforced by a numerous train of adventurers from Scotland, and by many partifans of the family of 25thApril. Lancaster; she received a check at Hedgley-more from lord Montacute, or Montague, brother to the earl of Warwic, and warden of the east marches between Scotland and England. Montague was fo encouraged with this fuccefs, that, while a numerous reinforcement was on their march to join him by orders from Edward, he yet ventured, with his own troops alone, to attack the Lancastrians at Hexham: and he obtained a complete victory over them. The duke of Somerfet, the lords Roos and Hungerford, were taken in the pursuit, and immediately beheaded by martial law at Hexham. Summary juftice was in like manner executed at Newcastle on fir Humphrey Nevil and feveral other gentlemen. All those who were spared in the field suffered on the scaffold; and the utter extermination of their adversaries was now become the plain object of the York party; a conduct which received but too plaufible an apology from the preceding practice of the Lancastrians.

THE fate of the unfortunate royal family, after this defeat, was fingular. Margaret, flying with her fon into a forest, where she endeavoured to conceal herself, was beset, during the darkness of the night, by robbers, who, either ignorant or regardless of her quality, despoiled her of her rings and jewels, and treated her with the utmost indignity. The partition of this rich booty raifed a quarrel among them; and while their attention was thus engaged, she took the opportunity of making her escape with her son, into the thickest of the forest, where she wandered for some time, overspent with hunger and fatigue, and funk with terror and affliction. While in this

wretched

wretched condition, she saw a robber approach with CHAP. his naked fword; and finding that she had no means of escape, she suddenly embraced the resolution of trusting entirely for protection to his faith and generosity. She advanced towards him; and presenting to him the young prince, called out to him, Here, my friend, I commit to your care the safety of your king's fon. The man, whose humanity and generous spirit had been obscured, not entirely lost, by his vicious course of life, was struck with the singularity of the event, was charmed with the confidence reposed in him; and vowed not only to abstain from all injury against the princess, but to devote himself entirely to her service '. By his means she dwelt some time concealed in the forest, and was at last conducted to the sea-coast, whence she made her escape into Flanders. She passed thence into her father's court, where she lived several years in privacy and retirement. Her husband was not so fortunate or fo dexterous in finding the means of escape. Some of his friends took him under their protection, and conveyed him into Lancashire; where he remained concealed during a twelvemonth; but he was at last detected, delivered up to Edward, and thrown into the Tower. The fafety of his person was owing less to the generosity of his enemies, than to the contempt which they had entertained of his courage and his understanding.

THE imprisonment of Henry, the expulsion of Margaret, the execution and confifcation of all the most eminent Lancastrians, seemed to give full security to Edward's government; whose title by blood being now recognifed by parliament, and univerfally submitted to by the people, was no longer in danger of being impeached by any antagonist. In this prosperous situation, the king deli-

<sup>1</sup> Monstrelet, vol. iii. p.96.

m Hall, fol. 191. Fragm. ad finem Sprotti.



CHAP. vered himself up, without control, to those please fures which his youth, his high fortune, and his natural temper invited him to enjoy; and the cares of royalty were less attended to, than the dislipation of amusement or the allurements of passion. The cruel and unrelenting spirit of Edward, though enured to the ferocity of civil wars, was at the fame time extremely devoted to the fofter passions, which, without mitigating his fevere temper, maintained a great influence over him, and shared his attachment with the pursuits of ambition and the thirst of military glory. During the present interval of peace. he lived in the most familiar and fociable manner with his fubjects, particularly with the Londoners; and the beauty of his person, as well as the gallantry of his address, which, even unaffisted by his royal dignity, would have rendered him acceptable to the fair, facilitated all his applications for their favour. This eafy and pleafurable course of life augmented every day his popularity among all ranks of men: He was the peculiar favourite of the young and gay of both fexes. The disposition of the English, little addicted to jealoufy, kept them from taking umbrage at these liberties: And his indulgence in amusements, while it gratified his inclination, was thus become, without defign, a means of supporting and fecuring his government. But as it is difficult to confine the ruling passion within strict rules of prudence, the amorous temper of Edward led him into a fnare, which proved fatal to his repose, and to the stability of his throne.

King's marriage with the lady Elizabeth Gray.

JAQUELINE of Luxembourg, dutchess of Bedford, had, after her husband's death, so far sacrificed her ambition to love, that she espoused, in second marriage, fir Richard Woodeville, a private gentleman, to whom she bore several children; and among the rest, Elizabeth, who was remarkable for

146:0

the grace and beauty of her person, as well as for CHAP. other amiable accomplishments. This young lady had married fir John Gray of Groby, by whom the had children; and her husband being slain in the fecond battle of St. Albans, fighting on the fide of Lancaster, and his estate being for that reason confiscared, his widow retired to live with her father, at his feat of Grafton in Northamptonshire. The king came accidentally to the house after a hunting party, in order to pay a visit to the dutchess of Bedford; and as the occasion seemed favourable for obtaining fome grace from this gallant monarch, the young widow flung herfelf at his feet, and with many tears entreated him to take pity on her impoverished and distressed children. The fight of so much beauty in affliction strongly affected the amorous Edward; love stole insensibly into his heart under the guise of compassion; and her forrow, so becoming a virtuous matron, made his esteem and regard quickly correfound to his affection. He raifed her from the ground with assurances of favour; he found his passion increase every moment by the conversation of the amiable object; and he was foon reduced, in his turn, to the posture and style of a supplicant at the feet of Elizabeth. But the lady, either averse to dishonourable love from a fense of duty, or perceiving that the impression which she had made, was so deep as to give her hopes of obtaining the highest elevation, obstinately refused to gratify his passion; and all the endearments, careffes, and importunities of the young and amiable Edward, proved fruitless against her rigid and inflexible virtue. His passion, irritated by opposition, and increased by his veneration for fuch honourable fentiments, carried him at last beyond all bounds of reason; and he offered to share his throne, as well as his heart, with the woman, whose beauty of person and dignity of character feemed so well to entitle her to both. The marriage



C H A P. was privately celebrated at Grafton . The fecret was carefully kept for some time: No one suspected, that fo libertine a prince could facrifice fo much to a romantic passion: And there were in particular strong reasons, which at that time rendered this step to the highest degree dangerous and imprudent.

THE king, defirous to fecure his throne, as well by the prospect of issue, as by foreign alliances, had, a little before, determined to make application to fome neighbouring princess; and he had cast his eye on Bona of Savoy, fifter of the queen of France, who, he hoped, would, by her marriage, enfure him the friendship of that power, which was alone both able and inclined to give support and assistance to his rival. To render the negociation more fuccessful, the earl of Warwic had been dispatched to Paris, where the princess then resided; he had demanded Bona in marriage for the king; his proposals had been accepted; the treaty was fully concluded; and nothing remained but the ratification of the terms agreed on, and the bringing over the princess to England?. But when the secret of Edward's marriage broke out, the haughty earl, deeming himself affronted, both by being employed in this fruitless negociation, and by being kept a stranger to the king's intentions, who had owed every thing to his friendship, immediately returned to England, inflamed with rage and indignation. The influence of passion over so young a man as Edward might have ferved as an excuse for his imprudent conduct, had he deigned to acknowledge his error, or had pleaded his weakness as an apology: But his faulty shame or pride prevented him from so much as mentioning the matter to Warwic; and that nobleman was allowed to depart the court, full of the fame ill-humour and discontent which he brought to it.

Warwig diffuited.

> o Hall, fol. 193. Tabian, fol. 216. P Hall, fol. 101. Habington, p. 437. Hollingshed, p. 667. Grafton, p. 665. Polyd. Virg. p. 513.

EVERY

Every incident now tended to widen the breach CHAP. between the king and this powerful subject. The queen, who lost not her influence by marriage, was equally folicitous to draw every grace and favour to her own friends and kindred, and to exclude those of the earl, whom she regarded as her mortal enemy. Her father was created earl of Rivers: He was made treasurer in the room of lord Mountjoy 9: He was invested in the office of constable for life; and his fon received the furvivance of that high dignity. The same young nobleman was married to the only daughter of lord Scales, enjoyed the great estate of that family, and had the title of Scales conferred upon him. Catharine, the queen's fifter, was married to the young duke of Buckingham, who was a ward of the crown': Mary, another of her fifters. espoused William Herbert, created earl of Huntingdon: Ann, a third fifter, was given in marriage to the son and heir of Gray lord Ruthyn, created earl of Kent t. The daughter and heir of the duke of Exeter, who was also the king's niece, was contracted to fir Thomas Gray, one of the queen's fons by her former husband; and as lord Montague was treating of a marriage between his fon and this lady, the preference given to young Gray was deemed an injury and affront to the whole family of Nevil.

THE earl of Warwic could not fuffer with patience the least diminution of that credit which he had long enjoyed, and which he thought he had merited by fuch important fervices. Though he had received fo many grants from the crown, that the revenue arising from them amounted, besides his patrimonial estate, to 80,000 crowns a-year, according to the computation of Philip de Comines "; his ambitious spirit was still dissatisfied, so

W. Wyrcester, p. 506.

<sup>5</sup> W. Wyrcester, p. 505.

<sup>&</sup>quot; Liv. iil. chap. 4.

r Rymer, vol. xi. p. 581.

<sup>\*</sup> Ibid. p. 506.



CHAP. long as he faw others furpass him in authority and influence with the king w. Edward alfo, jealous of that power which had supported him, and which he himself had contributed still higher to exalt, was well pleafed to raife up rivals in credit to the earl of Warwic; and he justified, by this political view, his extreme partiality to the queen's kindred. But the nobility of England, envying the fudden growth of the Woodevilles \*, were more inclined to take part with Warwic's discontent, to whose grandeur they were already accustomed, and who had reconciled them to his superiority by his gracious and popular manners. And as Edward obtained from parliament a general refumption of all grants which he had made fince his accession, and which had extremely impoverished the crown y; this act, though it passed with some exceptions, particularly one in favour of the earl of Warwic, gave a general alarm to the nobility, and difguited many, even zealous partisans of the family of York.

But the most considerable affociate that Warwic acquired to his party, was George duke of Clarence, the king's fecond brother. This prince deemed himself no less injured than the other grandees, by the uncontrolled influence of the queen and her relations; and as his fortunes were still left on a precarious footing, while theirs were fully effablished, this neglect, joined to his unquiet and restless spirit, inclined him to give countenance to all the malcontents. The favourable opportunity of gaining him was espied by the earl of Warwic, who offered him in marriage his elder daughter, and co-heir of his immense fortunes; a settlement which, as it was fuperior to any that the king himfelf could confer upon him, immediately attached him to the party of the earl a. Thus an extensive

W Polyd. Virg. p. 514.

<sup>\*</sup> Hift. Croyl. cont. p. 539.

Z Grafton, p. 673. y W. Wyrcester, p. 508.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>2</sup> W. Wyrcester, p. 511. Hall, fol. 200. Habington, p. 459. Hollingshed, p. 671. Polyd. Virg. p. 515.

and dangerous combination was infenfibly formed CHAP. against Edward and his ministry. Though the immediate object of the malcontents was not to overturn the throne, it was difficult to foresee the extremities to which they might be carried: And as opposition to government was usually in those ages profecuted by force of arms, civil convulsions and disorders were likely to be soon the result of these intrigues and confederacies.

1466.

WHILE this cloud was gathering at home, Ed-Alliance with the ward carried his views abroad, and endeavoured to duke of fecure himself against his factious nobility by enter- Burguning into foreign alliances. The dark and dangerous ambition of Lewis XI. the more it was known, the greater alarm it excited among his neighbours and vaffals; and as it was supported by great abilities, and unrestrained by any principle of faith or humanity, they found no fecurity to themfelves but by a jealous combination against him. Philip duke of Burgundy was now dead: His rich and extensive dominions were devolved to Charles his only fon, whose martial disposition acquired him the firname of Bold, and whose ambition, more outrageous than that of Lewis, but feconded by less power and policy, was regarded with a more favourable eye by the other potentates of Europe. The opposition of interests, and still more, a natural antipathy of character, produced a declared animofity between these bad princes; and Edward was thus fecure of the fincere attachment of either of them, for whom he should chuse to declare himself. The duke of Burgundy being descended by his mother, a daughter of Portugal, from John of Gaunt, was naturally inclined to favour the house of Lancaster b: But this consideration was easily overbalanced by political motives; and Charles, perceiving the interests of that house to be extremely.

b Comines, liv. iii. chap. 4, 6.

XXII. 1466.

1468.

C H A P. decayed in England, fent over his natural brother, commonly called the Bastard of Burgundy, to carry in his name proposals of marriage to Margaret the king's fifter. The alliance of Burgundy was more popular among the English than that of France; the commercial interests of the two nations invited the princes to a close union; their common jealoufy of Lewis was a natural cement between them; and Edward, pleafed with strengthening himself by fo potent a confederate, foon concluded the alliance, and bestowed his fister upon Charles c. A league which Edward at the fame time concluded with the duke of Britanny, feemed both to increase his fecurity, and to open to him the prospect of rivaling his predeceffors in those foreign conquests, which, however short-lived and unprofitable, had rendered their reigns fo popular and illustrious d.

> But whatever ambitious schemes the king might have built on these alliances, they were soon frus-

¥469.

trated by intestine commotions, which engrossed all his attention. These disorders probably arose not immediately from the intrigues of the earl of Warwic, but from accident, aided by the turbulent spirit of the age, by the general humour of discontent which that popular nobleman had instilled into the nation, and perhaps by some remains of attachment to the house of Lancaster. The hospital of St. Leonard's near York had received, from an ancient grant of king Athelstane, a right of levying a thrave of corn upon every plough-land in the county; and as these charitable establishments are liable to abuse, the country people complained that the revenue of the hospital was no longer expended for the relief of the poor, but was fecreted by the managers, and employed to their private purpofes.

Infurrection in Yorkshire.

After long repining at the contribution, they refused payment. Ecclefiaftical and civil censures were

c Hall, fol. 169 197.

d W. Wyrcester, p. 5. Parliament Hist. vol. ii. p. 332.

XXII.

1469.

issued against them: Their goods were distrained, CHAP. and their persons thrown into jail: Till, as their illhumour daily increased, they rose in arms; fell upon the officers of the hospital, whom they put to the fword; and proceeded in a body, fifteen thoufand strong to the gates of York. Lord Montague. who commanded in those parts, opposed himself to their progress; and having been so fortunate in a skirmish as to seize Robert Hulderne their leader. he ordered him immediately to be led to execution; according to the practice of the times. The rebels, however, still continued in arms; and being foon headed by men of greater distinction, fir Henry Nevil fon of lord Latimer, and fir John Coniers, they advanced fouthwards, and began to appear formidable to government. Herbert earl of Pembroke, who had received that title on the forfeiture of Jasper Tudor, was ordered by Edward to march against them at the head of a body of Welshmen: and he was joined by five thousand archers under the command of Stafford earl of Devonshire, who had fucceeded in that title to the family of Courtney, which had also been attainted. But a trivial difference about quarters having begotten an animofity between these two noblemen, the earl of Devonshire retired with his archers, and left Pembroke alone to encounter the rebels. The two armies approached Battle of each other near Banbury; and Pembroke, having prevailed in a skirmish, and having taken fir Henry Nevil prisoner, ordered him immediately to be put to death, without any form of process. This execution enraged without terrifying the rebels: They attacked the Welsh army, routed them, put them 26th July. to the fword without mercy; and having feized Pembroke, they took immediate revenge upon him for the death of their leader. The king, imputing this misfortune to the earl of Devonshire, who had deserted Pembroke, ordered him to be executed in a like fummary manner. But thefe fpeedy execu-

Banbury.

tions.

XXII. 1469.

C H A P. tions, or rather open murders, did not stop there: The northern rebels, fending a party to Grafton, feized the earl of Rivers and his fon John; men who had become obnoxious by their near relation to the king, and his partiality towards them: And they were immediately executed by orders from fir

John Coniers .

THERE is no part of English history fince the Conquest so obscure, so uncertain, so little authentic, or confistent, as that of the wars between the two Roses: Historians differ about many material circumstances; some events of the utmost consequence. in which they almost all agree, are incredible and contradicted by records f; and it is remarkable, that this profound darkness falls upon us just on the eve of the restoration of letters, and when the art of printing was already known in Europe. All we can distinguish with certainty through the deep cloud which covers that period, is a scene of horror and bloodshed, savage manners, arbitrary executions, and treacherous, dishonourable conduct in all There is no possibility, for instance, of accounting for the views and intentions of the earl of Warwic at this time. It is agreed that he refided, together with his fon-in-law the duke of Clarence, in his government of Calais, during the commencement of this rebellion; and that his brother Montague acted with vigour against the northern rebels. We may thence presume, that the insurrection had not proceeded from the fecret counfels and instigation of Warwic; though the murder committed by the rebels on the earl of Rivers, his capital enemy, forms, on the other hand, a violent prefumption against him. He and Clarence came over to England, offered their service to Edward, were received without any fuspicion, were entrusted by him in the highest commands , and still persevered in their

c Fabian, fol. 217. f See note [1] at the end of the volume.

<sup>8</sup> Rymer, vol. xi. p. 647. 649, 650.

fidelity. Soon after, we find the rebels quieted and CHAP. dispersed by a general pardon granted by Edward from the advice of the earl of Warwic: But why fo courageous a prince, if fecure of Warwic's fidelity, should have granted a general pardon to men who had been guilty of fuch violent and perfonal outrages against him, is not intelligible; nor why that nobleman, if unfaithful, should have endeavoured to appeale a rebellion, of which he was able to make fuch advantages. But it appears that, after this infurrection, there was an interval of peace, during which the king loaded the family of Nevil with honours and favours of the highest nature: He made lord Montague a marquis by the fame name: He created his fon George duke of Bedford h: He publicly declared his intention of marrying that young nobleman to his eldest daughter Elizabeth. who, as he had yet no fons, was prefumptive heir of the crown: Yet we find that foon after, being invited to a feast by the archbishop of York, a younger brother of Warwic and Montague, he entertained a fudden fuspicion that they intended to feize his person or to murder him: And he abruptly left the entertainment i.

Soon after, there broke out another rebellion. which is as unaccountable as all the preceding events; chiefly because no sufficient reason is assigned for it, and because, so far as it appears, the family of Nevil had no hand in exciting and fomenting it. It arose in Lincolnshire, and was headed by fir Robert Welles, fon to the lord of that name. The army of the rebels amounted to 30,000 men; but lord Welles himfelf, far from giving countenance to them, fled into a fanctuary, in order to fecure his person against the king's anger or suspicions. He was allured from this retreat by a promife of fafety;

1470.

b Cotton, p. 702.

i Fragm. Ed. IV. ad fin. Sprotti.

XXII. 1470. 13th Mar.

CHAP. and was foon after, notwithstanding this assurance. beheaded along with fir Thomas Dymoc, by orders from Edward k. The king fought a battle with the rebels, defeated them, took fir Robert Welles and fir Thomas Launde prisoners, and ordered them immediately to be beheaded.

> EDWARD, during these transactions, had entertained fo little jealoufy of the earl of Warwic or duke of Clarence, that he fent them with commiffions of array to levy forces against the rebels 1: But these malcontents, as soon as they left the court, raifed troops in their own name, issued declarations against the government, and complained of grievances, oppressions, and bad ministers. The unexpected defeat of Welles disconcerted all their measures; and they retired northwards into Lancashire, where they expected to be joined by lord Stanley, who had married the earl of Warwic's fifter. But as that nobleman refused all concurrence with them, and as lord Montague also remained quiet in Yorkshire; they were obliged to disband their army, and to fly into Devonshire, where they embarked and made fail towards Calais m.

Warwie and Clarence banished.

> THE deputy-governor, whom Warwic had left at Calais, was one Vaucler, a Gascon, who seeing the earl return in this miserable condition, refused him admittance; and would not fo much as permit the duchels of Clarence to land; though a few days before the had been delivered on thip-board of a fon, and was at that time extremely difordered by fickness. With difficulty he would allow a few flaggons of wine to be carried to the ship for the

k Hall, fol. 204 Fabian, fol. 218 Habington, p. 442. Rymer, vol. xi p. 652.

lingshed, p. 674.

m The king offered by procl mation a reward of 1000 pounds, or 100 pounds a year in land, to any that would feize them. Whence we may learn that land was at that time fold for about ten years purchase. See Rymer, vol. xi. p. 654. ule

use of the ladies: But as he was a man of fagacity, C H AP. and well acquainted with the revolutions to which England was subject, he fecretly apologised to Warwic for this appearance of infidelity, and reprefented it as proceeding entirely from zeal for his fervice. He faid, that the fortress was ill supplied with provisions; that he could not depend on the attachment of the garrison; that the inhabitants, who lived by the English commerce, would certainly declare for the established government; that the place was at present unable to resist the power of England on the one hand, and that of the duke of Burgundy on the other; and that, by feeming to declare for Edward, he would acquire the confidence of that prince, and still keep it in his power, when it should become safe and prudent, to restore Calais to its ancient mafter. It is uncertain whether Warwic was fatisfied with this apology, or fuspected a double infidelity in Vaucler; but he feigned to be entirely convinced by him; and having seized some Flemish vessels which he found lying off Calais, he immediately made fail towards France.

THE king of France, uneafy at the close conjunction between Edward and the duke of Burgundy, received with the greatest demonstrations of regard the unfortunate Warwic', with whom he had formerly maintained a fecret correspondence, and whom he hoped still to make his instrument in overturning the government of England, and reestablishing the house of Lancaster. No animosity was ever greater than that which had long prevailed between that house and the earl of Warwic. His father had been executed by orders from Margaret: He himself had twice reduced Henry to captivity, had banished the queen, had put to death all their

n Comines, liv. iii. chap. 4. Hall, fol. 2050

Polyd. Virg. p. 519:

C H A P. most zealous partisans either in the field or on the scaffold, and had occasioned innumerable ills to that unhappy family. For this reason, believing that fuch inveterate rancour could never admit of any cordial reconciliation, he had not mentioned Henry's name, when he took arms against Edward; and he rather endeavoured to prevail by means of his own adherents, than revive a party which he fincerely hated. But his prefent distresses and the entreaties of Lewis made him hearken to terms of accommodation; and Margaret being fent for from Angers, where she then resided, an agreement was from common interest soon concluded between them. It was stipulated, that Warwic should espouse the cause of Henry, and endeavour to restore him to liberty, and to re-establish him on the throne; that the administration of the government, during the minority of young Edward, Henry's fon, should be entrusted conjointly to the earl of Warwic and the duke of Clarence; that prince Edward should marry the lady Anne, fecond daughter of that nobleman; and that the crown, in case of the failure of male issue in that prince, should descend to the duke of Clarence, to the entire exclusion of king Edward and his posterity. Never was confederacy, on all fides, lefs natural, or more evidently the work of necessity: But Warwic hoped, that all former passions of the Lancastrians might be lost in present political views; and that at worst, the independent power of his family, and the affections of the people, would fuffice to give him fecurity, and enable him to exact the full performance of all the conditions agreed on. The marriage of prince Edward with the lady Anne was immediately celebrated in France.

EDWARD forefaw that it would be easy to dissolve an alliance composed of such discordant parts. For this purpose he sent over a lady of great fagacity and address.

address, who belonged to the train of the duchess CHAP. of Clarence, and who, under colour of attending her mistress, was empowered to negotiate with the duke, and to renew the connexions of that prince with his own family p. She represented to Clarence. that he had unwarily, to his own ruin, become the instrument of Warwic's vengeance, and had thrown himself intirely in the power of his most inveterate enemies; that the mortal injuries which the one royal family had fuffered from the other, were now past all forgiveness, and no imaginary union of interests could ever suffice to obliterate them; that even if the leaders were willing to forget past offences, the animofity of their adherents would prevent a fincere coalition of parties, and would, in spite of all temporary and verbal agreements, preserve an eternal opposition of measures between them; and that a prince who deferted his own kindred, and joined the murderers of his father, left himself single, without friends, without protection, and would not, when misfortunes inevitably fell upon him, be fo much as entitled to any pity or regard from the rest of mankind. Clarence was only one and twenty years of age, and feems to have possessed but a slender capacity; yet could he eafily see the force of these reasons; and upon the promife of forgiveness from his brother, he fecretly engaged, on a favourable opportunity, to defert the earl of Warwic, and abandon the Lancastrian party.

During this negotiation, Warwic was fecretly carrying on a correspondence of the same nature with his brother the marquis of Montague, who was entirely trusted by Edward; and like motives produced a like resolution in that nobleman. The marquis also, that he might render the projected blow the more deadly and incurable, resolved, on

P Comines, liv. iii. chap. 5. Hall, fol. 207. Hollingshed, p. 675.

XXII. 1470.

CHAP. his fide, to watch a favourable opportunity for committing his perfidy, and still to maintain the appearance of being a zealous adherent to the house of York.

> AFTER these mutual snares were thus carefully laid, the decision of the quarrel advanced apace. Lewis prepared a fleet to escort the earl of Warwic, and granted him a supply of men and money . The duke of Burgundy, on the other hand, enraged at that nobleman for his feizure of the Flemish vessels before Calais, and anxious to support the reigning family in England, with whom his own interests were now connected, fitted out a larger fleet, with which he guarded the Channel; and he inceffantly warned his brother-in-law of the imminent perils to which he was exposed. But Edward, though always brave and often active, had little forefight or penetration. He was not sensible of his danger: He made no fuitable preparations against the earl of Warwic': He even said, that the duke might spare himself the trouble of guarding the feas, and that he wished for nothing more than to fee Warwic fet foot on English ground s. A vain confidence in his own prowefs, joined to the immoderate love of pleasure, had made him incapable of all found reason and reflection.

September. Warwic and Clarence return.

THE event foon happened, of which Edward feemed so desirous. A storm dispersed the Flemish navy, and left the fea open to Warwic t. That nobleman feized the opportunity, and fetting fail, quickly landed at Dartmouth, with the duke of Clarence, the earls of Oxford and Pembroke, and a fmall body of troops; while the king was in the north, engaged in suppressing an insurrection which had been raifed by lord Fitz-Hugh, brother-in-law

q Comines, liv. iii. chap. 4. Hall, fol. 207. 5 Comines, liv. iii. chap. 5. Hall, fol. 208. t Comines, liv. iii. chap. 5.

to Warwic. The fcene which enfues refembles more C H . . . the fiction of a poem or romance than an event in true history. The prodigious popularity of Warwic ", the zeal of the Lancastrian party, the spirit of discontent with which many were infected, and the general instability of the English nation, occasioned by the late frequent revolutions, drew fuch multitudes to his standard, that in a very few days his army amounted to fixty thousand men, and was continually increasing. Edward hastened fouthwards to encounter him; and the two armies approached each other near Nottingham, where a decifive action was every hour expected. The rapidity of Warwic's progress had incapacitated the duke of Clarence from executing his plan of treachery; and the marquis of Montague had here the opportunity of striking the first blow. He communicated the design to his adherents, who promised him their concurrence: They took to arms in the night-time, and hastened with loud acclamations to Edward's quarters: The king was alarmed at the noise, and starting from bed, heard the cry of war usually employed by the Lancastrian party. Lord Haitings, his chamberlain, informed him of the danger, and urged him to make his escape by speedy flight from an army where he had fo many concealed enemies, and where few feemed zealoufly attached to his fervice. He had just time to get on horseback, and to hurry with a fmall retinue to Lynne in Norfolk, where he luckily found fome ships ready, on board of which he instantly embarked w. And after this manner the earl Edw. IV. of Warwic, in no longer space than eleven days expelled. after his first landing, was left entire master of the kingdom.

But Edward's danger did not end with his embarkation. The Easterlings or Hanse-Towns were

Hall, fol. 205.

w Comines, liv. iii. chap, 5. Hall, fol. 208.

C II A P. then at war both with France and England; and. fome ships of these people, hovering on the English coaft, espied the king's vessels, and gave chase to them; nor was it without extreme difficulty that he made his escape into the port of Alcmaer in Holland. He had fled from England with such precipitation, that he had carried nothing of value along with him. and the only reward which he could bestow on the captain of the vessel that brought him over, was a robe lined with fables: promifing him an ample recompence if fortune should ever become more pro-

pitious to him x.

: .

IT is not likely that Edward could be very fond of prefenting himself in this lamentable plight before the duke of Burgundy; and that having fo fuddenly, after his mighty vaunts, loft all footing in his own kingdom, he could be infensible to the ridicule which must attend him in the eyes of that prince. The duke on his part was no less embarraffed how he should receive the dethroned monarch. As he had ever borne a greater affection to the house of Lancaster than to that of York, nothing but political views had engaged him to contract an alliance with the latter; and he forefaw, that probably the revolution in England would now turn this alliance against him, and render the reigning family his implacable and jealous enemy. For this reason, when the first rumour of that event reached him, attended with the circumstance of Edward's death, he feemed rather pleafed with the catastrophe; and it was no agreeable disappointment to find, that he must either undergo the burthen of fupporting an exiled prince, or the dishonour of abandoning so near a relation. He began already to fay that his connexions were with the kingdom of England, not with the king; and it was indifferent to him whether the name of Edward, or that of

Henry, were employed in the articles of treaty. CHAP. These sentiments were continually strengthened by XXII. the fubfequent events. Vaucler, the deputy gogernor of Calais, though he had been confirmed in his command by Edward, and had even received a pension from the duke of Burgundy on account of his fidelity to the crown, no fooner faw his old master Warwic reinstated in authority, than he declared for him, and with great demonstrations of zeal and attachment put the whole garrifon in his livery. And the intelligence which the duke received every day from England, seemed to promise an entire and full settlement in the family of Lancaster.

IMMEDIATELY after Edward's flight had left the Henry VI. kingdom at Warwic's disposal, that nobleman hastened to London; and taking Henry from his confinement in the Tower, into which he himself had been the chief cause of throwing him, he proclaimed him king with great folemnity. A parliament was fummoned, in the name of that prince, to meet at Westminster; and as this assembly could pretend to no liberty, while furrounded by fuch enraged and infolent victors, governed by fuch an impetuous spirit as Warwic, their votes were entirely dictated by the ruling faction. The treaty with Margaret was here fully executed: Henry was recognised as lawful king; but his incapacity for government being avowed, the regency was entrusted to Warwic and Clarence till the majority of prince Edward; and in default of that prince's iffue, Clarence was declared fucceffor to the crown. The usual business also of reversals went on without opposition: Every statute made during the reign of Edward was repealed; that prince was declared to be an usurper; he and his adherents were attainted; and in particular Richard duke of Glocester, his younger brother: All the attainders of the Lancastrians, the dukes of Somerset and Exeter, the earls of Rich-R 2 mond,

147J.

CHAP. mond, Pembroke, Oxford, and Ormond, were reverfed; and every one was restored who had lost either honours or fortune by his former adherence to

the cause of Henry.

THE ruling party were more sparing in their executions than was usual after any revolutions during those violent times. The only victim of distinction was John Tibetot earl of Worcester. This accomplished person, born in an age and nation where the nobility valued themselves on ignorance as their privilege, and left learning to monks and schoolmasters, for whom indeed the spurious erudition that prevailed was best fitted, had been struck with the first rays of true science, which began to penetrate from the fouth, and had been zealous, by his exhortation and example, to propagate the love of letters among his unpolished countrymen. It is pretended, that knowledge had not produced on this nobleman himfelf the effect which fo naturally attends it, of humanizing the temper and foftening the heart, and that he had enraged the Lancattrians against him, by the feverities which he exercised upon them during the prevalence of his own party. deavoured to conceal himself after the slight of Edward; but was caught on the top of a tree in the forest of Weybridge, was conducted to London, tried before the earl of Oxford, condemned, and executed. All the other confiderable Yorkitts either fled beyond fea, or took shelter in sanctuaries; where the ecclefiastical privileges afforded them protection. In London alone, it is computed that no less than 2000 persons saved themselves in this manner 2; and among the rest, Edward's queen, who was there delivered of a fon, called by his father's name ".

QUEEN Margaret, the other rival queen, had not yet appeared in England; but on receiving intelli-

y Hall, fol. 210. Stowe, p. 422. Z Comines, liv. iii. chap. 7. <sup>2</sup> Hall, fol. 210. Stowe, p. 423. Hollingthed, p. 677. Grafton. p. 690.

gence of Warwic's fuccess, was preparing with CHAP. prince Edward for her journey. All the banished Lancastrians slocked to her; and among the rest, the duke of Somerset, son of the duke beheaded after the battle of Hexham. This nobleman, who had long been regarded as the head of the party, had fled into the Low Countries on the discomsiture of his friends; and as he concealed his name and quality, he had there languished in extreme indigence. Philip de Comines tells us b, that he himself saw him, as well as the duke of Exeter, in a condition no better than that of a common beggar; till being discovered by Philip duke of Burgundy, they had fmall penfions allotted them, and were living in filence and obscurity, when the success of their party called them from their retreat. But both Somerfet and Margaret were detained by contrary winds from reaching England', till a new revolution in that kingdom, no less sudden and surprising than the former, threw them into greater milery than that from which they had just emerged.

Though the duke of Burgundy, by neglecting Edward, and paying court to the established government, had endeavoured to conciliate the friendship of the Lancastrians, he found that he had not succeeded to his wish; and the connexions between the king of France and the earl of Warwic still held him in great anxiety d. This nobleman, too hastily regarding Charles as a determined enemy, had fent over to Calais a body of 4000 men, who made inroads into the Low Countries e; and the duke of Burgundy faw himself in danger of being overwhelmed by the united arms of England and of France. He refolved therefore to grant some affiftance to his brother-in-law; but in fuch a covert manner as should give the least offence possible to

b Liv. iii. chap. 4.

c Grafton, p. 692. Polyd. Virg. p. 522.

d Hall, fol. 205. e Comines, liv. iii. chap. 6.

CHAP, the English government. He equipped four large vessels, in the name of some private merchants, at Terveer in Zeland; and causing fourteen ships to be fecretly hired from the Easterlings, he delivered this small squadron to Edward, who, receiving also a fum of money from the duke, immediately fet fail for England. No fooner was Charles informed of his departure, than he issued a proclamation inhibiting all his fubjets from giving him countenance or affidance; an artifice which could not deceive the earl of Warwic, but which might ferve as a decent pretence, if that nobleman were fo difposed, for maintaining friendship with the duke of Burgundy.

March 25. E. w. IV. returns.

EDWARD, impatient to take revenge on his enemies, and to recover his lost authority, made an attempt to land with his forces, which exceeded not 2000 men, on the coast of Norfolk; but being there repulsed, he failed northwards, and difembarked at Ravenspur in Yorkshire. Finding that the new magistrates, who has been appointed by the earl of Warwic, kept the people every where from joining him, he pretended, and even made oath, that he came not to challenge the crown, but only the inheritance of the house of York, which of right belonged to him; and that he did not intend to disturb the peace of the kingdom. His partifans every moment flocked to his standard: He was admitted into the city of York: And he was foon in fuch a fituation as gave him hopes of fucceeding in all his claims and pretentions. The marquis of Montague commanded in the northern counties; but from some mysterious reasons which, as well as many other important transactions in that age, no historian has cleared up, he totally neglected the beginnings of an infurrection which he ought to have esteemed so formidable. Warwic assembled

an army at Leicester, with an intention of meeting CHAP. and of giving battle to the enemy; but Edward, by taking another road, passed him unmolested, and presented himf. If before the gates of London. Had he here been refused admittance, he was totally undone: But there were many reasons which inclined the citizens to favour him His numerous friends, iffuing from their fanctuaries, were active in his cause; many rich merchants, who has formerly lent him money, faw no other chance for their payment but his restoration; the city-dames, who had been liberal of their favours to him, and who still retained an affection for this young and gallant prince, fwaved their hutbands and friends in his favour ; and above all the archbishop of York, Warwic's brother, to whom the care of the city was committed, had fecretly, from unknown reasons, entered into a correspondence with him; and he fa- April 11. cilitated Edward's admission into London. The most likely cause which can be affigned for those multiplied infidelities, even in the family of Nevil itself, is the spirit of faction, which, when it becomes inveterate, it is very difficult for any man entirely to shake off. The persons who had long distinguished themselves in the York party, were unable to act with zeal and cordiality for the support of the Lancastrians; and they were inclined, by any profpect of favour or accommodation offered them by Edward, to return to their ancient connexions. However this may be, Edward's entrance into London made him master not only of that rich and powerful city, but also of the person of Henry, who, destined to be the perpetual sport of fortune, thus fell again into the hands of his enemies .

IT appears not that Warwic, during his short administration, which had continued only fix months,

5 Comines, liv. iii. chap. 7.

h Grafton, p. 702.



had been guilty of any unpopular act, or had any wife deferved to lofe that general favour with which he had fo lately overwhelmed Edward. But this prince, who was formerly on the defensive, was now the aggreffor; and having overcome the difficulties which always attend the beginnings of an infurrection, possessed many advantages above his enemy: His partifans were actuated by that zeal and courage which the notion of an attack inspires; his opponents were intimidated for a like reason; every one who had been disappointed in the hopes which he had entertained from Warwic's elevation, either became a cool friend or an open enemy to that nobleman; and each malcontent, from whatever cause, proved an accession to Edward's army. The king, therefore, found himself in a condition to face the earl of Warwic; who being reinforced by his fonin-law the duke of Clarence, and his brother the marquis of Montague, took post at Barnet, in the neighbourhood of London. The arrival of queen Margaret was every day expected, who would have drawn together all the genuine Lancastrians, and have brought a great accession to Warwic's forces: But this very confideration proved a motive to the earl rather to hurry on a decifive action, than to share the victory with rivals and ancient enemies, who he forefaw would, in case of success, claim the chief merit in the enterprise i. But while his jealoufy was all directed towards that fide, he overlooked the dangerous infidelity of friends, who lay the nearest to his bosom. His brother Montague, who had lately temporifed, feems now to have remained fincerely attached to the interests of his family: But his fon-in-law, though bound to him by every tie of honour and gratitude, though he shared the power of the regency, though he had been invested by Warwic in all the honours and pa-

1 Comines, liv. iii. chap. 7.

trimony of the house of York, resolved to fulfil the CHAP. fecret engagements which he had formerly taken with his brother, and to support the interests of his own family: He deferted to the king in the nighttime, and carried over a body of 12,000 men along with him k. Warwic was now too far advanced to retreat; and as he rejected with distain all terms of peace offered him by Edward and Clarence, he was obliged to hazard a general engagement. battle was fought with obstinacy on both fides: The Barnet, two armies, in imitation of their leaders, displayed and death uncommon valour: And the victory remained long wic. undecided between them. But an accident threw the balance to the fide of the Yorkists. Edward's cognisance was a sun; that of Warwic a star with rays; and the mistiness of the morning rendering it difficult to distinguish them, the earl of Oxford, who fought on the fide of the Lancastrians, was by miftake attacked by his friends, and chafed off the field of battle 1. Warwic, contrary to his more usual practice, engaged that day on foot, resolving to show his army that he meant to share every fortune with them; and he was flain in the thickest of the engagement ": His brother underwent the same fate: And as Edward had iffued orders not to give any quarter, a great and undiffinguished flaughter was made in the pursuit. There fell about 1500 on the fide of the victors.

1471.

The April 14. Battle of of War-

THE fame day on which this decifive battle was fought, queen Margaret and her fon, now about eighteen years of age, and a young prince of great hopes, landed at Weymouth, supported by a small body of French forces. When this princess received intelligence of her husband's captivity, and of the defeat and death of the earl of Warwic, her courage, which had supported her under so many disaf-

k Grafton, p. 700. Comines, liv. iii. chap. 7. Leland's Collect. Habington, p. 449. m Comines, liv. iii. chap. 7. Hall, fol. 218. Leland's Collect. vol. ii. p. 505.

trous

C HAP. trous events, here quite left her; and she immediately foresaw all the dismal consequences of this calamity. At first she took fanctuary in the abbey of Beaulieu p; but being encouraged by the appearance of Tudor earl of Pembroke, and Courtney earl of Devonshire, of the lords Wenloc and St. John, with other men of rank, who exhorted her still to hope for fuccess, she resumed her former spirit, and determined to defend to the utmost the ruins of her fallen fortunes. She advanced through the counties of Devon, Somerset, and Glocester, increasing her army on each day's march; but was at last overtaken by the rapid and expeditious Edward at Teukesbury, on the banks of the Severne. The Lancastrians were here totally defeated: The earl of Devonshire and lord Wenloc were killed in the field: The duke of Somerfet, and about twenty other persons of distinction, having taken shelter in a church, were furrounded, dragged out, and immediately beheaded: About 3000 of their side fell in battle: And the army was entirely dispersed.

Battle of Teukefbury.
4th May.

QUEEN Margaret and her fon were taken prifoners, and brought to the king, who asked the prince, after an infulting manner, how he dared to invade his dominions? The young prince, more mindful of his high birth than of his present fortune, replied, that he came thither to claim his just inheritance. The ungenerous Edward, infenfible to pity, struck him on the face with his gauntlet; Murder of and the dukes of Clarence and Glocester, lord prince Ed- Hastings, and fir Thomas Gray, taking the blow as a fignal for farther violence, hurried the prince into the next apartment, and there dispatched him with their daggers 9. Margaret was thrown into the Tower: King Henry expired in that confinement a few days after the battle of Teukesbury; but whe-

ward. 21ft May.

> P Hall, fol. 219. Habington, p. 451. Grafton, p. 706. Polyd. 9 Hall, fol. 221. Habington, p. 453. Virg p. 528. lingshed, p. 688. Polyd. Virg. p. 530.

ther

XXII. 1471. Death of Henry VI.

ther he died a natural or violent death is uncertain. CHAP. It is pretended, and was generally believed, that the duke of Glocester killed him with his own hands ': But the universal odium which that prince has incurred, inclined perhaps the nation to aggravate his crimes without any fufficient authority. certain, however, that Henry's death was fudden; and though he laboured under an ill state of health, this circumstance, joined to the general manners of the age, gave a natural ground of fulpicion; which was rather increased than diminished by the exposing of his body to public view. That precaution ferved only to recal many fimilar instances in the English history, and to fugged the comparison.

ALL the hopes of the house of Lancaster seemed now to be utterly extinguished. Every legitimate prince of that family was dead: Almost every great leader of the party had perished in battle or on the fcaffold: The earl of Pembroke, who was levying forces in Wales, disbanded his army when he received intelligence of the battle of Teukesbury; and he fled into Britanny with his nephew, the young earl of Richmond'. The bastard of Falconberg, who had levied fome forces, and had advanced to London during Edward's absence, was repulsed: his men deferted him; he was taken prisoner, and immediately executed 1: And peace being now fully restored to the nation, a parliament was summoned, 6th Ost. which ratified, as usual, all the acts of the victor, and recognifed his legal authority.

But this prince, who had been fo firm, and active, and intrepid, during the course of adversity, was still unable to refist the allurements of a profperous fortune; and he wholly devoted himself,

r Comines. Hall, fol. 223. Grafton, p. 703. s Habington, p. 454. Polyd. Virg. p. 531. t Hollingfied, p. 689, 690, 693. Hist. Croyl. cont. p. 554.

CHAP. as before, to pleasure and amusement, after he became entirely mafter of his kingdom, and had no longer any enemy who could give him anxiety or alarm. He recovered, however, by this gay and inoffensive course of life, and by his easy familiar manners, that popularity which it is natural to imagine he had lost by the repeated cruelties exercifed upon his enemies; and the example also of his jovial festivity served to abate the former acrimony of faction among his subjects, and to reftore the focial disposition which had been so long interrupted between the opposite parties. All men feemed to be fully fatisfied with the prefent government; and the memory of past calamities served only to impress the people more strongly with a fense of their allegiance, and with the resolution of never incurring any more the hazard of renewing fuch direful scenes.

But while the king was thus indulging himself in pleasure, he was roused from his lethargy by a prospect of foreign conquests, which it is probable his defire of popularity, more than the spirit of ambition, had made him covet. Though he deemed himself little beholden to the duke of Burgundy for the reception which that prince had given him during his exile ", the political interests of their states maintained still a close connexion between them; and they agreed to unite their arms in making a powerful invafion on France. A league was formed, in which Edward stipulated to pass the seas with an army exceeding 10,000 men, and to invade the French territories: Charles promised to join him with all his forces: The king was to challenge the crown of France, and to obtain at least the provinces of Normandy and Guienne: The duke was to acquire Champaigne and some other territories, and

253

to free all his dominions from the burthen of ho- C HAP. mage to the crown of France: And neither party was to make peace without the confent of the other w. They were the more encouraged to hope for fuccess from this league, as the count of St. Pol, constable of France, who was master of St. Quintin, and other towns on the Somme, had fecretly promifed to join them; and there were also hopes of engaging the duke of Britanny to enter into the confederacy.

THE prospect of a French war was always a sure means of making the parliament open their purses, as far as the habits of that age would permit. They voted the king a tenth of rents, or two shillings in the pound; which must have been very inaccurately levied, fince it produced only 31,460 pounds; and they added to this supply a whole fifteenth, and three quarters of another \*: But as the king deemed thefe fums still unequal to the undertaking, he attempted to levy money by way of benevolence; a kind of exaction which, except during the reigns of Henry III. and Richard II. had not been much practifed in former times, and which, though the confent of the parties was pretended to be gained, could not be deemed entirely voluntary y. The clauses annexed to the parliamentary grant show sufficiently the spirit of the nation in this respect. The money levied by the fifteenth was not to be put into the king's hands, but to be kept in religious houses; and if the expedition into France should not take place, it was immediately to be refunded to the people. After these grants the parliament was diffolved, which had fitten near two years and a half, and had undergone feveral prorogations; a practice not very usual at that time in England.

w Rymer, vol. xi. p. 806, 807, 808, &c. x Cotton, p. 606. 100. Hist. Croyl cont. p. 558. Hall, fol. 226. Habington, p. 461. Grafton, p. 719. Fabian, fol. 221.

C H A P.
XXII

1475.
Invafion of
France.

THE king passed over to Calais with an army of 1500 men at arms, and 15,000 archers; attended by all the chief nobility of England, who, prognosticating future successes from the past, were eager to appear on this great theatre of honour z. But all their fanguine hopes were damped when they found, on entering the French territories, that neither did the constable open his gates to them, nor the duke of Burgundy bring them the smallest assistance. That prince, transported by his ardent temper, had carried all his armies to a great distance, and had employed them in wars on the frontiers of Germany, and against the duke of Lorrain: And though he came in person to Edward, and endeavoured to apologife for this breach of treaty, there was no prospect that they would be able this campaign to make a conjunction with the English. This circumstance gave great disgust to the king, and inclined him to hearken to those advances which Lewis continually made him for an accommodation.

THAT monarch, more fwayed by political views than by the point of honour, deemed no fubmissions too mean, which might free him from enemies who had proved so formidable to his predecessors, and who, united to so many other enemies, might still shake the well-established government of France. It appears from Comines, that discipline was at this time very imperfect among the English; and that their civil wars, though long continued, yet being always decided by hasty battles, had still left them ignorant of the improvements which the military art was beginning to receive upon the continent. But as Lewis was sensible that the warlike genius of the

<sup>2</sup> Comines, liv. iv. chap. 5. This author fays (chap. 11.) that the king artfully brought over fome of the richest of his subjects, who he knew would be soon tired of the war, and would promote all proposals of peace, which he foresaw would be soon necessary.

<sup>2</sup> Comines, liv. iv. chap. 5.

people would foon render them excellent foldiers, he CHAP. was far from despising them for their present want of experience; and he employed all his art to detach them from the alliance of Burgundy. When Edward fent him a herald to claim the crown of France, and to carry him a defiance in cafe of refufal, fo far from answering to this bravado in like haughty terms, he replied with great temper, and even made the herald a confiderable present b: He took afterwards an opportunity of fending a herald to the English camp; and having given him directions to apply to the lords Stanley and Howard, who he heard were friends to peace, he defired the good offices of these 29th Aug. noblemen in promoting an accommodation with their master '. As Edward was now fallen into like dispositions, a truce was soon concluded on terms more advantageous than honourable to Lewis. He stipulated to pay Edward immediately 75,000 crowns, on condition that he should withdraw his army from France, and promised to pay him 50,000 crowns a year during their joint lives: It was added, that Pecquigni, the dauphin when of age should marry Edward's eldest daughter d. In order to ratify this treaty, the two monarchs agreed to have a personal interview; and for that purpose suitable preparations were made at Pecquigni, near Amiens. A close rail was drawn across a bridge in that place, with no larger intervals than would allow the arm to pass; a precaution against a smilar accident to that which befel the duke of Burgundy in his conference with the dauphin at Montereau. Edward and Lewis came to the opposite sides; conferred privately together; and having confirmed their friendship, and interchanged many mutual civilities, they foon after parted ...

1475.

b Comines, liv.iv. chap. 5. Hall, fol. 227. chap. 7. d Rymer, vol. xii. p. 17. chap. 9.

c Comines, liv. iv.

e Comines, liv. iv.

## HISTORY OF ENGLAND.

C H A P. XXII.

Lewis was anxious not only to gain the king's friendship, but also that of the nation, and of all the confiderable perfons in the English court. He bestowed pensions, to the amount of 16 000 crowns a year, on feveral of the king's favourites; on lord Haftings two thousand crowns; on lord Howard and others in proportion; and these great ministers were not ashamed thus to receive wages from a foreign prince f. As the two armies, after the conclusion of the truce, remained some time in the neighbourhood of each other, the English were not only admitted freely into Amiens, where Lewis refided, but had also their charges defrayed, and had wine and victuals furnished them in every inn, without any payment being demanded. They flocked thither in fuch multitudes, that once above nine thousand of them were in the town, and they might have made themselves masters of the king's person; but Lewis concluding, from their jovial and lift lute manner of living, that they had no bad intentions, was careful not to betray the least fign of fear or jealousy. And when Edward, informed of this diforder, defired him to shut the gates against him, he replied, that he would never agree to exclude the English from the place where he refided; but that Edward, if he pleased, might recal them, and place his own officers at the gates of Amiens to prevent their returning s.

Lewis's defire of confirming a mutual amity with England engaged him even to make imprudent advances, which it cost him afterwards some pains to evade. In the conference at Pecquigni, he had said to Edward, that he wished to have a visit from him at Paris; that he would there endeavour to amuse him with the ladies; and that, in case any offences were then committed, he would assign him the cardinal of Bourbon for confessor, who from fellow-feeling would not be over and above severe in the penances

f Hall, fol. 235. Comines, liv. iv. chap. 9. Hall, fol. 233.

which

which he would enjoin. This hint made deeper CHAP. impression than Lewis intended. Lord Howard, who accompanied him back to Amiens, told him, in confidence, that, if he were fo disposed, it would not be impossible to persuade Edward to take a journey with him to Paris, where they might make merry together. Lewis pretended at first not to hear the offer; but, on Howard's repeating it, he expressed his concern that his wars with the duke of Burgundy would not permit him to attend his royal guest, and do him the honours he intended. "Edward," faid he, privately to Comines, " is a very handsome and a very amorous prince: " Some lady at Paris may like him as well as he " shall do her; and may invite him to return in

" another manner. It is better that the fea be be-

This treaty did very little honour to either of these monarchs: It discovered the imprudence of Edward, who had taken his measures so ill with his allies as to be obliged, after fuch an expensive armament, to return without making any acquisitions adequate to it: It showed the want of dignity in Lewis, who, rather than run the hazard of a battle, agreed to subject his kingdom to a tribute, and thus acknowledge the superiority of a neighbouring prince, possessed of less power and territory than himself. But, as Lewis made interest the sole test of honour, he thought that all the advantages of the treaty were on his fide, and that he had overreached Edward, by fending him out of France on fuch eafy terms. For this reason he was very solicitous to conceal his triumph; and he strictly enjoined his courtiers never to show the English the least fign of mockery or derision. But he did not himself very carefully observe so prudent a rule: He could not forbear, one day, in the joy of his

cc tween us h."

h Comines, liv. iv. chap. 10. Habington, p. 469.

C H A P, heart, throwing out some raillery on the easy simplicity of Edward and his council; when he perceived that he was overheard by a Gascon who had fettled in England. He was immediately fenfible of his indifcretion; fent a message to the gentleman; and offered him fuch advantages in his own country, as engaged him to remain in France. It is but just, faid he, that I pay the penalty of my talkativenessi.

THE most honourable part of Lewis's treaty with Edward was the stipulation for the liberty of queen Margaret, who, though after the death of her hufband and fon, she could no longer be formidable to government, was still detained in custody by Edward. Lewis paid fifty thousand crowns for her ransom; and that princess, who had been so active on the stage of the world, and who had experienced fuch a variety of fortune, passed the remainder of her days in tranquillity and privacy, till the year 1482, when she died: An admirable princess, but more illustrious by her undaunted spirit in adversity, than by her moderation in prosperity. She feems neither to have enjoyed the virtues, nor been subject to the weaknesses, of her sex; and was as much tainted with the ferocity as endowed with the courage of that barbarous age in which she lived.

Though Edward had so little reason to be satisfied with the conduct of the duke of Burgundy, he referved to that prince a power of acceding to the treaty of Pecquigni: But Charles, when the offer was made him, haughtily replied, that he was able to support himself without the assistance of England, and that he would make no peace with Lewis till three months after Edward's return into his own country. This prince possessed all the ambition and courage of a conqueror; but being defective in policy and prudence, qualities no less effential, he was

i Comines, liv. iii chap. 10.

unfortunate in all his enterprises, and perished at CHAP. last in battle against the Swifs k; a people whom he despised, and who, though brave and free, had hitherto been in a manner overlooked in the general fystem of Europe. This event, which happened in the year 1477, produced a great alteration in the views of all the princes, and was attended with consequences which were felt for many generations. Charles left only one daughter, Mary, by his first wife; and this princefs being heir of his opulent and extensive dominions, was courted by all the potentates of Christendom, who contended for the possession of so rich a prize. Lewis, the head of her family, might, by a proper application, have obtained this match for the dauphin, and have thereby united to the crown of France all the provinces of the Low Countries, together with Burgundy, Artois, and Picardy; which would at once have rendered his kingdom an overmatch for all its neighbours. But a man wholly interested is as rare as one entirely endowed with the opposite quality; and Lewis, though impregnable to all the fentiments of generosity and friendship, was, on this occasion, carried from the road of true policy by the passions of animosity and revenge. He had imbibed so deep a hatred to the house of Burgundy, that he rather chose to subdue the princess by arms, than unite her to his family by marriage: He conquered the duchy of Burgundy and that part of Picardy, which had been ceded to Philip the Good by the treaty of Arras: But he thereby forced the states of the Netherlands to bestow their sovereign in marriage on Maximilian of Austria, son of the emperor Frederic, from whom they looked for protection in their prefent distresses: And by these means France lost the opportunity, which she never could recal, of making that important acquisition of power and territory.

C H Á P. XXII.

During this interesting criss. Edward was no less defective in policy, and was no less actuated by private passions, unworthy of a sovereign and a statesman. Jealousy of his brother Clarence had caused him to neglect the advances which were made of marrying that prince, now a widower, to the heirefs of Burgundy'; and he fent her propofals of espousing Anthony earl of Rivers; brother to his queen, who still retained an entire ascendant over him. But the match was rejected with difdain "; and Edward, refenting this treatment of his brother-in-law, permitted France to proceed without interruption in her conquests over his defenceless ally. Any pretence sufficed him for abandoning himself entirely to indolence and pleasure, which were now become his ruling passions. The only object which divided his attention, was the improving of the public revenue, which had been dilapidated by the necessities or negligence of his predeceffors; and fome of his expedients for that purpofe, though unknown to us, were deemed, during the time, oppressive to the people n. The detail of private wrongs naturally escapes the notice of history; but an act of tyranny, of which Edward was guilty in his own family, has been taken notice of by all writers, and has met with general and deferved censure.

Trial and execution of the duke Clarence.

The duke of Clarence, by all his fervices in deferting Warwic, had never been able to regain the king's friendship, which he had forfeited by his former confederacy with that nobleman. He was still regarded at court as a man of a dangerous and a fickle character; and the imprudent openness and violence of his temper, though it rendered him much less dangerous, tended extremely to multiply his enemies, and to incense them against him.

" Mid. 241. Hift. Croyl. cont p 559.

Among

<sup>1</sup> Polyd. Virg. Hall, fol. 240. Hollingshed, p. 703. Habington, p. 474. Grafton, p. 742. in Hall, fol. 240.

Among others, he had had the misfortune to give CHAP. displeasure to the queen herself, as well as to his brother the duke of Glocester, a prince of the deepest policy, of the most unrelenting ambition, and the least scrupulous in the means which he employed for the attainment of his ends. A combination between these potent adversaries being secretly formed against Clarence, it was determined to begin by attacking his friends; in hopes, that if he patiently endured this injury, his pufillanimity would dishonour him in the eyes of the public; if he made refistance, and expressed resentment, his passion would betray him into measures which might give them advantages against him. The king, hunting one day in the park of Thomas Burdet of Arrow, in Warwichire, had killed a white buck, which was a great favourite of the owner; and Burdet, vexed at the lofs, broke into a passion, and wished the horns of the deer in the belly of the person who had advised the king to commit that infult upon him. This natural expression of resentment, which would have been overlooked or forgotten had it fallen from any other person, was rendered criminal and capital in that gentleman, by the friendship in which he had the misfortune to live with the duke of Clarence: He was tried for his life; the judges and jury were found fervile enough to condemn him; and he was publicly beheaded at Tyburn for this pretended offence°. About the same time, one John Stacey an ecclefiaftic, much connected with the duke, as well as with Burdet, was exposed to a like iniquitous and barbarous profecution. This clergyman, being more learned in mathematics and aftronomy than was usual in that age, lay under the imputation of necromancy with the ignorant vulgar; and the court laid hold of this popular rumour to effect his destruction. He was brought to his trial

O Habington, p. 475. Hollingshed, p. 703. Sir Thomas More in Kennet, F. 498.

C H A P. for that imaginary crime; many of the greatest peers countenanced the profecution by their prefence; he was condemned, put to the torture, and executed P.

> THE duke of Clarence was alarmed when he found these acts of tyranny exercised on all around him: He reflected on the fate of the good duke of Glocester in the last reign, who, after seeing the most infamous pretences employed for the destruction of his nearest connexions, at last fell himself a victim to the vengeance of his enemies. But Clarence, instead of securing his own life against the present danger by filence and referve, was open and loud in justifying the innocence of his friends, and in exclaiming against the iniquity of their prosecutors. The king, highly offended with his freedom, or using that pretence against him, committed him to the Tower 9, fummoned a parliament, and tried him for his life before the house of peers, the supreme tribunal of the nation.

soth Jan.

THE duke was accused of arraigning public justice, by maintaining the innocence of men who had been condemned in courts of judicature; and of inveighing against the iniquity of the king, who had given orders for their profecution. Many rash expressions were imputed to him, and some too reslecting on Edward's legitimacy; but he was not accused of any overt act of treason; and even the truth of these speeches may be doubted of, since the liberty of judgment was taken from the court, by the king's appearing personally as his brother's accuser's, and pleading the cause against him. But a sentence of condemnation, even when this extraordinary circumstance had not place, was a necessary confequence in those times, of any prosecution by the court or the prevailing party; and the duke of Clarence was pronounced guilty by the peers. The house of commons were no less slavish and unjust:

s Hift. Croyl, cont. p. 562. 5 Stowe, p. 430.

P Hift. Croyl. cont. p. 561. 9 Ibid. p. 562.

They both petitioned for the execution of the duke. CHAP. and afterwards passed a bill of attainder against him', The measures of the parliament, during that age, furnish us with examples of a strange contrast of freedom and fervility: They scruple to grant, and fometimes refuse, to the king the smallest supplies, the most necessary for the support of government, even the most necessary for the maintenance of wars, for which the nation, as well as the parliament itself, expressed great fonduess: But they never scruple to concur in the most flagrant act of injustice or tyranny, which falls on any individual, however diftinguished by birth or merit. These maxims, fo ungenerous, fo opposite to all principles of good government, fo contrary to the practice of present parliaments, are very remarkable in all the transactions of the English history, for more than a century after the period in which we are now engaged,

THE only favour which the king granted his bro- 18th Feb. ther, after his condemnation, was to leave him the choice of his death; and he was privately drowned in a butt of malmefey in the Tower: A whimfical choice, which implies that he had an extraordinary passion for that liquor. The duke left two children by the elder daughter of the earl of Warwic; a fon, created an earl by his grandfather's title, and a daughter, afterwards countels of Salisbury. Both this prince and princess were also unfortunate in their end, and died a violent death; a fate which for many years attended almost all the descendants of the royal blood in England. There prevails a report, that a chief fource of the violent profecution of the duke of Clarence, whose name was George, was a current prophecy, that the king's fon should be murdered by one, the initial letter of whose name was G". It is not impossible but, in those ignorant

<sup>\$</sup> Stowe, p. 430. Hist. Croyl. cont. p. 562.

<sup>&</sup>quot; Hall, fol. 239. Hollingshed, p. 703. Grafton, p. 741. Polyd. Virg. p. 537. Sir Thomas More in Kennet, p. 497.

C H A P. times, fuch a filly reason might have some influence: But it is more probable that the whole story is the invention of a subsequent period, and founded on the murder of these children by the duke of Glocester. Comines remarks, that, at that time, the English never were without some superstitious prophecy or other, by which they accounted for every event.

ALL the glories of Edward's reign terminated with the civil wars; where his laurels too were extremely fullied with blood, violence, and cruelty. His fpirit feems afterwards to have been funk in indolence and pleasure, or his measures were frustrated by imprudence and the want of forelight. There was no object on which he was more intent than to have all his daughters fettled by splendid marriages, though most of these princesses were yet in their infancy. and though the completion of his views, it was obvious, must depend on numberless accidents, which were impossible to be foreseen or prevented. His eldest daughter, Elizabeth, was contracted to the dauphin; his fecond, Cicely, to the eldest fon of James III. king of Scotland; his third, Anne, to Philip only fon of Maximilian and the duchefs of Burgundy; his fourth, Catharine, to John fon and heir to Ferdinand king of Arragon, and Isabella queen of Castile w. None of these projected marriages took place; and the king himself faw, in his life time, the rupture of the first, that with the dauphin, for which he had always discovered a peculiar fondness. Lewis, who paid no regard to treaties or engagements, found his advantage in contracting the dauphin to the princess Margaret daughter of Maximilian; and the king, notwithstanding his indolence, prepared to revenge the indignity. The French monarch, eminent for prudence as well as perfidy, endeavoured to guard against the blow; and

11462

1482

by a proper distribution of presents in the court of C II A.P. Scotland, he incited James to make war upon England. This prince, who lived on bad terms with his own nobility, and whose force was very unequal to the enterprife, levied an army; but when he was ready to enter England, the barons, confpiring against his favourites, put them to death without trial; and the army prefently disbanded. The duke of Glocester, attended by the duke of Albany, James's brother, who had been banished his country, entered Scotland at the head of an army, took Berwic, and obliged the Scots to accept of a peace, by which they refigned that fortrefs to Edward. This fuccess emboldened the king to think more feriously of a French war; but while he was making preparations for that enterprife, he was feized with a distemper, of which he expired in the forty-second of April. year of his age, and the twenty-third of his reign: A prince more splendid and showy, than either pru- of Eddent or virtuous; brave, though cruel; addicted to pleafure, though capable of activity in great emergencies; and less fitted to prevent ills by wife precautions, than to remedy them after they took place, by his vigour and enterprise. Besides five daughters, this king left two fons; Edward prince of Wales, his fucceffor, then in his thirteenth year, and Richard duke of York in his ninth.

character ward IV.

#### CHAP. XXIII.

## EDWARD V. and RICHARD III.

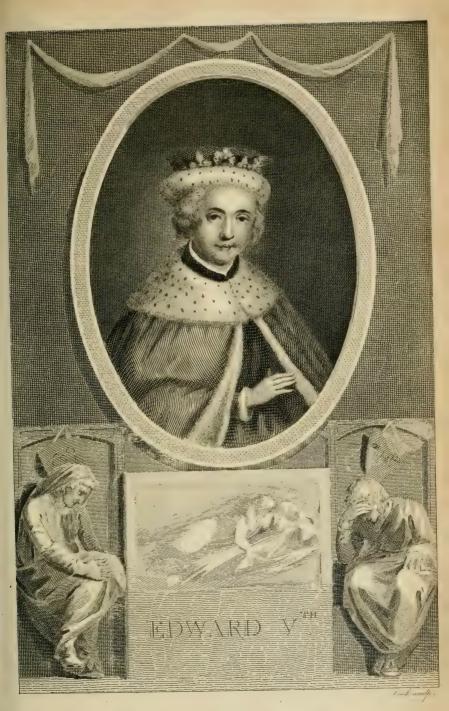
Edward V.—State of the court—The earl of Rivers arrested—Duke of Glocester protector—Execution of lord Hastings—The protector aims at the crown—Assumes the crown—Murder of Edward V. and of the duke of York—Richard III.—Duke of Buckingham discontented—The earl of Richmond—Buckingham executed—Invasion by the earl of Richmond—Battle of Bosworth—Death and character of Richard III.

### EDWARD V.

C H A P.
XXIII.

1483.
State of
the court.

DURING the later years of Edward IV. the nation having, in a great measure, forgotten the bloody feuds between the two roses, and peaceably acquiescing in the established government, was agitated only by some court-intrigues, which, being restrained by the authority of the king, seemed nowise to endanger the public tranquillity. These intrigues arose from the perpetual rivalship between two parties; one consisting of the queen and her relations, particularly the earl of Rivers her brother, and the marquis of Dorset her son; the other composed of the ancient nobility, who envied the sudden growth and unlimited credit of that aspiring family. At the head of this latter party was the duke of Buckingham, a man of very noble birth,



Subbohed Sugart 1. 70, by the mas Culle in the Mound !-



of ample possessions, of great alliances, of shining CHAP. parts; who, though he had married the queen's fifter, was too haughty to act in subserviency to her inclinations, and aimed rather at maintaining an independent influence and authority. Lord Hastings, the chamberlain, was another leader of the fame party; and as this nobleman had, by his bravery and activity, as well as by his approved fidelity, acquired the confidence and favour of his master, he had been able, though with fome difficulty, to fupport himself against the credit of the queen. The lords Howard and Stanley maintained a connexion with these two noblemen, and brought a considerable accession of influence and reputation to their party. All the other barons, who had no particular dependance on the queen, adhered to the same interest; and the people in general, from their natural envy against the prevailing power, bore great favour to the cause of these noblemen.

But Edward knew that, though he himself had been able to overawe those rival factions, many diforders might arise from their contests during the minority of his ion; and he therefore took care, in his last illness, to summon together teveral of the leaders on both fides, and, by composing their ancient quarrels, to provide, as far as possible, for the future tranquillity of the government. After expressing his intentions that his brother the duke of Glocester, then absent in the north, should be entrusted with the regency, he recommended to them peace and unanimity during the tender years of his fon; represented to them the dangers which must attend the continuance of their animofities; and engaged them to embrace each other with all the appearance of the most cordial reconciliation. But this temporary or feigned agreement lasted no longer than the king's life. He had no fooner expired, than the jealousies of the parties broke out afresh: And each of them applied, by separate meflages

CHAP messages, to the duke of Glocester, and endeaxxIII. voured to acquire his favour and friendship.

This prince, during his brother's reign, had endeavoured to live on good terms with both parties; and his high birth, his extensive abilities, and his great fervices, had enabled him to support himself without falling into a dependance on either. But the new fituation of affairs, when the supreme power was devolved upon him, immediately changed his measures; and he secretly determined to preserve no longer that neutrality which he had hitherto maintained. His exorbitant ambition, unrestrained by any principle either of justice or humanity, made him carry his views to the possession of the crown itself: and as this object could not be attained without the ruin of the queen and her family, he fell, without hefitation, into concert with the opposite party. But being fenfible, that the most profound diffimulation was requifite for effecting his criminal purposes, he redoubled his professions of zeal and attachment to that princess; and he gained such credit with her, as to influence her conduct in a point, which, as it was of the utmost importance. was violently disputed between the opposite factions.

The young king, at the time of his father's death, refided in the castle of Ludlow, on the borders of Wales; whither he had been sent, that the influence of his presence might overawe the Welsh, and restore the tranquillity of that country, which had been disturbed by some late commotions. His person was committed to the care of his uncle the earl of Rivers, the most accomplished nobleman in England, who, having united an uncommon taste for literature, to great abilities in business, and valour in the field, was entitled, by his talents, still

y This nobleman first introduced the noble art of printing into England. Caxton was recommended by him to the patronage of Edward IV. See Catalogue of Royal and Noble Authors.

more than by nearness of blood, to direct the edu. CHAP. cation of the young monarch. The queen, anxious to preserve that ascendant over her son, which she had long maintained over her husband, wrote to the earl of Rivers, that he should levy a body of forces, in order to escort the king to London, to protect him during his coronation, and to keep him from falling into the hands of their enemies. The oppofite faction, fenfible that Edward was now of an age when great advantages could be made of his name and countenance, and was approaching to the age when he would be legally intitled to exert in person his authority, forefaw, that the tendency of this measure was to perpetuate their subjection under their rivals; and they vehemently opposed a resolution which they represented as the fignal for renewing a civil war in the kingdom. Lord Hastings threatened to depart instantly to his government of Calais 2: The other nobles feemed resolute to oppose force by force: And as the duke of Glocester, on pretence of pacifying the quarrel, had declared against all appearance of an armed power, which might be dangerous, and was nowife necessary, the queen, trusting to the fincerity of his friendship, and overawed by so violent an opposition, recalled her orders to her brother, and defired him to bring up no greater retinue than should be necessary to support the state and dignity of the young sovereign.

THE duke of Glocester, mean while, set out from York, attended by a numerous train of the northern gentry. When he reached Northampton, he was joined by the duke of Buckingham, who was also attended by a splendid retinue; and as he heard that the king was hourly expected on that road, he refolved to await his arrival, under colour of conducting him thence in perfon to London. The earl of Rivers, apprehensive that the place would be too

<sup>7</sup> Hift. Croyl. cont. p. 564, 565.

<sup>2</sup> Sir T. More, p. 483.

XXIII. 1483.

C H A P. narrow to contain fo many attendants, fent his pupil forward by another road to Stony-Stratford; and came himself to Northampton, in order to apologise for this measure, and to pay his respects to the duke of Glocester. He was received with the greatest appearance of cordiality: He passed the evening in an amicable manner with Glocester and Buckingham: He proceeded on the road with them next day to join the king: But as he was entering Stony-Stratford, he was arrested by orders from the duke of Glocester b: Sir Richard Grav, one of the queen's fons, was at the fame time put under a guard, together with fir Thomas Vaughan, who possessed a considerable office in the king's household; and all the prisoners were instantly conducted to Pomfret. Glocester approached the young prince with the greatest demonstrations of respect: and endeavoured to fatisfy him with regard to the violence committed on his uncle and brother: But Edward, much attached to these near relations, by whom he had been tenderly educated, was not fuch a master of dissimulation as to conceal his displeafure c.

The earl of Rivers arrested. If May.

4th May.

THE people, however, were extremely rejoiced at this revolution; and the duke was received in London with the loudest acclamations: But the queen no fooner received intelligence of her brother's imprisonment, than she foresaw that Glocester's violence would not stop there, and that her own ruin, if not that of all her children, was finally determined. She therefore fled into the fanctuary of Westminster, attended by the marquis of Dorset; and she carried thither the five princesses, together with the duke of York d. She trusted, that the ecclefiaftical privileges which had formerly, during the total ruin of her husband and family, given her protection against the fury of the Lancastrian fac-

b Hist. Croyl. cont. p. 564, 565.

c Sir T. More, p. 484,

Hift, Croyl, cont. p. 565.

tion, would not now be violated by her brother-in- CHAP. law, while her fon was on the throne; and she resolved to await there the return of better fortune. But Glocester, anxious to have the duke of York in his power, proposed to take him by force from the fanctuary; and he represented to the privy-council. both the indignity put upon the government by the queen's ill-grounded apprehensions, and the necesfity of the young prince's appearance at the ensuing coronation of his brother. It was farther urged. that ecclefiaftical privileges were originally intended only to give protection to unhappy men perfecuted for their debts or crimes; and were entirely useless to a person who, by reason of his tender age, could lie under the burden of neither, and who, for the fame reason, was utterly incapable of claiming security from any fanctuary. But the two archbishops. cardinal Bourchier the primate and Rotherham archbishop of York, protesting against the facrilege of this measure; it was agreed, that they should first endeavour to bring the queen to compliance by perfuafion, before any violence should be employed against her. These prelates were persons of known integrity and honour; and being themselves entirely perfuaded of the duke's good intentions, they employed every argument, accompanied with earnest entreaties, exhortations, and affurances, to bring her over to the same opinion. She long continued obstinate, and infisted, that the duke of York, by living in the fanctuary, was not only fecure himfelf, but gave fecurity to the king, whose life no one would dare to attempt, while his fuccessor and avenger remained in fafety. But finding that none fupported her in these sentiments, and that force, in case of refusal, was threatened by the council, she at last complied, and produced her son to the two prelates. She was here on a fudden struck with a kind of prefage of his future fate: She tenderly embraced him; she bedewed him with her

XXIII. I483.

CHAP, tears; and bidding him an eternal adieu, delivered him, with many expressions of regret and reluctance,

into their cuttody.

Duke of Clocefter protector.

THE duke of Glocester, being the nearest male of the royal family capable of exercifing the government, feemed intitled, by the cultoms of the realm, to the office of protector; and the council, not waiting for the confent of parliament, made no fcruple of investing him with that high dignity f. The general prejudice entertained by the nobility against the queen and her kindred, occasioned this precipitation and irregularity; and no one forefaw any danger to the fuccession, much less to the lives of the young princes, from a measure so obvious and so natural. Besides that the duke had hitherto been able to cover, by the most profound dissimulation, his fierce and favage nature; the numerous iffue of Edward, together with the two children of Clarence. feemed to be an eternal obstacle to his ambition; and it appeared equally impracticable for him to destroy fo many persons possessed of a preferable title, and imprudent to exclude them. But a man who had abandoned all principles of honour and humanity, was foon carried by his predominant passion beyond the reach of fear or precaution; and Glocefter, having fo far succeeded in his views, no longer hesitated in removing the other obstructions which lay between him and the throne. The death of the earl of Rivers, and of the other prisoners detained in Pomfret, was first determined; and he eafily obtained the confent of the duke of Buckingham, as well as of lord Hastings, to this violent and fanguinary measure. However easy it was in those times, to procure a sentence against the most innocent person, it appeared still more easy to dispatch an enemy, without any trial or form of procefs; and orders were accordingly iffued to fir Richard Ratcliffe, a proper instrument in the hands

of this tyrant, to cut off the heads of the prisoners. CHAP. The protector then affailed the fidelity of Buckingham by all the arguments capable of fwaying a vicious mind, which knew no motive of action but interest and ambition. He represented, that the execution of persons so nearly related to the king, whom that prince so openly professed to love, and whose fate he so much resented, would never pass unpunished; and all the actors in that scene were bound in prudence to prevent the effects of his future vengeance: That it would be impossible to keep the queen for ever at a distance from her son, and equally impossible to prevent her from instilling into his tender mind the thoughts of retaliating, by like executions, the fanguinary infults committed on her family: That the only method of obviating these mischiefs was to put the sceptre in the hands of a man of whose friendship the duke might be assured, and whose years and experience taught him to pay respect to merit, and to the rights of ancient nobility: And that the same necessity which had carried them so far in refisting the usurpation of these intruders, must justify them in attempting farther innovations, and in making, by national confent, a new fettlement of the fuccession. To these reasons he added the offers of great private advantages to the duke of Buckingham; and he eafily obtained from him a promife of fupporting him in all his enterprifes.

THE duke of Glocester, knowing the importance of gaining lord Hastings, sounded at a distance his fentiments, by means of Catefby, a lawyer, who lived in great intimacy with that nobleman; but found him impregnable in his allegiance and fidelity to the children of Edward, who had ever honoured him with his friendship 8. He faw, therefore, that there were no longer any measures to be kept with him; and he determined to ruin utterly the man whom he XXIII.

C H A P. despaired of engaging to concur in his usurpation. On the very day when Rivers, Gray, and Vaughan were executed, or rather murdered at Pomfret, by 13th June the advice of Hastings, the protector summoned a council in the Tower; whither that nobleman, fufpecting no defign against him, repaired without hefitation. The duke of Glocester was capable of committing the most bloody and treacherous murders with the utmost coolness and indifference. On taking his place at the council-table, he appeared in the easiest and most jovial humour imaginable. He feemed to indulge himself in familiar conversation with the counfellors, before they should enter on business; and having paid some compliments to Morton bishop of Ely, on the good and early strawberries which he raifed in his garden at Holborn, he begged the favour of having a dish of them, which that prelate immediately dispatched a servant to bring to him. The protector then left the council. as if called away by fome other business; but soon after returning with an angry and inflamed countenance, he asked them what punishment those deferved that had plotted against his life, who was fo nearly related to the king, and was entrusted with the administration of government? Hastings replied, that they merited the punishment of traitors. These traitors, cried the protector, are the forcerefs, my brother's wife, and Jane Shore his mistress, with others their affociates: See to what a condition they have reduced me by their incantations and witchcraft: Upon which he laid bare his arm, all shrivelled and decayed. But the counfellors, who knew that this infirmity had attended him from his birth, looked on each other with amazement; and above all lord Hastings, who, as he had since Edward's death engaged in an intrigue with Jane Shore h, was naturally anxious concerning the iffue of these extraordi-

h See note [K] at the end of the volume.

I483.

nary proceedings. Certainly, my lord, faid he, if CHAP. they be guilty of these crimes they deserve the severest punishment. And do you reply to me, exclaimed the protector, with your ifs and your ands? You are the chief abettor of that witch Shore: You are yourself a traitor: And I swear by St. Paul, that I will not dine before your head be brought me. He struck the table with his hand: Armed men rushed in at the fignal: The counfellors were thrown into the utmost consternation: And one of the guards, as if by accident or mistake, aimed a blow with a poll-ax at ford Stanley, who, aware of the danger, flunk under the table; and though he faved his life, received a severe wound in the head in the protector's prefence. Hastings was seized, was hurried away, and Execution instantly beheaded on a timber-log which lay in the of lord court of the Tower i. Two hours after, a proclamation, well penned and fairly written, was read to the citizens of London, enumerating his offences, and apologifing to them, from the fuddenness of the discovery, for the sudden execution of that nobleman, who was very popular among them: But the faying of a merchant was much talked of on the occasion, who remarked, that the proclamation was certainly drawn by the spirit of prophecy k.

Lord Stanley, the archbishop of York, the bishop of Ely, and other counsellors, were committed prifoners in different chambers of the Tower: And the protector, in order to carry on the farce of his accufations, ordered the goods of Jane Shore to be feized; and he fummoned her to answer before the council for forcery and witchcraft. But as no proofs which could be received even in that ignorant age were produced against her, he directed her to be tried in the fpiritual court for her adulteries and lewdness; and the did penance in a white sheet at St. Paul's, before the whole people. This lady was born of reputable

Haftings.

4 Hist. Croyl. cont. p. 566.

k Sir T. More, p. 496.

XXIII. 1483.

C HAP. parents in London, was well educated, and married to a fubstantial citizen; but unhappily, views of interest, more than the maid's inclinations, had been confulted in the match, and her mind, though framed for virtue, had proved unable to refift the allurements of Edward, who folicited her favours. But while feduced from her duty by this gay and amorous monarch, she still made herself respectable by her other virtues; and the afcendant which her charms and vivacity long maintained over him, was all employed in acts of beneficence and humanity. She was still forward to oppose calumny, to protect the oppressed, to relieve the indigent; and her good offices, the genuine dictates of her heart, never waited the folicitation of prefents, or the hopes of reciprocal fervices. But she lived not only to feel the bitterness of shame imposed on her by this tyrant. but to experience, in old age and poverty, the ingratitude of those courtiers who had long folicited her friendship, and been protected by her credit. No one, among the great multitudes whom she had obliged, had the humanity to bring her confolation or relief: She languished out her life in folitude and indigence: And amidst a court inured to the most atrocious crimes, the frailties of this woman justified all violations of friendship towards her, and all neglect of former obligations.

The protector aim- at the Crown.

THESE acts of violence, exercifed against all the nearest connexions of the late king, prognosticated the feverest fate to his defenceless children; and after the murder of Hastings, the protector no longer made a fecret of his intentions to usurp the crown. The licentious life of Edward, who was not restrained in his pleafures either by honour or prudence, afforded a pretence for declaring his marriage with the queen invalid, and all his posterity illegitimate. was afferted, that before espousing the lady Elizabeth Gray, he had paid court to the lady Eleanor Talbot, daughter of the earl of Shrewfbury; and being re-

pulsed

pulfed by the virtue of that lady, he was obliged, ere CHAP. he could gratify his defires, to confent to a private marriage, without any witnesses, by Stillington bishop of Bath, who afterwards divulged the fecret !. It was also maintained, that the act of attainder passed against the duke of Clarence had virtually incapacitated his children from fucceeding to the crown; and these two families being set aside, the protector remained the only true and legitimate heir of the house of York. But as it would be difficult, if not impossible, to prove the preceding marriage of the late king; and as the rule, which excludes the heirs of an attainted blood from private succesfions, was never extended to the crown; the protector resolved to make use of another plea still more shameful and scandalous. His partisans were taught to maintain, that both Edward IV. and the duke of Clarence were illegitimate; that the duchefs of York had received different lovers into her bed, who were the fathers of these children; that their resemblance to those gallants was a sufficient proof of their spurious birth; and that the duke of Glocester alone, of all her fons, appeared by his features and countenance to be the true offspring of the duke of York. Nothing can be imagined more impudent than this affertion, which threw fo foul an imputation on his own mother, a princess of irreproachable virtue, and then alive; yet the place chosen for first promulgating it was the pulpit, before a large congregation, and in the protector's prefence. Dr. Shaw 22d June. was appointed to preach in St. Paul's; and having chosen this passage for his text, Bastard slips shall not thrive; he enlarged on all the topics which could discredit the birth of Edward IV. the duke of Clarence, and of all their children. He then broke out in a panegyric on the duke of Glocester; and exclaimed, "Behold this excellent prince, the ex-

Hist. Croyl. cont. p. 567. Comines. Sir Thomas More, p. 482.

C H A P. XXIII.

" press image of his noble father, the genuine de-" fcendant of the house of York; bearing, no less " in the virtues of his mind, than in the features " of his countenance, the character of the gallant " Richard, once your hero and favourite: He alone is entitled to your allegiance: He must deliver vou from the dominion of all intruders: He alone " can restore the lost glory and honour of the na-"tion." It was previously concerted, that as the doctor should pronounce these words, the duke of Glocester should enter the church; and it was expected that the audience would cry out, God fave king Richard! which would immediately have been laid -hold of as a popular confent, and interpreted to be the voice of the nation: But by a ridiculous mistake, worthy of the whole scene, the duke did not appear till after this exclamation was already recited by the preacher. The doctor was therefore obliged to repeat his rhetorical figure out of its proper place: The audience, less from the absurd conduct of the discourse, than from their detestation of these proceedings, kept a profound filence: And the protector and his preacher were equally abashed at the ill fuccess of their stratagem.

But the duke was too far advanced to recede from his criminal and ambitious purpose. A new expedient was tried to work on the people. The mayor, who was brother to Dr. Shaw, and entirely in the protector's interests, called an assembly of the citizens; where the duke of Buckingham, who possessed fome talents for eloquence, harangued them on the protector's title to the crown, and displayed those numerous virtues of which he pretended that prince was possessed. He next asked them, whether they would have the duke for king? and then stopped, in expectation of hearing the cry,  $G_0d$  save king Richard! He was surprised to observe them silent; and turning about to the mayor asked him the reason. The mayor replied, that perhaps they did not

under-

understand him. Buckingham then repeated his CHAP discourse with some variation; inforced the same topics, asked the same question, and was received with the fame filence. "I now fee the cause," faid the mayor; "the citizens are not accustomed to be " harangued by any but their recorder; and know on not how to answer a person of your grace's qua-" lity." The recorder, Fitz-Williams, was then commanded to repeat the substance of the duke's fpeech; but the man, who was averfe to the office, took care, throughout his whole discourse, to have it understood that he spoke nothing of himself, and that he only conveyed to them the fense of the duke of Buckingham. Still the audience kept a profound filence: "This is wonderful obstinacy," cried the duke: " Express your meaning, my friends, one way or other: When we apply to you on this occasion, it is merely from the regard which we 66 bear to you. The lords and commons have fuf-" ficient authority, without your confent, to apor point a king: But I require you here to declare, in plain terms, whether or not you will have the " duke of Glocester for your sovereign?" After all these efforts some of the meanest apprentices, incited by the protector's and Buckingham's fervants, raifed a feeble cry, God fave king Richard m! The fentiments of the nation were now fufficiently declared: The voice of the people was the voice of God: And Buckingham, with the mayor, hastened to Baynard's 25th June. castle, where the protector then resided, that they might make him a tender of the crown.

WHEN Richard was told that a great multitude was in the court, he refused to appear to them, and pretended to be apprehensive for his personal safety: A circumstance taken notice of by Buckingham, who observed to the citizens that the prince was ignorant of the whole defign. At last he was perXXIII. 1483.

CHAP. fuaded to flep forth, but he still kept at some distance; and he asked the meaning of their intrusion and importunity. Buckingham told him that the nation was resolved to have him for king: The protector declared his purpose of maintaining his loyalty to the prefent fovereign, and exhorted them to adhere to the same resolution. He was told that the people had determined to have another prince; and if he rejected their unanimous voice, they must look out for one who would be more compliant. This argument was too powerful to be refisted: He was prevailed on to accept of the crown: And he thenceforth acted as legitimate and rightful fovereign.

The prote or affume the throne.

Murder of Edw. V. and of the duke of York.

This ridiculous farce was foon after followed by a fcene truly tragical: The murder of the two young princes. Richard gave orders to fir Robert Brakenbury, constable of the Tower, to put his nephews to death; but this gentleman, who had fentiments of honour, refused to have any hand in The tyrant then fent for fir the infamous office. James Tyrrel, who promifed obedience; and he ordered Brakenbury to resign to this gentleman the keys and government of the Tower for one night. Tyrrel chusing three associates, Slater, Dighton, and Forest, came in the night-time to the door of the chamber where the princes were lodged; and fending in the affaffins, he bade them execute their commission, while he himself staid without. found the young princes in bed, and fallen into a profound fleep. After fuffocating them with the bolfter and pillows, they showed their naked bodies to Tyrrel, who ordered them to be buried at the foot of the stairs, deep in the ground, under a heap of stones ". These circumstances were all confessed by the actors in the following reign; and they were never punished for the crime: Probably, because Henry, whose maxims of government were ex-

n Sir T. More, p. 501.

tremely arbitrary, defired to establish it as a principle, CHAP. that the commands of the reigning fovereign ought to justify every enormity in those who paid obedience to them. But there is one circumstance not so easy to be accounted for: It is pretended that Richard, displeased with the indecent manner of burying his nephews, whom he had murdered, gave his chaplain orders to dig up the bodies, and to inter them in confecrated ground; and as the man died foon after. the place of their burial remained unknown, and the bodies could never be found by any fearch which Henry could make for them. Yet in the reign of Charles II. when there was occasion to remove some stones, and to dig in the very spot which was mentioned as the place of their first interment, the bones of two persons were there found, which by their size exactly corresponded to the age of Edward and his brother: They were concluded with certainty to be the remains of those princes, and were interred under a marble monument, by orders of king Charles °. Perhaps Richard's chaplain had died before he found an opportunity of executing his master's commands; and the bodies being supposed to be already removed. a diligent fearch was not made for them by Henry in the place where they had been buried.

• Kennet, p. 551.

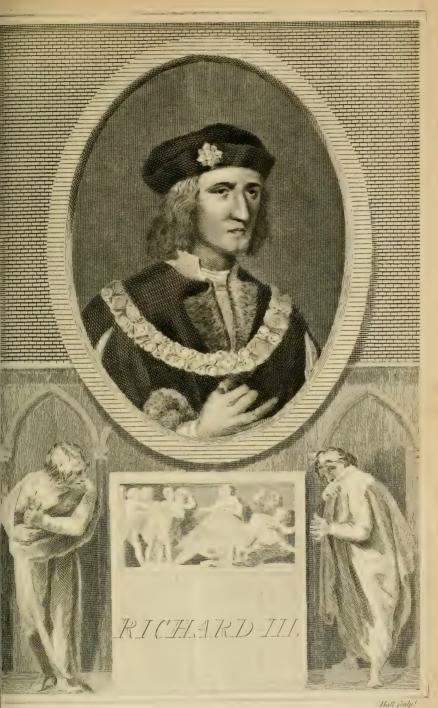
# RICHARD III.

C H A P. XXIII.

THE first acts of Richard's administration were to bestow rewards on those who had affisted him in usurping the crown, and to gain by favours those who he thought were best able to support his future government. Thomas lord Howard was created duke of Norfolk; fir Thomas Howard his fon, earl of Surry; lord Lovel a viscount by the fame name; even lord Stanley was fet at liberty, and made steward of the household. This nobleman had become obnoxious by his first opposition to Richard's views, and also by his marrying the countels dowager of Richmond, heir of the Somerset family; but fensible of the necessity of submitting to the present government, he seigned such zeal for Richard's fervice, that he was received into favour, and even found means to be entrusted with the most important commands by that politic and jealous tyrant.

Bur the person who, both from the greatness of his fervices, and the power and splendour of his familv, was best entitled to favours under the new government, was the duke of Buckingham; and Richard feemed determined to spare no pains or bounty in fecuring him to his interests. Buckingham was descended from a daughter of Thomas of Woodstock duke of Glocester, uncle to Richard II. and by this pedigree he not only was allied to the royal family, but had claims for dignities as well The duke of as estates of a very extensive nature. Glocester, and Henry earl of Derby, afterwards Henry IV. had married the two daughters and coheirs of Bohun earl of Hereford, one of the greatest of the ancient barons, whose immense property came thus to be divided into two shares. One was in-

herited



Hall jeulp!



herited by the family of Buckingham; the other was CHAP. united to the crown by the house of Lancaster, and, after the attainder of that royal line, was seized as legally devolved to them by the fovereigns of the house of York. The duke of Buckingham laid hold of the present opportunity, and claimed the restitution of that portion of the Hereford estate which had escheated to the crown, as well as of the great office of constable, which had long continued by inheritance in his ancestors of that family. Richard readily complied with these demands, which were probably the price stipulated to Buckingham for his affiftance in promoting the usurpation. That nobleman was invested with the office of constable; he received a grant of the estate of Hereford p; many other dignities and honours were conferred upon him; and the king thought himself fure of preserving the fidelity of a man whose interests seemed so closely connected with those of the present government.

But it was impossible that friendship could long Duke of remain inviolate between two men of fuch corrupt Buckingminds as Richard and the duke of Buckingham. contented. Historians ascribe their first rupture to the king's refusal of making restitution of the Hereford estate; but it is certain, from records, that he passed a grant for that purpose, and that the full demands of Buckingham were fatisfied in this particular. Perhaps Richard was foon fenfible of the danger which might enfue from conferring fuch an immense property on a man of fo turbulent a disposition, and afterwards raifed difficulties about the execution of his own grant: Perhaps he refused some other demands of Buckingham, whom he found it impossible to gratify for his past services: Perhaps he resolved, according to the usual maxim of politicians, to seize the first opportunity of ruining this powerful subject, who had been the principal instrument of his own

P Dugdale's Baron. vol. i. p. 168, 169.



elevation; and the discovery of this intention begat the first discontent in the duke of Buckingham. However this may be, it is certain that the duke, soon after Richard's accession, began to form a conspiracy against the government, and attempted to overthrow that usurpation which he himself had so

zealously contributed to establish.

NEVER was there in any country an usurpation more flagrant than that of Richard, or more repugnant to every principle of justice and public interest. His claim was entirely founded on impudent allegations, never attempted to be proved, some of them incapable of proof, and all of them implying fcandalous reflections on his own family, and on the persons with whom he was the most nearly connected. His title was never acknowledged by any national affembly, scarcely even by the lowest populace to whom he appealed; and it had become prevalent, merely for want of fome person of distinction who might stand forth against him, and give a voice to those sentiments of general detestation which arose in every bosom. Were men disposed to pardon these violations of public right, the tense of private and domestic duty, which is not to be effaced in the most barbarous times, must have begotten an abhorrence against him; and have represented the murder of the young and innocent princes, his nephews, with whose protection he had been entrusted, in the most odious colours imaginable. To endure fuch a bloody usurper seemed to draw disgrace upon the nation, and to be attended with immediate danger to every individual who was distinguished by birth, merit, or fervices. Such was become the general voice of the people; all parties were united in the fame fentiments; and the Lancastrians, fo long oppressed, and of late so much discredited, felt their blafted hopes again revive, and anxiously expected the confequences of these extraordinary events. The duke of Buckingham, whose family had been

devoted

devoted to that interest, and who by his mother, a CHAP. daughter of Edmund duke of Somerfet, was allied to the house of Lancaster, was easily induced to espouse the cause of this party, and to endeayour the restoring of it to its ancient superiority. Morton bishop of Ely, a zealous Lancastrian, whom the king had imprisoned, and had afterwards committed to the custody of Buckingham, encouraged these fentiments; and by his exhortations the duke cast his eye towards the young earl of Richmond, as the only person who could free the nation from the tyranny of the present usurper 9.

XXIII. 1483.

· HENRY earl of Richmond was at this time de- The earl of tained in a kind of honourable custody by the duke of Richmond. Britanny; and his descent, which seemed to give him fome pretenfions to the crown, had been a great object of jealouly both in the late and in the present reign. John the first duke of Somerset, who was grandson of John of Gaunt by a spurious branch, but legitimated by act of parliament, had left only one daughter, Margaret; and his younger brother Edmund had fucceeded him in his titles, and in a confiderable part of his fortune. Margaret had espoused Edmund earl of Richmond, half-brother of Henry VI. and fon of fir Owen Tudor and Catharine of France, relict of Henry V. and she bore him only one son, who received the name of Henry, and who after his father's death inherited the honours and fortune of Richmond. His mother, being a widow, had espouled, in second marriage, fir Henry Stafford, uncle to Buckingham, and after the death of that gentleman had married lord Stanley; but had no children by either of these husbands; and her son Henry was thus, in the event of her death, the fole heir of all her fortunes. But this was not the most confiderable advantage which he had reason to expect from her succession: He would represent the elder

# Hift. Croyl. cont. p. 568.

branch

C H A P. branch of the house of Somerset; he would inherit all the title of that family to the crown; and though its claim, while any legitimate branch subfifted of the house of Lancaster, had always been much disregarded, the zeal of faction, after the death of Henry VI. and the murder of prince Edward, immediately conferred a weight and confideration

EDWARD IV. finding that all the Lancastrians had turned their attention towards the young earl of Richmond as the object of their hopes, thought him also worthy of his attention; and pursued him into his retreat in Britanny, whither his uncle the earl of Pembroke had carried him after the battle of Teukefbury, fo fatal to his party. He applied to Francis II. duke of Britanny, who was his ally, a weak but a good prince; and urged him to deliver up this fugitive, who might be the fource of future disturbances in England: But the duke, averfe to fo dishonourable a proposal, would only consent that, for the security of Edward, the young nobleman should be detained in custody; and he received an annual pension from England for the safe-keeping or the subsistence of his prisoner. But towards the end of Edward's reign, when the kingdom was menaced with a war both from France and Scotland, the anxieties of the English court with regard to Henry were much increased; and Edward made a new proposal to the duke, which covered, under the fairest appearances, the most bloody and treacherous intentions. He pretended that he was desirous of gaining his enemy, and of uniting him to his own family by a marriage with his daughter Elizabeth; and he folicited to have him fent over to England, in order to execute a scheme which would redound so much to his advantage. These pretences, seconded as is fupposed by bribes to Peter Landais, a corrupt minister, by whom the duke was entirely governed, gained

gained credit with the court of Britanny: Henry C H A P. XXIII. was delivered into the hands of the English agents: He was ready to embark: When a fuspicion of Edward's real defign was fuggested to the duke, who recalled his orders, and thus faved the unhappy youth from the imminent danger which hung over him.

THESE symptoms of continued jealousy in the reigning family of England, both seemed to give fome authority to Henry's pretenfions, and made him the object of general favour and compassion, on account of the dangers and perfecutions to which he was exposed. The universal detestation of Richard's conduct turned still more the attention of the nation towards Henry; and as all the descendants of the house of York were either women or minors, he feemed to be the only person from whom the nation could expect the expulsion of the odious and bloody tyrant. But notwithstanding these circumstances, which were fo favourable to him, Buckingham and the bishop of Ely well knew that there would still lie many obstacles in his way to the throne; and that though the nation had been much divided between Henry VI. and the duke of York, while present possession and hereditary right stood in opposition to each other; yet as foon as these titles were united in Edward IV. the bulk of the people had come over to the reigning family; and the Lancastrians had extremely decayed, both in numbers and in authority. It was therefore fuggefted by Morton, and readily affented to by the duke, that the only means of overturning the prefent usurpation, was to unite the opposite factions, by contracting a marriage between the earl of Richmond and the princess Elizabeth, eldest daughter of king Edward, and thereby blending together the opposite pretensions of their families, which had fo long been the fource of public diforders and convulfions. They were fenfible that the people were extremely defirous of repose, after fo many bloody and destructive commotions;



C HAP. that both Yorkists and Lancastrians, who now law equally under oppression, would embrace this scheme with ardour; and that the prospect of reconciling the two parties, which was in itself so desirable an end, would, when added to the general hatred against the present government, render their cause absolutely invincible. In consequence of these views the prelate, by means of Reginald Bray, steward to the counters of Richmond, first opened the project of fuch an union to that lady; and the plan appeared fo advantageous for her fon, and at the same time fo likely to fucceed, that it admitted not of the least hesitation. Dr. Lewis, a Welsh physician, who had access to the queen-dowager in her fanctuary, carried the proposals to her; and found, that revenge for the murder of her brother and of her three fons, apprehenfions for her furviving family, and indignation against her confinement, easily overcame all her prejudices against the house of Lancaster, and procured her approbation of a marriage to which the age and birth, as well as the present situation of the parties, feemed fo naturally to invite them. She fecretly borrowed a fum of money in the city, fent it over to the earl of Richmond, required his oath to celebrate the marriage as foon as he should arrive in England, advised him to levy as many foreign forces as possible, and promised to join him on his first appearance, with all the friends and partifans of her family.

THE plan being thus laid upon the folid foundations of good fense and found policy, it was fecretly communicated to the principal persons of both parties in all the counties of England; and a wonderful alacrity appeared in every order of men to forward its fuccess and completion. But it was impossible that fo extensive a conspiracy could be conducted in fo fecret a manner as entirely to escape the jealous and vigilant eye of Richard; and he foon received intelligence that his enemies, headed by

the duke of Buckingham, were forming fome de- C II A P. fign against his authority. He immediately put himself in a posture of defence by levying troops in the North; and he summoned the duke to appear at court, in fuch terms as feemed to promife him a renewal of their former amity. But that nobleman, well acquainted with the barbarity and treachery of Richard, replied only by taking arms in Wales, and giving the fignal to his accomplices for a general infurrection in all parts of England. But at Ogober. that very time there happened to fall fuch heavy rains, fo inceffant and continued, as exceeded any known in the memory of man; and the Severne, with the other rivers in that neighbourhood, fwelled to a height which rendered them impassable, and prevented Buckingham from marching into the heart of England to join his affociates. The Welshmen, partly moved by superstition at this extraordinary event, partly distressed by famine in their camp, fell off from him; and Buckingham, finding himself deserted by his followers, put on a disguise, and took shelter in the house of Bannister, an old fervant of his family. But being detected in his Buckingretreat, he was brought to the king at Salisbury; and was instantly executed, according to the summary method practifed in that age . The other conspirators, who took arms in four different places, at Exeter, at Salisbury, at Newbury, and at Maidstone, hearing of the duke of Buckingham's miffortunes, despaired of success, and immediately disperfed themselves.

THE marquis of Dorfet and the bishop of Ely made their escape beyond sea: Many others were equally fortunate: Several fell into Richard's hands, of whom he made fome examples. His executions feem not to have been remarkably fevere; though we are told of one gentleman, William Coling-

1483.

ham exe-

Hift. Croyl cont. p 568.

XXIII. 1483.

CHAP. bourne, who suffered under colour of this rebellion. but in reality for a distich of quibbling verses which he had composed against Richard and his ministers. The earl of Richmond, in concert with his friends, had fet fail from St. Malo's, carrying one board a body of 5000 men, levied in foreign parts: but his fleet being at first driven back by a storm, he appeared not on the coast of England till after the dispersion of all his friends; and he found himself obliged to return to the court of Britanny.

T484. 23dof Jan.

THE king, every where triumphant, and fortified: by this unfuccessful attempt to dethrone him, ventured at last to summon a parliament; a measurewhich his crimes and flagrant usurpation had induced him hitherto to decline. Though it was natural that the parliament, in a contest of national parties, should always adhere to the victor, he seems to have apprehended, left his title, founded on no principle and supported by no party, might be rejected by that affembly. But his enemies being now at his feet, the parliament had no choice left but to recognife his authority, and acknowledge his right to the crown. His only fon Edward, then a youth of twelve years of age, was created prince of Wales: The duties of tonnage and poundage were granted to the king for life: And Richard, in order to reconcile the nation to his government, passed fome popular laws, particularly one against the late practice of extorting money on pretence of benevolence.

ALL the other measures of the king tended to the fame object. Senfible, that the only circumstance which could give him fecurity, was to gain the con-

#### The lines were :

The Rat, the Cat, and Lovel that Dog, Rule all England under the Hog.

Alluding to the names of Ratcliffe and Catefby; and to Richard's arms, which were a boar.

fidence

fidence of the Yorkists, he paid court to the queen-dowager with such art and address, made such earnest protestations of his fincere good-will and 1484. friendship, that this princess, tired of consinement, and despairing of any success from her former projects, ventured to leave her fanctuary, and to put herfelf and her daughters into the hands of the tyrant. But he foon carried farther his views for the establishment of his throne. He had married Anne the fecond daughter of the earl of Warwic, and widow of Edward prince of Wales, whom Richard himself had murdered; but this princess having born him but one fon, who died about this time, he confidered her as an invincible obstacle to the fettlement of his fortune, and he was believed to have carried her off by poifon; a crime for which the public could not be supposed to have any folid proof, but which the usual tenour of his conduct made it reasonable to suspect. He now thought it in his power to remove the chief perils which threatened his government. The earl of Richmond, he knew, could never be formidable but from his projected marriage with the princess Elizabeth, the true heir of the crown; and he therefore intended, by means of a papal dispensation, to espouse, himfelf, this princess, and thus to unite in his own family their contending titles. The queen-dowager, eager to recover her lost authority, neither scrupled this alliance, which was very unufual in England, and was regarded as incestuous; nor felt any horror at marrying her daughter to the murderer of her three fons and of her brother: She even joined fo far her interests with those of the usurper, that she wrote to all her partifans, and among the rest, to her fon the marquis of Dorfet, defiring them to withdraw from the earl of Richmond; an injury which the earl could never afterwards forgive: The court of Rome was applied to for a dispensation: Richard



CHAP. Richard thought that he could eafily defend himself during the interval, till it arrived; and he had afterwards the agreeable prospect of a full and secure fettlement. He flattered himself that the English nation, feeing all danger removed of a disputed fuccession, would then acquiesce under the dominion of a prince, who was of mature years, of great abilities, and of a genius qualified for government; and that they would forgive him all the crimes which he had committed, in paving his way to the throne.

> BUT the crimes of Richard were fo horrid and fo shocking to humanity, that the natural fentiments of men, without any political or public views, were fufficient to render his government unstable; and every person of probity and honour was earnest to prevent the fceptre from being any longer polluted by that bloody and faithless hand which held it. All the exiles flocked to the earl of Richmond in Britanny, and exhorted him to haften his attempt for a new invasion, and to prevent the marriage of the princess Elizabeth, which must prove fatal to all his hopes. The earl fensible of the urgent neceffity, but dreading the treachery of Peter Landais, who had entered into a negotiation with Richard for betraying him, was obliged to attend only to his present safety; and he made his escape to the court of France. The ministers of Charles VIII. who had now fucceeded to the throne after the death of his father Lewis, gave him countenance and protection; and being defirous of raifing difturbance to Richard, they fecretly encouraged the earl in the levies which he made for the support of his enterprise upon England. The earl of Oxford, whom Richard's fuspicions had thrown into confinement, having made his escape, here joined Henry; and inflamed his ardour for the attempt, by the favourable accounts which he brought of the dispo

fitions of the English nation, and their universal C HAP.

hatred of Richard's crimes and usurpation.

THE earl of Richmond fet fail from Harfleur in Normandy with a small army of about 2000 men; Invasion and after a navigation of fix days, he arrived at Milford-haven in Wales, where he landed without mond. opposition. He directed his course to that part of 7th Aug. the kingdom, in hopes that the Welsh, who regarded him as their countryman, and who had been already prepossessed in favour of his cause by means of the duke of Buckingham, would join his standard, and enable him to make head against the established Richard, who knew not in what government. quarter he might expect the invader, had taken post at Nottingham, in the centre of the kingdom; and having given commissions to different persons in the feveral counties, whom he empowered to oppose his enemy, he purposed in person to fly on the first alarm to the place exposed to danger. Sir Rice ap-Thomas and fir Walter Herbert were entrusted with his authority in Wales; but the former immediately deferted to Henry; the fecond made but feeble opposition to him: And the earl, advancing towards Shrewsbury, received every day some reinforcement from his partifans. Sir Gilbert Talbot joined him with all the vaffals and retainers of the family of Shrewsbury: Sir Thomas Bourchier and fir Walter Hungerford brought their friends to share his fortunes; and the appearance of men of distinction in his camp made already his cause wear a favourable aspect.

But the danger to which Richard was chiefly exposed, proceeded not so much from the zeal of his open enemies, as from the infidelity of his pretended friends. Scarce any nobleman of distinction was fincerely attached to his cause, except the duke of Norfolk; and all those who seigned the most loyalty were only watching for an opportunity to betray and defert him. But the persons of whom

U 3

by the earl

C H A P. he entertained the greatest suspicion, were lord Stanlev and his brother fir William; whose connexions with the family of Richmond, notwithstanding their professions of attachment to his person, were never entirely forgotten or overlooked by him. When he empowered lord Stanley to levy forces, he still retained his eldest fon lord Strange, as a pledge for his fidelity; and that nobleman was, on this account, obliged to employ great caution and referve in his proceedings. He raifed a powerful body of his friends and retainers in Cheshire and Lancashire, but without openly declaring himfelf: And though Henry had received fecret affurances of his friendly intentions, the armies on both fides knew not what to infer from his equivocal behaviour. The two rivals at last approached each other at Bosworth near Leicester; Henry, at the head of fix thousand men, Richard with an army of above double the number: and a decifive action was every hour expected between them. Stanley, who commanded above feven thousand men, took care to post himfelf at Atherstone, not far from the hostile camps: and he made fuch a disposition as enabled him on occasion to join either party. Richard had too much fagacity not to discover his intentions from those movements; but he kept the secret from his own men for fear of discouraging them: He took not immediate revenge on Stanley's fon, as fome of his courtiers advised him; because he hoped that so valuable a pledge would induce the father to prolong still farther his ambiguous conduct: And he hastened to decide by arms the quarrel with his competitor; being certain, that a victory over the earl of Richmond would enable him to take ample revenge on all his enemies, open and concealed.

22d Aug. Battle of Bosworth.

> THE van of Richmond's army, confisting of archers, was commanded by the earl of Oxford: Sir Gilbert Talbot led the right wing; fir John Savage

Savage the left: The earl himself, accompanied by C HAP. his uncle the earl of Pembroke, placed himself in XXIII. the main body. Richard also took post in bis main body, and entrusted the command of his van to the duke of Norfolk: As his wings were never engaged, we have not learned the names of the feveral commanders. Soon after the battle began, lord Stanley, whose conduct in this whole affair difcovers great precaution and abilities, appeared in the field, and declared for the earl of Richmond. This measure, which was unexpected to the men, though not to their leaders, had a proportional effect on both armies: It inspired unusual courage into Henry's foldiers; it threw Richard's into difmay and confusion. The intrepid tyrant, sensible of his desperate situation, cast his eye around the field, and deferying his rival at no great distance, he drove against him with fury, in hopes that either Henry's death or his own would decide the victory between them. He killed with his own hands fir William Brandon, standard-bearer to the earl: He dismounted fir John Cheyney: He was now within reach of Richmond himself, who declined not the combat; when fir William Stanley, breaking in with his troops, furrounded Richard, who, fighting bravely to the last moment, was overwhelmed by numbers, and perished by a fate too mild and ho- Death, nourable for his multiplied and detestable enormitics. His men every where fought for fafety by flight.

THERE fell in this battle about four thousand of the vanquished; and among these the duke of Norfolk, lord Ferrars of Chartley, fir Richard Ratcliffe, fir Robert Piercy, and fir Robert Brackenbury. The lofs was inconfiderable on the fide of the victors. Sir William Catefby, a great instrument of Richard's crimes, was taken, and foon after beheaded, with some others, at Leicester. The

U4

body

CHAP. body of Richard was found in the field covered with dead enemies, and all befmeared with blood: It was thrown carelessly across a horse; was carried to Leicester amidst the shouts of the insulting spectators; and was interred in the Gray-Friars church of that place.

and character of Richard

THE historians who favour Richard (for even this tyrant has met with partifans among the later writers) maintain, that he was well qualified for government, had he legally obtained it; and that he committed no crimes but fuch as were necessary to procure him possession of the crown: But this is a poor apology, when it is confessed that he was ready to commit the most horrid crimes which appeared necessary for that purpose; and it is certain, that all his courage and capacity, qualities in which he really feems not to have been deficient, would never have made compensation to the people for the danger of the precedent, and for the contagious example of vice and murder, exalted upon the throne. This prince was of a small stature, humpbacked, and had a harsh disagreeable countenance; fo that his body was in every particular no less deformed than his mind.

Thus have we purfued the history of England through a feries of many barbarous ages; till we have at last reached the dawn of civility and science, and have the prospect both of greater certainty in our historical narrations, and of being able to prefent to the reader a spectacle more worthy of his attention. The want of certainty, however, and of circumstances, is not alike to be complained of throughout every period of this long narration. This island possesses many ancient historians of good credit, as well as many historical monuments; and it

it is rare, that the annals of so uncultivated a people, CHAP. as were the English as well as the other European nations, after the decline of Roman learning, have been transmitted to posterity so complete, and with fo little mixture of falsehood and of fable. This advantage we owe entirely to the clergy of the church of Rome; who, founding their authority on their superior knowledge, preserved the precious literature of antiquity from a total extinction ; and under shelter of their numerous privileges and immunities, acquired a fecurity by means of the fuperstition, which they would in vain have claimed from the justice and humanity of those turbulent and licentious ages. Nor is the spectacle altogether unentertaining and uninstructive which the history of those times presents to us. The view of human manners, in all their variety of appearances, is both profitable and agreeable; and if the aspect in some periods feem horrid and deformed, we may thence learn to cherish with the greater anxiety that science and civility which has so close a connexion with virtue and humanity, and which, as it is a fovereign antidote against superstition, is also the most effectual remedy against vice and disorders of every kind.

THE rife, progress, perfection, and decline of art and science, are curious objects of contemplation, and intimately connected with a narration of civil transactions. The events of no particular period can be fully accounted for, but by considering the degrees of advancement which men have

reached in those particulars.

Those who cast their eye on the general revolutions of society will find, that, as almost all improvements of the human mind had reached nearly to their state of perfection about the age of Augustus, there was a sensible decline from that point

<sup>\*</sup> See note [L] at the end of the volume.

XXIII.

CHAP, or period; and men thenceforth relapfed gradually into ignorance and barbarism. The unlimited extent of the Roman empire, and the consequent despotism of its monarchs, extinguished all emulation, debased the generous spirits of men, and depressed that noble flame by which all the refined arts must be cherished and enlivened. The military government which foon fucceeded, rendered even the lives and properties of men infecure and precarious; and proved destructive to those vulgar and more necessary arts of agriculture, manufactures, and commerce; and, in the end, to the military art and genius itself, by which alone the immense fabric of the empire could be supported. irruption of the barbarous nations which foon followed, overwhelmed all human knowledge, which was already far in its decline; and men funk every age deeper into ignorance, stupidity, and superstition; till the light of antient science and history had very nearly fuffered a total extinction in all the European nations.

But there is a point of depression, as well as of exaltation, from which human affairs naturally return in a contrary direction, and beyond which they feldom pass either in their advancement or decline. The period in which the people of Christendom were the lowest sunk in ignorance, and consequently in diforders of every kind, may justly be fixed at the eleventh century, about the age of William the Conqueror; and from that æra, the fun of science beginning to re-ascend, threwout many gleams of light, which preceded the full morning when letters were revived in the fifteenth century. The Danes, and other northern people, who had fo long infested all the coasts, and even the inland parts of Europe, by their depredations, having now learned the arts of tillage and agriculture, found a certain subsistence at home, and were no longer tempted to defert their industry, in order to feek a precarious livelihood

hood by rapine and by the plunder of their neighbours. The feudal governments also, among themore fouthern nations, were reduced to a kind of system; and though that strange species of civil polity was ill sitted to ensure either liberty or tranquillity, it was preferable to the universal licence and disorder which had every where preceded it. But perhaps there was no event which tended farther to the improvement of the age, than one which has not been much remarked, the accidental sinding of a copy of Justinian's Pandects, about the year 1130, in the town of Amalsi in Italy.

THE ecclefiastics, who had leisure, and some inclination to study, immediately adopted with zeal this excellent fystem of jurisprudence, and spread the knowledge of it throughout every part of Europe. Besides the intrinsic merit of the performance, it was recommended to them by its original connexion with the imperial city of Rome, which being the feat of their religion, feemed to acquire a new lustre and authority by the diffusion of its laws over the western world. In less than ten years after the discovery of the Pandects, Vacarius, under the protection of Theobald archbishop of Canterbury, read public lectures of civil law in the univerfity of Oxford; and the clergy every where, by their example as well as exhortation, were the means of diffusing the highest esteem for this new science. That order of men having large possesfions to defend, was in a manner necessitated to turn their studies towards the law; and their properties being often endangered by the violence of the princes and barons, it became their interest to enforce the observance of general and equitable rules, from which alone they could receive protection. As they possessed all the knowledge of the age, and were alone acquainted with the habits of thinking, the practice, as well as science of the law fell mostly into their hands: And though

CHAP, though the close connexion which, without any necessity, they formed between the canon and civil law, begat a jealoufy in the laity of England, and prevented the Roman jurisprudence from becoming the municipal law of the country, as was the case in many states of Europe, a great part of it was fecretly transferred into the practice of the courts of justice, and the imitation of their neighbours made the English gradually endeavour to raise their own law from its original state of rudeness and imperfection.

> IT is easy to see what advantages Europe must have reaped by its inheriting at once from the ancients fo complete an art, which was also fo necefary for giving fecurity to all other arts, and which, by refining, and still more by bestowing folidity on the judgment, ferved as a model to farther improvements. The fenfible utility of the Roman law, both to public and private interest, recommended the study of it, at a time when the more exalted and speculative sciences carried no charms with them; and thus the last branch of antient literature which remained uncorrupted, was happily the first transmitted to the modern world: For it is remarkable, that in the decline of Roman learning, when the philosophers were universally infected with superstition and sophistry, and the poets and historians with barbarism, the lawyers, who in other countries, are feldom models of science or politeness, were yet able, by the constant study and close imitation of their predeceffors, to maintain the same good fense in their decisions and reasonings, and the same purity in their language and expresfion.

WHAT bestowed an additional merit on the civil law, was the extreme imperfection of that jurisprudence which preceded it among all the European nations, especially among the Saxons or antient English. The absurdities which prevailed at that time

time in the administration of justice, may be conceiv- C H AP. ed from the authentic monuments which remain of the ancient Saxon laws; where a pecuniary commutation was received for every crime, where stated prices were fixed for men's lives and members, where private revenges were authorifed for all injuries. where the use of the ordeal, corfnet, and afterwards of the duel, was the received method of proof, and where the judges were ruftic freeholders, affembled of a fudden, and deciding a cause from one debate or altercation of the parties. Such a state of society was very little advanced beyond the rude state of nature: Violence univerfally prevailed, instead of general and equitable maxims: The pretended liberty of the times was only an incapacity of fubmitting to government: And men, not protected by law in their lives and properties, fought shelter by their personal servitude and attachments under some powerful chieftain, or by voluntary combinations.

THE gradual progress of improvement raised the Europeans somewhat above this uncultivated state; and affairs, in this island particularly, took early a turn which was more favourable to justice and to liberty. Civil employments and occupations foon became honourable among the English: The situation of that people rendered not the perpetual attention to wars fo necessary as among their neighbours, and all regard was not confined to the military profession: The gentry, and even the nobility, began to deem an acquaintance with the law a necessary part of education: They were less diverted than afterwards from studies of this kind by other sciences; and in the age of Henry VI. as we are told by Fortescue, there were in the inns of court about two thousand students, most of them men of honourable birth, who gave application to this branch of civil knowledge: A circumstance which proves that a confiderable progrefs was already made in the fcience C H A P. XXIII.

fcience of government, and which prognosticated a still greater.

ONE chief advantage which resulted from the introduction and progress of the arts, was the introduction and progress of freedom; and this confequence affected men both in their personal and civil

capacities.

IF we confider the ancient state of Europe, we fhall find that the far greater part of the fociety were everywhere bereaved of their personal liberty, and lived entirely at the will of their masters. Every one that was not noble was a flave: The pealants were fold along with the land: The few inhabitants of cities were not in a better condition: Even the gentry themselves were subjected to a long train of fubordination under the greater barons or chief vaffals of the crown; who, though feemingly placed in a high state of splendour, yet, having but a flender protection from law, were exposed to every tempest of the state, and, by the precarious condition in which they lived, paid dearly for the power of oppressing and tyrannising over their inferiors. The first incident which broke in upon this violent fystem of government, was the practice begun in Italy, and imitated in France, of erecting communities and corporations, endowed with privileges and a feparate municipal government, which gave them protection against the tyranny of the barons, and which the prince himself deemed it prudent to respect ". The relaxation of

the

u There appear early fymptoms of the jealoufy entertained by the barons against the progress of the arts as destructive of their licentious power. A law was enacted, 7 Henry IV. chap 17. prohibiting any one who did not possess to any trade. They found already that the cities began to drain the country of the labourers and husbandmen; and did not foresee how much the increase of commerce would increase the value of their estates. See farther, Cotton, p. 179. The kings, to encourage the boroughs, granted them this privilege, that any villain who had lived a twelvemonth in any corporation, and had been of the guild, should be thenceforth regarded as free.

the feudal tenures, and an execution fomewhat CHAP. stricter, of the public law, bestowed an independence on vaffals which was unknown to their forefathers. And even the peafants themselves, though later than other orders of the state, made their escape from those bonds of villenage or slavery in which

they had formerly been retained.

Ir may appear strange, that the progress of the arts, which feems, among the Greeks and Romans, to have daily encreased the number of slaves, should, in later times, have proved so general a fource of liberty; but this difference in the events proceeded from a great difference in the circumstances which attended those institutions. The ancient barons, obliged to maintain themselves continually in a military posture, and little emulous of elegance or splendor, employed not their villains. as domestic fervants, much less as manufacturers; but composed their retinue of freemen, whose military spirit rendered the chieftain formidable to his neighbours, and who were ready to attend him in every warlike enterprise. The villains were entirely occupied in the cultivation of their master's land, and paid their rents either in corn and cattle and other produce of the farm, or in fervile offices, which they performed about the baron's family, and upon the farms which he retained in his own posseffion. In proportion as agriculture improved and money increased, it was found that these services, though extremely burdenfome to the villain, were of little advantage to the master; and that the produce of a large estate could be much more conveniently disposed of by the peasants themselves who raifed it, than by the landlord or his bailiff, whowere formerly accustomed to receive it. A commutation was therefore made of rents for fervices, and of money-rents for those in kind; and as men in a subsequent age discovered that farms were better

C H A P. ter cultivated where the farmer enjoyed a fecurity in his possession, the practice of granting leases to the peafant began to prevail, which entirely broke the bonds of fervitude, already much relaxed from the former practices. After this manner villenage went gradually into difuse throughout the more civilized parts of Europe: The interest of the mafter as well as that of the flave concurred in this alteration. The latest laws which we find in England for enforcing or regulating this species of servitude were enacted in the reign of Henry VII. And though the ancient statutes on this subject remain still unrepealed by parliament, it appears that, before the end of Elizabeth, the distinction of villain and freeman was totally, though infensibly abolished, and that no person remained in the state to whom the former laws could be applied.

Thus personal freedom became almost general in Europe; an advantage which paved the way for the increase of political or civil liberty, and which, even where it was not attended with this falutary effect, ferved to give the members of the community fome

of the most considerable advantages of it.

THE constitution of the English government, ever fince the invasion of this island by the Saxons, may boast of this pre-eminence, that in no age the will of the monarch was entirely ever absolute and uncontrolled: But in other respects the balance of power has extremely shifted among the several orders of the state; and this fabric has experienced the fame mutability that has attended all human institutions.

THE ancient Saxons, like the other German nations, where each individual was enured to arms, and where the independence of men was fecured by a great equality of possessions, feem to have admitted a confiderable mixture of democracy into their form of government, and to have been one of

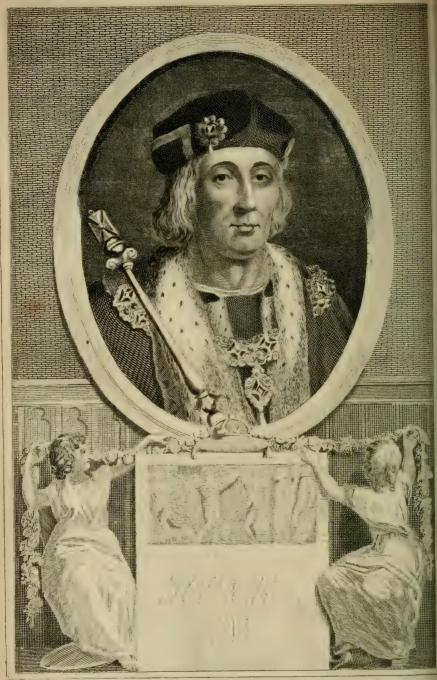
the

the freest nations of which there remains any ac- C HAP. count in the records of history. After this tribe was fettled in England, especially after the dissolution of the Heptarchy, the great extent of the kingdom produced a great inequality in property; and the balance feems to have inclined to the fide of aristocracy. The Norman conquest threw more authority into the hands of the fovereign, which however admitted of great control; though derived lefs from the general forms of the constitution, which were inaccurate and irregular, than from the independent power enjoyed by each baron in his particular district or province. The establishment of the great charter exalted still higher the aristocracy, impofed regular limits on royal power, and gradually introduced some mixture of democracy into the constitution. But even during this period, from the accession of Edward I. to the death of Richard III. the condition of the commons was nowife eligible: a kind of Polish aristocracy prevailed; and though the kings were limited, the people were as yet far from being free. It required the authority almost absolute of the sovereigns, which took place in the fubfequent period, to pull down those disorderly and licentious tyrants, who were equally averse from peace and from freedom, and to establish that regular execution of the laws, which in a following age enabled the people to erect a regular and equitable plan of liberty.

In each of these successive alterations, the only rule of government which is intelligible or carries any authority with it, is the established practice of the age, and the maxims of administration which are at that time prevalent and universally assented to. Those who, from a pretended respect to antiquity, appeal at every turn to an original plan of the constitution, only cover their turbulent spirit and their private ambition under the appearance of venerable forms; and whatever period they pitch on for their Vol. III.

CHAP. model, they may still be carried back to a more ancient period, where they will find the measures of power entirely different, and where every circumstance, by reason of the greater barbarity of the times. will appear still less worthy of imitation. Above all, a civilized nation, like the English, who have happily established the most perfect and most accurate fystem of liberty that was ever found compatible with government, ought to be cautious in appealing to the practice of their ancestors, or regarding the maxims of uncultivated ages as certain rules for their present conduct. An acquaintance with the ancient periods of their government is chiefly useful, by instructing them to cherish their present constitution, from a comparison or contrast with the condition of those distant times. And it is also curious, by shewing them the remote and commonly faint and disfigured originals of the most finished and most noble institutions, and by instructing them in the great mixture of accident which commonly concurs with a fmall ingredient of wisdom and forefight in erecting the complicated fabric of the most perfect government.





From the Reval Coll: Kenfington .

I.K.Shenvin

## CHAP. XXIV.

## HENRY VII.

Accession of Henry VII. -- His title to the crown -King's prejudice against the house of York-His joyful reception in London—His coronation ----Sweating sickness-A parliament-Entail of the crown-King's marriage-An in-Surrection - Discontents of the people - Lambert Simnel—Revolt of Ircland—Intrigu's of the dutchess of Burgundy-Lambert Simnel invades England—Battle of Stoke.

THE victory which the earl of Richmond gained CHAP. at Bosworth was entirely decisive; being attended as well with the total rout and dispersion of the royal army, as with the death of the king him- August 22. felf. Joy for this great fuccess suddenly prompted the foldiers in the field of battle to bestow on their victorious general the appellation of king, which he had not hitherto assumed; and the acclamations of Long live Henry the Seventh! by a natural and un- Accession premeditated movement, refounded from all quarters. of Henry VII. To bestow some appearance of formality on this species of military election, fir William Stanley brought a crown of ornament which Richard wore in battle, and which had been found among the spoils; and he put it on the head of the victor. Henry himself remained not in fuspense; but immediately without hesitation accepted of the magnificent present which was tendered him. He was come to the critis of his fortune; and being obliged suddenly to determine himself, amidst great difficulties which he must have frequently revolved in his mind, he chose that part X 2 which

CHAP. XXIV. 1485. His title to the crown.

CHAP. which his ambition fuggested to him, and to which he seemed to be invited by his present success.

THERE were many titles on which Henry could found his right to the crown; but no one of them free from great objections, if confidered with respect

either to justice or to policy.

During some years Henry had been regarded as heir to the house of Lancaster by the party attached to that family; but the title of the house of Lancaster itself was generally thought to be very illfounded. Henry IV. who had first raised it to royal dignity, had never clearly defined the foundation of his claim; and while he plainly invaded the order of fuccession, he had not acknowledged the election of the people. The parliament, it is true, had often recognised the title of the Lancastrian princes; but these votes had little authority, being considered as instances of complaifance towards a family in posfession of present power: And they had accordingly been often reversed during the late prevalence of the house of York. Prudent men also, who had been willing, for the fake of peace, to fubmit to any established authority, desired not to see the claims of that family revived; claims which must produce many convulsions at present, and which disjointed for the future the whole system of hereditary right. Besides, allowing the title of the house of Lancaster to be legal, Henry himself was not the true heir of that family; and nothing but the obstinacy natural to faction, which never without reluctance will fubmit to an antagonist, could have engaged the Lancastrians to adopt the earl of Richmond as their head. His mother indeed, Margaret countels of Richmond, was fole daughter and heir of the duke of Somerset, sprung from John of Gaunt duke of Lancaster: But the descent of the Somerset line was itself illegitimate, and even adulterous. And though the duke of Lancaster had obtained the legitimation of

of his natural children by a patent from Richard II. C HAP. confirmed in parliament, it might justly be doubted whether this deed could bestow any title to the crown: fince in the patent itself all the privileges conferred by it are fully enumerated, and the fuccession to the kingdom is expressly excluded w. In all fettlements of the crown made during the reigns of the Lancastrian princes, the line of Somerset had been entirely overlooked; and it was not till the failure of the legitimate branch, that men had paid any attention to their claim. And, to add to the general diffatisfaction against Henry's title, his mother, from whom he derived all his right, was still alive; and evidently preceded him in the order of fuccession.

THE title of the House of York, both from the plain reason of the case, and from the late popular government of Edward IV. had univerfally obtained the preference in the fentiments of the people; and Henry might ingraft his claim on the rights of that family, by his intended marriage with the princess Elizabeth, the heir of it; a marriage which he had folemnly promifed to celebrate, and to the expectation of which he had chiefly owed all his past fucceffes. But many reasons disfuaded Henry from adopting this expedient. Were he to receive the crown only in the right of his confort, his power he knew would be very limited; and he must expect rather to enjoy the bare title of king by a fort of courtefy, than possess the real authority which belongs to it. Should the princess die before him without issue, he must descend from the throne, and give place to the next in fuccession: And even if his bed should be blest with offspring, it seemed dangerous to expect that filial piety in his children would prevail over the ambition of obtaining present possession of regal power. An act of parliament, in-

w Rymer, tom. vii. p. 849. Coke's Inft. 4 Inft. part I. p. 37.  $X_3$ deed,



C HAP. deed, might eafily be procured to fettle the crown on him during life; but Henry knew how much superior the claim of fuccession by blood was to the authority of an affembly x, which had always been overborne by violence in the shock of contending titles, and which had ever been more governed by the conjunctures of the times, than by any confider-

ation derived from reason or public interest.

THERE was yet a third foundation on which Henry might rest his claim, the right of conquest, by his victory over Richard, the present possessor of the crown. But besides that Richard himself was deemed no better than an usurper, the army which fought against him confisted chiefly of Englishmen; and a right of conquest over England could never be established by such a victory. Nothing also would give greater umbrage to the nation than a claim of this nature: which might be construed as an abolition of all their rights and privileges, and the establishment of absolute authority in the sovereign y. William himself the Norman, though at the head of a powerful and victorious army of foreigners, had at first declined the invidious title of conqueror; and it was not till the full establishment of his authority that he had ventured to advance so violent and destructive a pretension.

But Henry was fensible that there remained another foundation of power fomewhat refembling the right of conquest, namely, present possession; and that this title, guarded by vigour and abilities, would be fufficient to fecure perpetual possession of the throne. He had before him the example of Henry IV. who, supported by no better pretension, had fubdued many infurrections, and had been able to transmit the crown peaceably to his posterity. He could perceive that this claim, which had been perpetuated through three generations of the family of Lancaster, might still have subsisted, notwithstand- C H A P. ing the preferable title of the house of York; had not the sceptre devolved into the hands of Henry VI. which were too feeble to fustain it. Instructed by this recent experience, Henry was determined to put himself in possession of legal authority; and to show all opponents that nothing but force of arms, and a fucceisful war, should be able to expel him. His claim as heir to the house of Lancaster he was resolved to advance; and never allowed to be discuffed: And he hoped that this right, favoured by the partifans of that family, and feconded by prefent power, would fecure him a perpetual and an inde-

pendent authority.

THESE views of Henry are not exposed to much King's blame; because founded on good policy, and even against the on a species of necessity: But there entered into all house of his measures and counsels another motive, which admits not of the fame apology. The violent contentions which, during fo long a period, had been maintained between the rival families, and the many fanguinary revenges which they had alternately taken on each other, had inflamed the opposite factions to a high pitch of animofity. Henry himfelf, who had feen most of his near friends and relations perish in battle or by the executioner, and who had been exposed, in his own person, to many hardships and dangers, had imbibed a violent antipathy to the York party, which no time or experience were ever able to efface. Instead of embracing the present happy opportunity of abolishing these fatal distinctions, of uniting his title with that of his confort, and of bestowing favour indiscriminately on the friends of both families; he carried to the throne all the partialities which belong to the head of a faction, and even the passions which are carefully guarded against by every true politician in that fituation. To exalt the Lancastrian party, to depress the adherents of the house of York, were still the favourite objects of his

14855

C H A P. pursuit; and through the whole course of his reign, he never forgot these early prepossessions. Incapable, from his natural temper, of a more enlarged and more benevolent fystem of policy, he exposed himfelf to many present inconveniencies, by too anxiously guarding against that future possible event, which might disjoin his title from that of the princes whom he espoused. And while he treated the Yorkists as enemies, he foon rendered them fuch, and taught them to discuss that right to the crown, which he so carefully kept feparate; and to perceive its weakness

and invalidity.

To these passions of Henry, as well as to his sufpicious politics, we are to ascribe the measures which he embraced two days after the battle of Bosworth. Edward Plantagenet earl of Warwic, fon of the duke of Clarence, was detained in a kind of confinement at Sherif-Hutton in Yorkshire, by the jealousy of his uncle Richard; whose title to the throne was inferior to that of the young prince. Warwic had now reason to expect better treatment, as he was no obstable to the succession either of Henry or Elizabeth; and from a youth of fuch tender years no danger could reasonably be apprehended. But sir Robert Willoughby was dispatched by Henry, with orders to take him from Sherif-Hutton, to convey him to the Tower, and to detain him in close custody z. The fame messenger carried directions that the princefs Elizabeth, who had been confined to the fame place, should be conducted to London, in order to meet Henry, and there celebrate her nuptials.

HENRY himself set out for the capital, and advanced by flow journies. Not to rouse the jealousy of the people, he took care to avoid all appearance of military triumph; and so to restrain the insolence of victory, that every thing about him bore the appearance of an established monarch, making a peace-

Z Bacon, p. 579. Polydore Virgil, p. 565.

1485. reception inLondon.

XXIV.

able progress through his dominions, rather than of CHAP. a prince who had opened his way to the throne by force of arms. The acclamations of the people were every where loud, and no lefs fincere and hearty. His joyful Besides that a young and victorious prince, on his accession, was naturally the object of popularity; the nation promifed themselves great felicity from the new scene which opened before them. During the course of near a whole century the kingdom had been laid waste by domestic wars and convulsions; and if at any time the noise of arms had ceased, the sound of faction and discontent still threatened new disorders. Henry, by his marriage with Elizabeth, feemed to ensure a union of the contending titles of the two families; and having prevailed over a hated tyrant, who had anew disjointed the succession even of the house of York, and had filled his own family with blood and murder, he was every where attended with the unfeigned favour of the people. Numerous and fplendid troops of gentry and nobility accompanied his progress. The mayor and companies of London received him as he approached the city: The crowds of people and citizens were zealous in their expressions of fatisfaction. But Henry, amidst this general effusion of joy, discovered still the stateliness and reserve of his temper, which made him scorn to court popularity: He entered London in a close chariot, and would not gratify the people with a fight of their new fovereign.

But the king did not fo much neglect the favour of the people as to delay giving them affurances of his marriage with the princess Elizabeth, which he knew to be fo passionately desired by the nation. On his leaving Britanny, he had artfully dropped fome hints, that if he should succeed in his enterprife, and obtain the crown of England, he would espouse Anne, the heir of that dutchy; and the report of this engagement had already reached England, and had begotten anxiety in the people, and

even

1485.

C H A P. even in Elizabeth herfelf. Henry took care to diffipate these apprehensions, by solemnly renewing, before the council and principal nobility, the promife which he had already given to celebrate his nuptials with the English princess. But though bound by honour, as well as by interest, to complete this alliance, he was refolved to postpone it till the ceremony of his own coronation should be finished, and till his title should be recognized by parliament. Still anxious to support his personal and hereditary right to the throne, he dreaded lest a preceding marriage with the princess should imply a participation of fovereignty in her, and raife doubts of his own title by the house of Lancaster.

His coro. nation.

Sweating fickness.

THERE raged at that time in London, and other parts of the kingdom, a species of malady unknown to any other age or nation, the fweating fickness, which occasioned the fudden death of great multitudes: though it seemed not to be propagated by any contagious infection, but arose from the general disposition of the air and of the human body. less than twenty-four hours the patient commonly died or recovered; but when the pestilence had exerted its fury for a few weeks, it was observed, either from alterations in the air, or from a more proper regimen which had been discovered, to be confiderably abated . Preparations were then made for the ceremony of Henry's coronation. In order to heighten the splendour of that spectacle, he bestowed the rank of knight banneret on twelve perfons; and he conferred peerages on three. earl of Pembroke, his uncle, was created duke of Bedford; Thomas lord Stanley, his father in-law, earl of Derby; and Edward Courteney earl of Devonshire. At the coronation likewise there appeared a new institution, which the king had established for fecurity as well as pomp, a band of fifty archers,

30th Oct.

Polydore Virgil, p. 567.

who were termed yeomen of the guard. But lest the CHAP. people should take umbrage at this unusual symptom of jealouly in the prince, as if it implied a personal diffidence of his subjects, he declared the institution to be perpetual. The ceremony of coronation was performed by cardinal Bourchier archbishop of Canterbury.

1485.

THE parliament being affembled at Westminster, 7th Nov. the majority immediately appeared to be devoted partisans of Henry; all persons of another disposition either declining to stand in those dangerous times, or being obliged to dissemble their principles and inclinations. The Lancastrian party had every where been fuccessful in the elections; and even many had been returned, who during the prevalence of the house of York had been exposed to the rigour of law, and had been condemned by fentence of attainder and outlawry. Their right to take feats in the house being questioned, the case was referred to all the judges, who assembled in the exchequer chamber, in order to deliberate on fo delicate a fubject. The opinion delivered was prudent, and contained a just temperament between law and expediency b. The judges determined, that the members attainted should forbear taking their feat till an act were passed for the reversal of their attainder. There was no difficulty in obtaining this act; and in it were comprehended a hundred and feven persons of the king's party c.

Bur a scruple was started of a nature still more important. The king himself had been attainted; and his right of fuccession to the crown might thence be exposed to some doubt. The judges extricated themselves from this dangerous question, by afferting it as a maxim; "That the crown takes away all " defects and stops in blood; and that from the

b Bacon, p. 581.

Rot. Parl. 1 Hen. VII. n. 2, 3, 4-15. 17. 26-65.



" time the king assumed royal authority, the found " tain was cleared, and all attainders and corruptions " of blood discharged "." Besides that the case, from its urgent necessity, admitted of no deliberation; the judges probably thought, that no fentence of a court of judicature had authority fufficient to bar the right of fuccession; that the heir of the crown was commonly exposed to such jealousy as might often occasion stretches of law and justice against him; and that a prince might even be engaged in unjustifiable measures during his predecessor's reign, without meriting on that account to be excluded from the throne, which was his birth-right.

WITH a parliament fo obsequious, the king could not fail of obtaining whatever act of fettlement he was pleased to require. He seems only to have entertained fome doubt within himself on what claim he should found his pretensions. In his speech to the parliament he mentioned his just title by hereditary right: But lest that title should not be esteemed sufficient, he fubjoined his claim by the judgment of God, who had given him victory over his enemies. And again, lest this pretension should be interpreted as affuming a right of conquest, he ensured to his fubjects the full enjoyment of their former properties and possessions.

Entail of

THE entail of the crown was drawn according to the crown. the fense of the king, and probably in words dictated by him. He made no mention in it of the princess Elizabeth, nor of any branch of her family; but in other respects the act was compiled with sufficient reserve and moderation. He did not insist that it should contain a declaration or recognition of his preceding right; as on the other hand he avoided the appearance of a new law or ordinance. chose a middle course, which, as is generally un-

1485.

avoidable in such cases, was not entirely free from C H A P. uncertainty and obscurity. It was voted, "That " the inheritance of the crown should rest, remain, " and abide in the king ";" but whether as rightful heir, or only as present possessor, was not determined. In like manner, Henry was contented that the succession should be secured to the heirs of his body; but he pretended not, in case of their failure. to exclude the house of York, or give the preference to that of Lancaster: He left that great point ambiguous for the present, and trusted that, if it should ever become requisite to determine it future incidents would open the way for the decision.

But even after all these precautions, the king was fo little fatisfied with his own title, that in the following year he applied to papal authority for a confirmation of it; and as the court of Rome gladly laid hold of all opportunities which the imprudence. weakness, or necessities of princes afforded it to extend its influence, Innocent VIII. the reigning pope, readily granted a bull in whatever terms the king was pleafed to defire. All Henry's titles, by fuccession, marriage, parliamentary choice, even conquest, are there enumerated; and to the whole the fanction of religion is added; excommunication is denounced against every one who should either disturb him in the present possession, or the heirs of his body in the future fuccession of the crown; and from this penalty no criminal, except in the article of death, could be absolved but by the pope himself, or his special commissioners. It is difficult to imagine that the fecurity derived from this bull could be a compensation for the defect which it betrayed in Henry's title, and for the danger of thus inviting the pope to interpose in these concerns.

CHAP. XXIV. 1485.

IT was natural, and even laudable in Henry to reverse the attainders which had passed against the partisans of the house of Lancaster: But the revenges which he exercised against the adherents of the York family, to which he was fo foon to be allied, cannot be confidered in the fame light. Yet the parliament, at his instigation, passed an act of attainder against the late king himself, against the duke of Norfolk, the earl of Surry, viscount Lovel, the lords Zouche and Ferrars of Chartley, fir Walter and fir James Harrington, fir William Berkeley, fir Humphrey Stafford, Catefby, and about twenty other gentlemen, who had fought on Richard's fide in the battle of Botworth. How men could be guilty of treason, by fupporting the king in possession against the earl of Richmond, who affumed not the title of king, it is not eafy to conceive; and nothing but a fervile complaifance in the parliament could have engaged them to make this stretch of justice. Nor was it a fmall mortification to the people in general, to find that the king, prompted either by avarice or refentment, could in the very beginning of his reign fo far violate the cordial union which had previously been concerted between the parties, and to the expectation of which he had plainly owed his succession to the throne.

THE king, having gained fo many points of confequence from the parliament, thought it not expedient to demand any fupply from them, which the profound peace enjoyed by the nation, and the late forfeiture of Richard's adherents, feemed to render roth Dec. somewhat superfluous. The parliament, however, conferred on him during life the duty of tonnage and poundage, which had been enjoyed in the same manner by some of his immediate predecessors; and they added, before they broke up, other money bills of no great moment. The king, on his part, made returns of grace and favour to his people. He published

1485.

published his royal proclamation, offering pardon to CHAP. all fuch as had taken arms, or formed any attempts against him; provided they submitted themselves to mercy by a certain day, and took the usual oath of fealty and allegiance. Upon this proclamation many came out of their fanctuaries; and the minds of men were every where much quieted. Henry chose to take wholly to himself the merit of an act of grace, fo agreeable to the nation; rather than communicate it with the parliament (as was his first intention), by passing a bill to that purpose. The earl of Surrey, however, though he had fubmitted, and delivered himself into the king's hands, was fent prisoner to

the Tower.

During this parliament the king also bestowed favours and honours on some particular persons who were attached to him. Edward Stafford, eldest son of the duke of Buckingham, attainted in the late reign, was restored to the honours of his family as well as to its fortune, which was very ample. generofity, fo unufual in Henry, was the effect of his gratitude to the memory of Buckingham, who had first concerted the plan of his elevation, and who by his own ruin had made way for that great event. Chandos of Britanny was created earl of Bath, fir Giles Daubeny lord Daubeny, and fir Robert Willoughby lord Broke. These were all the titles of nobility conferred by the king during this fession of parliament '.

But the ministers whom Henry most trusted and favoured were not chosen from among the nobility, or even from among the laity. John Morton and Richard Fox, two clergymen, persons of industry, vigilance, and capacity. were the men to whom he chiefly confided his affairs and fecret counfels. They had shared with him all his former dangers and dis3435.

C H A P. treffes; and he now took care to make them participate in his good fortune. They were both called to the privy council; Morton was restored to the bishopric of Ely, Fox was created bishop of Exeter The former foon after, upon the death of Bourchier, was raifed to the fee of Canterbury. The latter was made privy feal; and fuccessively bishop of Bath and Wells, Durham and Winchester. For Henry, as lord Bacon observes, loved to employ and advance prelates; because, having rich bishoprics to bestow, it was easy for him to reward their services: And it was his maxim to raise them by flow steps, and make them first pass through the inferior sees f. He probably expected, that as they were naturally more dependant on him than the nobility, who during that age enjoyed possessions and jurisdictions dangerous to royal authority; fo the prospect of farther elevation would render them still more active in his fervice, and more obsequious to his commands.

roth Jan.

King's marriage.

In prefenting the bill of tonnage and poundage, the parliament, anxious to preserve the legal undisputed fuccession to the crown, had petitioned Henry, with demonstrations of the greatest zeal, to espouse the princess Elizabeth; but they covered their true reafon under the dutiful pretence of their defire to have heirs of his body. He now thought in earnest of fatisfying the minds of his people in that particular. His marriage was celebrated at London, and that with greater appearance of universal joy than either his first entry or his coronation. Henry remarked with much displeasure this general favour borne to the house of York. The suspicions which arose from it not only disturbed his tranquillity during his whole reign; but bred disgust towards his consort herself, and poisoned all his domestic enjoyments. Though

f Bacon, p. 58:.

virtuous, amiable, and obsequious to the last degree, CHAP. she never met with a proper return of affection, or XXIV. even of complaifance from her husband; and the malignant ideas of faction still, in his sullen mind, prevailed over all the fentiments of conjugal tenderness.

THE king had been carried along with fuch a tide of fuccess ever fince his arrival in England, that he thought nothing could withstand the fortune and authority which attended him. He now resolved to make a progress into the North, where the friends of the house of York, and even the partisans of Richard, were numerous; in hopes of curing, by his presence and conversation, the prejudices of the malcontents. When he arrived at Nottingham he heard that viscount Lovel, with fir Humfrey Stafford, and Thomas his brother, had fecretly withdrawn themselves from their fanctuary at Colchester: But this news appeared not to him of fuch importance as to stop his journey; and he proceeded forward to York. He there heard that the Staffords Aninfurhad levied an army, and were marching to befiege rection. the city of Worcester: And that Lovel, at the head of three or four thousand men, was approaching to attack him in York. Henry was not difmayed with this intelligence. His active courage, full of refources, immediately prompted him to find the proper remedy. Though furrounded with enemies in these disaffected counties, he affembled a small body of troops in whom he could confide; and he put them under the command of the duke of Bedford. He joined to them all his own attendants; but he found that this halty armament was more formidable by their spirit and their zealous attachment to him. than by the arms or military stores with which they were provided. He therefore gave Bedford orders not to approach the enemy; but previously to try every proper expedient to difperfe them. Bedford published a general promise of pardon to the rebels; VOL. III. which

XXIV. 1486.

C H A P. which had a greater effect on their leader than on his followers. Lovel, who had undertaken an enterprife that exceeded his courage and capacity, was fo terrified with the fear of defertion among his troops, that he fuddenly withdrew himfelf; and after lurking fome time in Lancashire, he made his escape into Flanders, where he was protected by the dutchess of Burgundy. His army submitted to the king's clemency; and the other rebels hearing of this fuccess, raised the siege of Worcester, and dispersed themselves. The Staffords took fanctuary in the church of Colnham, a village near Abingdon; but as it was found that this church had not the privilege of giving protection to rebels, they were taken thence: The elder was executed at Tyburn; the younger, pleading that he had been missed by his brother obtained a pardon 8.

20th Sept.

HENRY's joy for this fuccess was followed, some time after, by the birth of a prince, to whom he gave the name of Arthur, in memory of the famous British king of that name, from whom it was pretended the family of Tudor derived its descent.

Difcontents of the peoplc.

THOUGH Henry had been able to defeat this hasty rebellion, raised by the relics of Richard's partisans, his government was become in general unpopular: The fource of public discontent arose chiefly from his prejudices against the house of York, which was generally beloved by the nation, and which for that very reason became every day more the object of his hatred and jealoufy. Not only a preference on all occasions, it was observed, was given to the Lancaltrians; but many of the opposite party had been exposed to great feverity, and had been bereaved of their fortunes by acts of attainder. A general refumption likewife had paffed of all grants made by the princes of the house of York; and though this rigour had been covered under the pretence that

1486.

the revenue was become infufficient to support the CHAP. dignity of the crown, and though the grants, during the later years of Henry VI. were resumed by the fame law, yet the York party, as they were the principal fufferers by the refumption, thought it chiefly levelled against them. The severity exercifed against the earl of Warwic begat compassion for youth and innocence exposed to such oppression; and his confinement in the Tower, the very place where Edward's children had been murdered by their uncle, made the public expect a like catastrophe for him, and led them to make a comparison between Henry and that detested tyrant. And when it was remarked that the queen herself met with harsh treatment, and even after the birth of a fon was not admitted to the honour of a public coronation, Henry's prepoffessions were then concluded to be inveterate, and men became equally obstinate in their disgust to his government. Nor was the manner and address of the king calculated to cure these prejudices contracted against his administration; but had in every thing a tendency to promote fear, or at best reverence, rather than good. will and affection b. While the high idea entertained of his policy and vigour, retained the nobility and men of character in obedience; the effects of his unpopular government foon appeared, by incidents of an extraordinary nature.

THERE lived in Oxford one Richard Simon, a prieft, who possessed fome subtlety, and still more enterprise and temerity. This man had entertained the defign of diffurbing Henry's government, by raising a pretender to his crown; and for that purpose he cast his eyes on Lambert Simnel, a youth Lambert of fifteen years of age, who was fon of a baker, and Simuel. who, being endowed with understanding above his years, and address above his condition, seemed well

CHAP. fitted to personate a prince of Royal extraction. A report had been fpread among the people, and received with great avidity, that Richard duke of York, fecond fon of Edward IV, had, by a fecret escape, saved himself from the cruelty of his uncle, and lay somewhere concealed in England. Simon, taking advantage of this rumour, had at first instructed his pupil to assume that name, which he found to be fo fondly cherished by the public: But hearing afterwards a new report, that Warwic had made his escape from the Tower, and observing that this news was attended with no lefs general fatisfaction, he changed the plan of his imposture, and made Simnel personate that unfortunate prince i. Though the youth was qualified by nature for the part which he was instructed to act; yet was it remarked, that he was better informed in circumstances relating to the royal family, particularly in the adventures of the earl of Warwic, than he could be supposed to have learned from one of Simon's condition: And it was thence conjectured, that perfons of higher rank, partifans of the house of York, had laid the plan of this conspiracy, and had conveyed proper instructions to the actors. queen-dowager herself was exposed to suspicion; and it was indeed the general opinion, however unlikely it might feem, that she had fecretly given her confent to the imposture. This woman was of a very restless disposition. Finding that instead of receiving the reward of her fervices in contributing to Henry's elevation, the herfelf was fallen into absolute infignificance, her daughter treated with feverity, and all her friends brought under fubjection, she had conceived the most violent animosity against him, and had resolved to make him feel the effects of her refentment. She knew that the impostor, however successful, might easily at last be set aside; and if a way could be found at his CHAP. risque to subvert the government, she hoped that a fcene might be opened which, though difficult at present exactly to foresee, would gratify her revenge, and be on the whole less irksome to her than that flavery and contempt to which fhe was now reduced k.

1426.

Bur whatever care Simon might take to convey instruction to his pupil Simnel, he was fensible that the imposture would not bear a close inspection; and he was therefore determined to open the first public scene of it in Ireland. That island, which was zealoufly attached to the house of York, and bore an affectionate regard to the memory of Clarence, Warwic's father, who had been their lieutenant, was improvidently allowed by Henry to remain in the fame condition in which he found it: and all the counfellors and officers who had been appointed by his predeceffors still retained their authority. No fooner did Simnel prefent himself to Thomas Fitz-gerald, earl of Kildare, the deputy, and claim his protection as the unfortunate Warwic, than that credulous nobleman, not suspecting so bold an imposture, gave attention to him, and began to confult fome persons of rank with regard to this extraordinary incident. These he found even more fanguine in their zeal and belief than himself: And in proportion as the flory diffused itself among those of lower condition, it became the object of flill greater passion and credulity, till the people in Dublin with one confent tendered their allegiance to Simnel, as to the true Plantagenet. Fond of a novelty, which flattered their natural propension, they overlooked the daughters of Edward IV. who stood before Warwic in the order of fuccession; they payed Revolt of the pretended prince attendance as their fovereign, Ireland, lodged him in the castle of Dublin, crowned him

XXIV. 1486.

CHAP. with a diadem taken from a statue of the Virgin, and publicly proclaimed him king, by the appellation of Edward VI. The whole island followed the example of the capital; and not a fword was any where drawn

in Henry's quarrel.

WHEN this intelligence was conveyed to the king, it reduced him to some perplexity. Determined always to face his enemies in person, he yet scrupled at present to leave England, where he suspected the conspiracy was first framed, and where he knew many persons of condition, and the people in general, were much disposed to give it countenance. In order to discover the fecret fource of the contrivance, and take measures against this open revolt, he held frequent confultations with his ministers and counfellors, and laid plans for a vigorous defence of his authority,

and the suppression of his enemies.

THE first event which followed these deliberations gave surprise to the public: It was the seizure of the queen-dowager, the forfeiture of all her lands and revenue, and the close confinement of her person in the nunnery of Bermondesey. This act of authority was covered with a very thin pretence. It was alleged that, notwithstanding the secret agreement to marry her daughter to Henry, she had yet yielded to the folicitations and menaces of Richard, and had delivered that princess and her fifters into the hands of the tyrant. This crime, which was now become obsolete, and might admit of alleviations, was therefore fuspected not to be the real cause of the severity with which she was treated; and men believed that the king, unwilling to accuse so near a relation of a conspiracy against him, had cloaked his vengeance or precaution under colour of an offence known to the whole world! They were afterwards the more confirmed in this fuspicion, when they found that the unfortunate queen, though she survived this dif-

Polydore Virgil, p. 571. Bacon, p. 583.

grace feveral years, was never treated with any more C HAP. lenity, but was allowed to end her life in poverty, 1486.

folitude, and confinement.

THE next measure of the king's was of a less exceptionable nature. He ordered that Warwic should be taken from the Tower, be led in procession through the streets of London, be conducted to St. Paul's and there exposed to the view of the whole people. He even gave directions that some men of rank, attached to the house of York, and best acquainted with the person of this prince, should approach him, and converse with him: And he trusted that these, being convinced of the absurd imposture of Simnel, would put a stop to the credulity of the populace. The expedient had its effect in England: But in Ireland the people still perfifted in their revolt, and zealously retorted on the king the reproach of propagating an imposture, and of having shewn a counterfeit Warwic to the

public.

HENRY had foon reason to apprehend that the design against him was not laid on such slight foundations as the absurdity of the contrivance seemed to indicate. John earl of Lincoln, fon of John de la Pole, duke of Suffolk, and of Elizabeth, eldest fifter to Edward IV. was engaged to take part in the conspiracy. This nobleman, who possessed capacity and courage, had entertained very aspiring views; and his ambition was encouraged by the known intentions of his uncle Richard, who had formed a defign, in case he himself should die without iffue, of declaring Lincoln fuccessor to the The king's jealoufy against all eminent perfons of the York party, and his rigour towards Warwic, had farther struck Lincoln with apprehenfions, and made him refolve to feek for fafety in the most dangerous counsels. Having fixed a fecret correspondence with fir Thomas Broughton, a man of great interest in Lancashire, he retired to Flan-Ya

328

XXIV. 1485.

CHAP, ders, where Lovel had arrived a little before him: and he lived during some time in the court of his aunt the dutchefs of Burgundy, by whom he had been invited over.

Intrigues of the dutchefs of Bur. gundy.

MARGARET, widow of Charles the Bold, duke of Burgundy, not having any children of her own, attached herself, with an entire friendship, to her daughter-in-law, married to Maximilian archduke of Austria; and after the death of that princess, she persevered in her affection to Philip and Margaret her children, and occupied herself in the care of their education and of their persons. By her virtuous conduct and demeanour she had acquired great authority among the Flemings; and lived with much dignity, as well as economy, upon that ample dowry which she inherited from her husband. The refentments of this princess were no less warm than her friendships; and that spirit of faction, which it is so difficult for a focial and fanguine temper to guard against, had taken strong possession of her heart, and entrenched fomewhat on the probity which shone forth in the other parts of her character. Hearing of the malignant jealoufy entertained by Henry against her Family, and his oppression of all its partizans, she was moved with the highest indignation, and she determined to make him repent of that enmity to which fo many of her friends, without any reason or necessity, had fallen victims. After confulting with Lincoln and Lovel, she hired a body of two thousand veteran Germans, under the command of Martin Swart, a brave and experienced officer "; and fent them over, together with these two noblemen, to join Simnel in Ireland. The countenance given by persons of such high rank, and the accession of this military force. much raifed the courage of the Irish, and made them entertain the resolution of invading Eng-

1487.

Lambert Simnel in vades England.

m Polyd. Virg. p. 572, 573.

land,

1487.

land, where they believed the spirit of disaffection CHAP. as prevalent as it appeared to be in Ireland. The poverty also under which they laboured made it impossible for them to support any longer their new court and army, and inspired them with a strong defire of enriching themselves by plunder and prefer-

ment in England.

HENRY was not ignorant of these intentions of his enemies; and he prepared himself for defence. He ordered troops to be levied in different parts of the kingdom, and put them under the command of the duke of Bedford and earl of Oxford. He confined the marquis of Dorfet, who he suspected would refent the injuries fuffered by his mother the queen dowager: And, to gratify the people by an appearance of devotion, he made a prilgrimage to our lady of Walfingham, famous for miracles; and there offered up prayers for fuccefs, and for deliverance from his enemies.

Being informed that Simnel was landed at Foudrey in Lancashire, he drew together his forces, and advanced towards the enemy as far as Coventry. The rebels had entertained hopes that the difaffected counties in the North would rife in their favour: But the people in general, averfe to join Irish and German invaders, convinced of Lambert's impofture, and kept in awe by the king's reputation for fuccess and conduct, either remained in tranquillity, or gave affiftance to the royal army. The earl of Lincoln, therefore, who commanded the rebels, finding no hopes but in victory, was determined to bring the matter to a fpeedy decision; and the king, fupported by the native courage of his temper, and emboldened by a great accession of volunteers, who had joined him under the earl of Shrewsbury and lord Strange, declined not the combat. The hostile 6th June. armies met at Stoke in the county of Nottingham, Battle of and fought a battle, which was bloody, and more obstinately disputed than could have been expected

¥487.

CHAP, from the inequality of their force. All the leaders of the rebels were resolved to conquer or to perish: and they inspired their troops with like resolution. The Germans also, being veteran and experienced foldiers, kept the event long doubtful; and even the Irish, though ill-armed and almost defenceless, showed themselves not defective in spirit and bravery. The king's victory was purchased with loss, but was entirely decifive. Lincoln, Broughton, and Swart, perished in the field of battle, with four thousand of their followers. As Lovel was never more heard of, he was believed to have undergone the fame fate. Simnel, with his tutor Simon, was taken prisoner. Simon, being a priest, was not tried at law, and was only committed to close custody: Simnel was too contemptible to be an object either of apprehension or resentment to Henry. He was pardoned, and made a scullion in the king's kitchen; whence he was afterwards advanced to the rank of a falconer.

HENRY had now leifure to revenge himself on his enemics. He made a progress into the northern parts, where he gave many proofs of his rigorous disposition. A strict enquiry was made after those who had affifted or favoured the rebels. The punishments were not all fanguinary: The king made his revenge subservient to his avarice. Heavy fines were levied upon the delinquents. The proceedings of the courts, and even the courts themfelves, were arbitrary. Either the criminals were tried by commissioners appointed for the purpose, or they fuffered punishment by a sentence of a court-martial. And, as a rumour had prevailed before the battle of Stoke, that the rebels had gained the victory, that the royal army was cut in pieces, and that the king himself had escaped by flight, Henry was resolved to interpret the belief

n Pacon, p. 586. Polyd. Virg. p. 574.

or propagation of this report as a mark of dif- CHAP. affection; and he punished many for that pretended crime. But fuch in this age was the fituation of the English government, that the royal pre-rogative, which was but imperfectly restrained during the most peaceable periods, was fure, in tumultuous or even fuspicious times, which frequently recurred to break all bounds of law, and

to violate public liberty.

AFTER the king had gratified his rigour by the punishment of his enemies, he determined to give contentment to the people in a point which, though a mere ceremony, was passionately defired by them. The queen had been married near two years, but had not yet been crowned; and this affectation of delay had given great discontent to the public, and had been one principal fource of the dissaffection which prevailed. The king, instructed by expe- 25th Nov. rience, now finished the ceremony of her coronation; and, to shew a disposition still more gracious, he restored to liberty the marquis of Dorset, who had been able to clear himfelf of all the fuspicions entertained against him.

1487.

## CHAP. XXV.

State of forcign affairs—State of Scotland—of Spain—of the Low Countries—of France—of Britanny—French invasion of Britanny—French embassy to England—Dissimulation of the French court—An insurrection in the North—fuppressed—King Sends forces into Britanny—Annexation of Britanny to France—A parliament—War with France—Invasion of France—Peace with France—Perkin Warbec—His imposture—He is avowed by the dutchess of Burgundy—and by many of the English nobility—Trial and execution of Stanley—A parliament.

CHAP.

NAV.

1488.
State of foreign affairs.

HE king acquired great reputation throughout Europe by the vigorous and profperous conduct of his domestic affairs: But as some incidents about this time invited him to look abroad, and exert himself in behalf of his allies, it will be necessary, in order to give a just account of his soreign measures, to explain the situation of the neighbouring kingdoms; beginning with Scotland, which lies most contiguous.

State of Scotland. THE kingdom of Scotland had not yet attained that state which distinguishes a civilized monarchy, and which enables the government, by the force of its laws and institutions alone, without any extraordinary capacity in the sovereign, to maintain itself in order and tranquillity. James III. who now

1488.

filled the throne, was a prince of little industry CHA? and of a narrow genius; and though it behaved him to yield the reins of government to his ministers, he had never been able to make any choice which could give contentment both to himfelf and to his people. When he bestowed his confidence on any of the principal nobility, he found that they exalted their own family to fuch a height as was dangerous to the prince, and gave umbrage to the state: When he conferred favour on any person of meaner birth, on whose submission he could more depend, the barons of his kingdom, enraged at the power of an upstart minion, proceeded to the utmost extremisies against their fovereign. Had Henry entertained the ambition of conquests, a tempting opportunity now offered of reducing that kingdom to subjection; but as he was probably fenfible that a warlike people, though they might be over-run by reason of their domestic divisions, could not be retained in obedience without a regular military force, which was then unknown in England, he rather intended the renewal of the peace with Scotland, and fent an embassy to James for that purpose. But the Scots, who never defired a durable peace with England, and who deemed their fecurity to confift in constantly preserving themselves in a warlike posture, would not agree to more than a feven years truce, which was accordingly concluded°.

THE European states on the continent were then hastening fast to the situation in which they have remained, without any material alteration, for near three centuries; and began to unite themselves into one extensive system of policy, which comprehended the chief powers of Christendom. Spain, which State of had hitherto been almost entirely occupied within herfelf, now became formidable by the union of Arragon and Castile in the persons of Ferdinand and

XXV. 1488.

CHAP. Isabella, who being princes of great capacity, employed their force in enterprises the most advantageous to their combined monarchy. The conquest of Granada from the Moors was then undertaken, and brought near to a happy conclusion. And in that expedition the military genius of Spain was revived; honour and fecurity were attained; and her princes, no longer kept in awe by a domestic enemy so dangerous, began to enter into all the transactions of Europe, and make a great

figure in every war and negociation.

OffheLow

MAXIMILIAN king of the Romans, fon of the Countries. emperor Frederic, had, by his marriage with the heirefs of Burgundy, acquired an interest in the Netherlands; and though the death of his confort had weakened his connexions with that country, he still pretended to the government as tutor to his fon Philip, and his authority had been acknowledded by Brabant, Holland, and feveral of the provinces. But as Flanders and Hainault still refused to submit to his regency, and even appointed other tutors to Philip, he had been engaged in long wars against that obstinate people, and never was able thoroughly to fubdue their spirit. That he might free himself from the opposition of France, he had concluded a peace with Lewis XI. and had given his daughter Margaret, then an Infant, in marriage to the dauphin; together with Artois, Franche Compté, and Charolois, as her dowry. But this alliance had not produced the defired effect. The dauphin fucceeded to the crown of France by the appellation of Charles VIII.; but Maximilian still found the mutinies of the Flemings fomented by the intrigues of the Court of France.

State of France.

FRANCE, during the two preceding reigns, had made a mighty increase in power and greatness; and had not other states of Europe at the same time received an accession of force, it had been impossible to have retained her within her ancient boundaries.

Moft

1488-

Most of the great fiefs, Normandy, Champagne, CHAP. Anjou, Dauphiny, Guienne, Provence, and Burgundy, had been united to the crown; the English had been expelled from all their conquests; the authority of the prince had been raised to such a height as enabled him to maintain law and order; a confiderable military force was kept on foot, and the finances were able to support it. Lewis XI. indeed, from whom many of these advantages were derived, was dead, and had left his fon in early youth and ill educated, to fustain the weight of the monarchy: But having entrusted the government to his daughter Anne, lady of Beaujeu, a woman of spirit and capacity, the French power fuffered no check or decline. On the contrary, this princess formed the great project, which at last she happily effected, of uniting to the crown Britanny, the last and most independent sief of the monarchy.

FRANCIS II. duke of Britanny, conscious of his Of Britan own incapacity for government, had refigned himfelf to the direction of Peter Landais, a man of mean birth, more remarkable for abilities than for virtue or integrity. The nobles of Britanny, displeased with the great advancement of this favourite, had even proceeded to dissaffection against their sovereign; and after many tumults and diforders, they at last united among themselves, and in a violent manner feized, tried, and put to death the obnoxious minifter. Dreading the refentment of the prince for this invasion of his authority, many of them retired to France; others, for protection and fafety, maintained a fecret correspondence with the French ministry, who, observing the great diffensions among the Bretons, thought the opportunity favourable for invading the dutchy; and fo much the rather, as they could cover their ambition under the specious pretence of providing for domestic security.

CHAP. XXV. 1488.

Lewis duke of Orleans, first prince of the blood, and prefumptive heir of the monarchy, had disputed the administration with the lady of Beaujeu; and though his pretentions had been rejected by the states. he still maintained cabals with many of the grandees, and laid schemes for subverting the authority of that princess. Finding his conspiracies detected, he took to arms, and fortified himself in Beaugenci; but as his revolt was precipitate, before his confederates were ready to join him, he had been obliged to fubmit, and to receive fuch conditions as the French ministry were pleased to impose upon him. Actuated, however, by his ambition, and even by his fears, he foon retired out of France, and took shelter with the duke of Britanny, who was defirous of strengthening himself against the designs of the lady of Beaujeu, by the friendship and credit of the duke of Orleans. This latter prince, also perceiving the ascendant which he soon acquired over the duke of Britanny, had engaged many of his partifans to join him at that court, and had formed the defign of aggrandifing himfelf by a marriage with Anne, the heir of that opulent dutchy.

THE barons of Britanny, who faw all favour engroffed by the duke of Orleans and his train, renewed a stricter correspondence with France, and even invited the French king to make an invasion on their country. Defirous, however, of preferving its independency, they had regulated the number of fuccours which France was to fend them, and had stipulated that no fortified place in Britanny should remain in the possession of that monarchy: A vain precaution where revolted subjects treat with a power French in- fo much superior! The French invaded Britanny with forces three times more numerous than those which they had promifed to the barons; and advancing into the heart of the country, laid fiege to Ploermel. To oppose them, the duke raised a numerous but ill-disciplined army, which he put under

valion of Britanny.

1488

under the command of the duke of Orleans, the CHAP. count of Dunois, and others of the French nobility. The army, discontented with his choice, and jealous of their confederates, foon disbanded, and left their prince with too small a force to keep the field against his invaders. He retired to Vannes; but being hotly purfued by the French, who had now made themselves masters of Ploermel, he escaped to Nantz; and the enemy, having previously taken and garrifoned Vannes, Dinant, and other places, laid close fiege to that city. The barons of Britanny, finding their country menaced with total subjection, began gradually to withdraw from the French army,

and to make peace with their fovereign.

This defertion, however, of the Bretons discouraged not the court of France from pursuing her favourite project of reducing Britanny to subjection. The fituation of Europe appeared favourable to the execution of this defign. Maximilian was indeed engaged in close alliance with the duke of Britanny, and had even opened a treaty for marrying his daughter; but he was on all occasions so indigent, and at that time fo disquieted by the mutinies of the Flemings, that little effectual affiftance could be expected from him. Ferdinand was entirely occupied in the conquest of Grenada; and it was also known, that if France would refign to him Roufillon and Cerdagne to which he had pretenfions, fhe could at any time engage him to abandon the interest of Britanny. England alone was both enabled by her power, and engaged by her interests, to support the independency of that dutchy; and the most dangerous opposition was therefore, by Anne of Beaujeu, expected from that quarter. In order to cover her real defigns, no fooner was she informed of Henry's fuccess against Simnel and his partisans, than she dispatched ambassadors to the court of London, and made professions of the greatest trust and confidence in that monarch.

XXV. 1488. French embally to England.

CHAP. THE ambaffadors, after congratulating Henry on his late victory, and communicating to him, in the most cordial manner, as to an intimate friend, some fuccesses of their master against Maximilian, came in the progress of their discourse to mention the late transactions in Britanny. They told him, that the duke having given protection to French fugitives and rebels, the king had been necessitated, contrary to his intention and inclination, to carry war into that dutchy: That the honour of the crown was interested not to suffer a vassal so far to forget his duty to his liege lord; nor was the fecurity of the government less concerned to prevent the confequences of this dangerous temerity: That the fugitives were no mean or obscure persons; but, among others, the duke of Orleans, first prince of the blood, who, finding himself obnoxious to justice for treasonable practices in France, had fled into Britanny; where he still persevered in laying schemes of rebellion against his fovereign: That the war being thus, on the part of the French monarch, entirely defensive, it would immediately cease, when the duke of Britanny, by returning to his duty, should remove the causes of it: That their master was fensible of the obligations which the duke in very critical times had conferred on Henry; but it was known alfo, that in times still more critical, he or his mercenary counsellors had deferted him, and put his life in the utmost hazard: That his fole refuge in these desperate extremities had been the court of France, which not only protected his perfon, but supplied him with men and money, with which, aided by his own valour and conduct, he had been enabled to mount the throne of England: That France in this transaction had, from friendship to Henry, acted contrary to what in a narrow view might be esteemed her own interest; since, instead of an odious tyrant, she had contributed to establish on a rival throne a prince endowed with fuch virtue 5

and abilities: And that as both the justice of the CHAP. cause, and the obligations conferred on Henry, thus preponderated on the fide of France, she reafonably expected that, if the fituation of his affairs did not permit him to give her affiftance, he would at least preserve a neutrality between the contending parties P.

This discourse of the French ambassadors was plaufible; and to give it greater weight, they communicated to Henry, as in confidence, their mafter's intention, after he should have settled the differences with Britanny, to lead an army into Italy, and make good his pretenfions to the kingdom of Naples: A project which they knew would give no umbrage to the court of England. But all these artifices were in vain employed against the penetration of the king. He clearly faw that France had entertained the view of subduing Britanny; but he also perceived, that she would meet with great, and, as he thought, insuperable difficulties in the execution of her project. The native force of that dutchy, he knew, had always been confiderable, and had often, without any foreign affiltance, refifted the power of France; the natural temper of the French nation, he imagined, would make them eafily abandon any enterprize which required perseverance; and as the heir of the crown was confederated with the duke of Britanny, the ministers would be still more remiss in profecuting a scheme which must draw on them his refentment and displeasure. Should even these internal obstructions be removed, Maximilian, whose enmity to France was well known, and who now paid his addresses to the heiress of Britanny, would be able to make a diversion on the side of Flanders; nor could it be expected that France, if she profecuted fuch ambitious projects, would be allowed to remain in tranquillity by Ferdinand and Isabella.

> P Bacon, p. 589. L 2



CHAP. Above all. he thought the French court could never expect that England, fo deeply interested to preferve the independency of Britanny, fo able by her power and fituation to give effectual and prompt affistance, would permit such an accession of force to her rival. He imagined, therefore, that the ministers of France, convinced of the impracticability of their scheme, would at last embrace pacific views, and would abandon an enterprise so obnoxious to all the

potentates of Europe.

This reasoning of Henry was solid, and might justly engage him in dilatory and cautious measures: But there entered into his conduct another motive, which was apt to draw him beyond the just bounds, because founded on a ruling passion. His frugality, which by degrees degenerated into avarice, made him averse to all warlike enterprises and distant expeditions, and engaged him previously to try the expedient of negotiation. He dispatched Urswic his almoner, a man of address and abilities, to make offer of his mediation to the contending parties: An offer which he thought, if accepted by France, would foon lead to a composure of all differences: if refused or eluded, would at least discover the perseverance of that court in her ambitious projects. Urswic found the lady of Beaujeu, now dutchess of Bourbon, engaged in the siege of Nantz, and had the fatisfaction to find that his mafter's offer of mediation was readily embraced, and with many expressions of confidence and moderation. That able princess concluded, that the duke of Orleans, who governed the court of Britanny, forefeeing that every accommodation must be made at his expence, would use all his interest to have Henry's proposal rejected; and would by that means make an apology for the French measures, and draw on the Bretons the reproach of oblinacy and injustice. The event justified her prudence. When the English ambassador made the same offer to the duke of Britanny,

Diffimulaton of the French court.

Britanny, he received for answer, in the name of CHAP. that prince, that having fo long acted the part of protector and guardian to Henry during his youth and adverse fortune, he had expected from a monarch of fuch virtue, more effectual assistance in his present distresses, than a barren offer of mediation, which suspended not the progress of the French arms: That if Henry's gratitude were not sufficient to engage him in fuch a measure, his prudence, as king of England, should discover to him the pernicious consequences attending the conquest of Britanny, and its annexation to the crown of France: That that kingdom, already too powerful would be enabled, by fo great an accession of force, to display, to the ruin of England, that hostile dispofition which had always subsisted between those rival nations: That Britanny, fo useful an ally, which, by its situation, gave the English an entrance into the heart of France, being annexed to that kingdom, would be equally enabled, from its situation, to difturb, either by piracies or naval armaments, the commerce and peace of England: And that, if the duke rejected Henry's mediation, it proceeded neither from an inclination to a war which he experienced to be ruinous to him, nor from a confidence in his own force, which he knew to be much inferior to that of the enemy; but, on the contrary, from a fense of his present necessities, which must engage the king to act the part of his confederate, not that of a mediator.

When this answer was reported to the king, he abandoned not the plan which he had formed: He only concluded, that some more time was requisite to quell the obstinacy of the Bretons, and make them submit to reason. And when he learned that the people of Britanny, anxious for their duke's safety, had formed a tumultuary army of 60,000 men, and had obliged the French to raise the siege of Nantz, he fortised himself the more in his

Z 3

opinion,



CHAP. opinion, that the court of France would at last be reduced, by multiplied obstacles and difficulties, to abandon the project of reducing Britanny to fubjection. He continued therefore his scheme of negotiation, and thereby exposed himself to be deceived by the artifices of the French ministry; who, still pretending pacific intentions, fent lord Bernard Daubigny, a Scotchman of quality, to London, and pressed Henry not to be discouraged in offering his mediation to the court of Britanny. The king, on his part, dispatched another embassy, confishing of Urfwic the abbot of Abingdon, and fir Richard Tonftal, who carried new propofals for an amicable treaty. No effectual fuccours, meanwhile, were provided for the distressed Bretons. Lord Woodwille, brother to the queen dowager, having alked leave to raife underhand a body of volunteers, and to transport them into Britanny, met with a refusal from the king, who was desirous of preserving the appearance of a strict neutrality. That nobleman, however, still persisted in his purpose. He went over to the Isle of Wight, of which he was governor; levied a body of 400 men; and having at last obtained, as is supposed, the fecret permission of Henry, failed with them to Britanny. a8th July. This enterprise proved fatal to the leader, and brought finall relief to the unhappy duke. The Bretons rashly engaged in a general action with the French at St. Aubin, and were discomsited. Woodwille and all the English were put to the fword; together with a body of Bretons, who had been accoutred in the garb of Englishmen, in order to strike a greater terror into the French, to whom the martial prowefs of that nation was always formidable q. The duke of Orleans, the prince of Orange, and many other persons of rank, were taken prisoners: And the military force of Britanny was totally broken.

The death of the duke, which followed foon after, CHAP. threw affairs into still greater confusion, and seemed to threaten the state with a final subjection.

Though the king did not prepare against these 9th Sept. events, fo hurtful to the interests of England, with fufficient vigour and precaution, he had not altogether overlooked them. Determined to maintain a pacific conduct, as far as the fituation of affairs would permit, he yet knew the warlike temper of his fubjects, and observed, that their ancient and inveterate animofity to France was now revived by the prospect of this great accession to her power and grandeur. He resolved therefore to make advantage of this disposition, and draw some supplies from the people, on pretence of giving affiltance to the duke of Britanny. He had summoned a parliament at Westminster; and he soon persuaded them to grant him a confiderable fubfidy 8. But this fupply, though voted by parliament, involved the king in unexpected difficulties. The counties of Durham and York, always discontented with Henry's government, and farther provoked by the late oppressions, under which they had laboured, after the suppression of Simnel's rebellion, resisted the commissioners who were appointed to levy the tax. The commissioners, terrified with this ap- An infurpearance of fedition, made application to the earl rection in the North, of Northumberland, and defired of him advice and affistance in the execution of their office. That nobleman thought the matter of importance enough to confult the king; who, unwilling to yield to the humours of a difcontented populace, and forefeeing the pernicious consequence of such a precedent, renewed his orders for strictly levying the imposition. Northumberland fummoned together the justices and chief freeholders, and delivered the king's commands

gth November 1487. 5 Polydore Virgil, p. 579, fays, that this imposition was a capitation tax; the other historians say, it was a tax of two shillings in the pound.



CHAP. in the most imperious terms, which, he thought, would enforce obedience, but which tended only to provoke the people, and make them believe him the adviser of those orders which he delivered to them t. They flew to arms, attacked Northumberland in his house, and put him to death. Having incurred fuch deep guilt, their mutinous humour prompted them to declare against the king himself; and being instigated by John Achamber, a seditious fellow of low birth, they chose fir John Egremond their leader, and prepared themselves for a vigorous refistance. Henry was not difmayed with an infurrection fo precipitate and ill-supported. He immediately levied a force, which he put under the command of the earl of Surrey, whom he had freed from confinement and received into favour. His intention was to fend down these troops, in order to check the progress of the rebels; while he himfelf should follow with a greater body, which would absolutely insure success. But Surrey thought himfelf strong enough to encounter alone a raw and unarmed multitude; and he fucceeded in the attempt. The rebels were diffipated; John Achamber was taken prisoner, and afterwards executed with fome of his accomplices; fir John Egremond fled to the dutchess of Burgundy, who gave him protection; the greater number of the rebels received a pardon.

fuppreffed.

> HENRY had probably expected, when he obtained this grant from parliament, that he should be able to terminate the affair of Britanny by negotiation, and that he might thereby fill his coffers with the money levied by the imposition. But as the distresses of the Bretons still multiplied, and became every day more urgent; he found himfelf under the necessity of taking more vigorous meafures, in order to support them. On the death of

the duke, the French had revived some antiquated C H A P. claims to the dominion of the dutchy; and as the duke of Orleans was now captive in France, their former pretence for holtilities could no longer ferve as a cover to their ambition. The king refolved, therefore, to engage as auxiliary to Britanny: and to confult the interests as well as defires of his people, by opposing himself to the progress of the French power. Befides entering into a league with Maximilian, and another with Ferdinand, which were distant resources, he levied a body of troops to the number of 6000 men, with an intention of transporting them into Britanny. Still anxious, however, for the repayment of his expences, he concluded a treaty with the young dutchess, by which fhe engaged to deliver into his hands two fea-port towns, there to remain till she should entirely refund the charges of the armament". Though he engaged for the fervice of these troops during the space of ten months only, yet was the dutchess obliged, by the necessity of her affairs, to submit to fuch rigid conditions, imposed by an ally fo much concerned in interest to protect her. The forces Kingsfends arrived under the command of lord Willoughby of forces into Broke; and made the Bretons, during some time, masters of the field. The French retired into their garrisons; and expected, by dilatory measures, to waste the fire of the English, and disgust them with the enterprife. The scheme was well laid, and met with fuccess. Lord Broke found such discord and confusion in the counsels of Britanny, that no measures could be concerted for any undertaking; no fupply obtained; no provisions, carriages, artillery, or military stores procured. The whole court was rent into factions: No one minister had acquired the ascendant: And whatever project was

1489

u Du Tillet, Recueil des Traités.

1480.

C H A P. formed by one, was fure to be traversed by another. The English, disconcerted in every enterprise by these animosities and uncertain counsels, returned home as foon as the time of their fervice was elapfed; leaving only a fmall garrifon in those towns which had been configned into their hands. During their stay in Britanny, they had only contributed still farther to waste the country; and by their departure, they left it entirely at the mercy of the enemy. So feeble was the fuccour which Henry, in this important conjuncture, afforded his ally, whom the invafion of a foreign enemy, concurring with domestic diffensions, had reduced to the utmost diffress.

> THE great object of the domestic dissensions in Britanny was the disposal of the young dutchess in marriage. The marefchal Rieux, favoured by Henry, feconded the fuit of the lord d'Albret, who led fome forces to her affiftance. The chancellor Montauban, observing the aversion of the dutchess to this fuitor, infifted that a petty prince, fuch as d'Albret, was unable to support Anne in her present extremities; and he recommended fome more powerful alliance, particularly that of Maximilian king of the Romans. This party at last prevailed; the marriage with Maximilian was celebrated by proxy; and the dutchess thenceforth assumed the title of Queen of the Romans. But this magnificent appellation was all she gained by her marriage. Maximilian, destitute of troops and money, and embarraffed with the continual revolts of the Flemings, could fend no fuccour to his distressed confort; while d'Albret, enraged at the preference given to his rival, deferted her caufe, and received the French into Nantz, the most important place in the dutchy, both for strength and riches.

THE French court now began to change their scheme with regard to the subjection of Britanny. Charles had formerly been affianced to Margaret

daughter

T490.

1490.

daughter of Maximilian; who, though too young CHAP. for the confummation of her marriage, had been fent to Paris to be educated, and at this time bore the title of Oueen of France. Besides the rich dowry which she brought the king, she was, after her brother Philip, then in early youth, heir to all the dominions of the house of Burgundy; and seemed, in many respects, the most proper match that could be chosen for the young monarch. These circumstances had so blinded both Maximilian and Henry, that they never suspected any other intentions in the French court; nor were they able to discover that engagements, feemingly fo advantageous, and fo folemnly entered into, could be infringed and fet aside. But Charles began to perceive that the conquest of Britanny, in opposition to the natives, and to all the great powers of Christendom, would prove a difficult enterprise; and that even if he should over-run the country, and make himself master of the fortreffes, it would be impossible for him long to retain possession of them. The marriage alone of the dutchess could fully reannex that fief to the crown; and the present and certain enjoyment of so confiderable a territory feemed preferable to the prospect of inheriting the dominions of the house of Burgundy; a prospect which became every day more distant and precarious. Above all, the marriage of Maximilian and Anne appeared destructive to the grandeur, and even fecurity, of the French monarch; while that prince, possessing Flanders on the one hand, and Britanny on the other, might thus, from both quarters, make inroads into the heart of the country. The only remedy for thefe evils was therefore concluded to be the diffolution of the two marriages, which had been celebrated, but not confummated; and the espousal of the

Ir was necessary that this expedient, which had not been foreseen by any court in Europe, and which

dutchess of Britanny by the king of France.

they



C HAP. they were all fo much interested to oppose, should be kept a profound fecret, and should be discovered to the world only by the full execution of it. The measures of the French ministry in the conduct of this delicate enterprise were wife and political. While they pressed Britanny with all the rigours of war, they fecretly gained the count of Dunois, who poffessed great authority with the Bretons; and having also engaged in their interests the prince of Orange, cousin-german to the dutchess, they gave him his liberty, and fent him into Britanny. These partifans, supported by other emissaries of France, prepared the minds of men for the great revolution projected, and displayed, though still with many precautions, all the advantages of a union with the French monarchy. They represented to the barons of Britanny, that their country, haraffed during fo many years with perpetual war, had need of fome repose, and of a folid and lasting peace with the only power that was formidable to them: That their alliance with Maximilian was not able to afford them even present protection; and, by closely uniting them to a power which was rival to the greatness of France, fixed them in perpetual enmity with that potent monarchy: That their vicinity exposed them first to the inroads of the enemy; and the happiest event which, in such a situation could befal them, would be to attain a peace, though by a final fubjection to France, and by the loss of that liberty transmitted to them from their ancestors: And that any other expedient, compatible with the honour of the state, and their duty to their fovereign, was preferable to a scene of such disorder and devastation.

THESE fuggestions had influence with the Bretons: But the chief difficulty lay in furmounting the prejudices of the young dutchess herself. That princess had imbibed a strong prepossession against the French nation, particularly against Charles, the

author

author of all the calamities which, from her earliest CHAP. infancy, had befallen her family. She had also fixed her affections on Maximilian; and as she now deemed him her husband, she could not, she thought, without incurring the greatest guilt, and violating the most folemn engagements, contract a marriage with any other person. In order to overcome her obstinacy, Charles gave the duke of Orleans his liberty, who, though formerly a fuitor to the dutchess, was now contented to ingratiate himfelf with the king, by employing in his favour all the interest which he still possessed in Britanny. Marefchal Rieux and chancellor Montauban were reconciled by his mediation; and these rival ministers now concurred with the prince of Orange and the count of Dunois, in pressing the conclusion of a marriage with Charles. By their fuggestion, Charles advanced with a powerful army, and invested Rennes, at that time the residence of the dutchefs; who, affailed on all hands, and finding none to support her in her inflexibility, at last opened the gates of the city, and agreed to espouse the king of France. She was married at Langey in Touraine; Annexaconducted to St. Dennis, where the was crowned; Britanny thence made her entry into Paris, amidst the joyful to France. acclamations of the people, who regarded this marriage as the most prosperous event that could have befallen the monarchy.

THE triumph and fuccess of Charles was the most fenfible mortification to the king of the Romans. He had loft a confiderable territory, which he thought he had acquired, and an accomplished princefs, whom he had espoused; he was affronted in the person of his daughter Margaret, who was sent back to him after she had been treated, during some years, as queen of France; he had reason to reproach himself with his own supine security, in neglecting the confummation of his marriage, which

XXV. 1490.

1491.

149I.

C H AP. was eafily practicable for him, and which would have rendered the tye indisfoluble: These considerations threw him into the most violent rage, which he vented in very indecent expressions; and he threatened France with an invafion from the united arms of Austria, Spain, and England.

> THE king of England had also just reason to reproach himself with misconduct in this important transaction; and though the affair had terminated in a manner which he could not precifely foresee, his negligence in leaving his most useful ally so long exposed to the invasion of superior power, could not but appear, on reflexion, the result of timid caution and narrow politics. As he valued himself on his extensive foresight and profound judgment, the ascendant acquired over him by a raw youth fuch as Charles, could not but give him the highest displeasure, and prompt him to feek vengeance, after all remedy for his miscarriage was become absolutely impracticable. But he was farther actuated by avarice, a motive still more predominant with him than either pride or revenge; and he fought, even from his prefent disappointments, the gratification of this ruling passion. On pretence of a French war, he iffued a commission for levying a Benevolence on his people"; a species of taxation which had been abolished by a recent law of Richard III. This violence (for fuch it really was) fell chiefly on the commercial part of the nation, who were possessed of the ready money. London alone contributed to the amount of near 10,000 pounds. Archbishop Morton, the chancellor, instructed the commissioners to employ a dilemma, in which every one might be comprehended: If the persons applied to lived frugally, they were told that their par-

7th July.

fimony

u Rymer, vol. xii. p. 446. Bacon fays that the benevolence was levied with confert of parliament, which is a mistake.

fimony must necessarily have enriched them: If their CHAP. method of living were fplendid and hospitable, they were concluded to be opulent on account of their expences. This device was by fome called chancellor Morton's fork, by others his crutch.

1491.

So little apprehensive was the king of a parliament on account of his levying this arbitrary impofition, that he foon after fummoned that affembly to meet at Westminster; and he even expected to and Och. enrich himself farther by working on their passions and prejudices. He knew the displeasure which the English had conceived against France on account of the acquifition of Britanny; and he took care to infift on that topic, in the speech which he himself pronounced to the parliament. He told them A parliathat France, elated with her late fucceifes, had even proceeded to a contempt of England, and had refused to pay the tribute which Lewis XI. had stipulated to Edward IV.: That it became fo warlike a nation as the English to be roused by this indignity, and not to limit their pretenfions merely to repelling the prefent injury: That, for his part, he was determined to lay claim to the crown itself of France, and to maintain by force of arms fo just a title, transmitted to him by his gallant ancestors: That Crecy, Poictiers, and Azincour, were fufficient to instruct them in their superiority over the enemy; nor did he despair of adding new names to the glorious catalogue: That a king of France had been prisoner in London, and a king of England had been crowned at Paris; events which should animate them to an emulation of like glory with that which had been enjoyed by their forefathers: That the domestic diffensions of England had been the fole cause of her losing these foreign dominions; and her present internal union would be the effectual means of recovering them: That where fuch lastling honour was in view, and fuch an important acquifition, it became not brave men to repine at the advance

CHAP. advance of a little treasure: And that, for his part, he was determined to make the war maintain itself: and hoped, by the invasion of so opulent a kingdom as France, to increase, rather than diminish, the riches of the nation w.

> Notwithstanding these magnificent vaunts of the king, all men of penetration concluded, from the personal character of the man, and still more from the fituation of affairs, that he had no ferious intention of pushing the war to such extremities as he pretended. France was not now in the same condition as when fuch fuccefsful inroads had been made upon her by former kings of England. The great fiefs were united to the crown; the princes of the blood were defirous of tranquillity; the nation abounded with able captains and veteran foldiers: and the general aspect of her affairs seemed rather to threaten her neighbours, than to promife them any confiderable advantages against her. The levity and vain-glory of Maximilian were supported by his pompous titles; but were ill feconded by miltary power, and still less by any revenue proportioned to them. The politic Ferdinand, while he made a show of war, was actually negotiating for peace; and, rather than expose himself to any hazard, would accept of very moderate concessions from France. Even England was not free from domestic discontents; and in Scotland, the death of Henry's friend and ally James III. who had been murdered by his rebeilious subjects, had made way for the fuccession of his son James IV. who was devoted to the French interest, and would furely be alarmed at any important progress of the English arms. But all these obvious considerations had no influence on the parliament. Inflamed by the ideas of fubduing France, and of enriching themselves by the spoils of that kingdom, they gave into the snare

prepared for them, and voted the supply which the CHAP. king demanded. Two fifteenths were granted XXV. him; and the better to enable his vaffals and nobility to attend him, an act was passed, empowering them to fell their estates, without paying any fines for alienation.

1491.

1492.

THE nobility were univerfall feized with a defire of military glory; and having cledulously swallowed all the boasts of the king, they dreamed of no less than carrying their triumphant banners to the gates of Paris, and putting the crown of France on the head of their fovereign. Many of them borrowed large fums, or fold off manors, that they might appear in the field with greater splendour, and lead out their followers in more complete order. The 6th Oct. king croffed the fea, and arrived at Calais on the War with France. fixth of October, with an army of twenty-five thoufand foot and fixteen hundred horse, which he put under the command of the duke of Bedford and the earl of Oxford: But as fome inferred, from his opening the campaign in fo late a feafon, that peace would foon be concluded between the crowns, he was defirous of fuggesting a contrary inference. "He had come over," he faid, " to make an en-" tire conquest of France, which was not the work of one summer. It was therefore of no consequence at what feafon he began the invafion; " especially as he had Calais ready for winter-quares ters." As if he had feriously intended this enterprife, he instantly marched into the enemy's country, and laid fiege to Bulloigne: But not with stand- Invasion of ing this appearance of hostility, there had been fe- France. cret advances made towards peace above three months before; and commissioners had been appointed to treat of the terms. The better to reconcile the minds of men to this unexpected meafure, the king's ambaffadors arrived in the camp from the Low Countries, and informed him that

VOL. III.

XXV. 1492.

CHAP. Maximilian was in no readiness to join him; nor was any affiftance to be expected from that quarter. Soon after messengers came from Spain, and brought news of a peace concluded between that kingdom and France, in which Charles had made a cession of the counties of Rousillon and Cerdagne to Ferdinand. Though these articles of intelligence were carefully dispersed throughout the army, the king was still apprehensive lest a sudden peace, after fuch magnificent promifes and high expectations. might expose him to reproach. In order the more effectually to cover the intended measures, he fecretly engaged the marquis of Dorfet, together with twenty-three persons of distinction, to present him a petition for agreeing to a treaty with France. The pretence was founded on the late feafon of the year, the difficulty of fupplying the army at Calais during winter, the obstacles which arose in the siege of Bulloigne, the defertion of those allies whose affift. ance had been most relied on: Events which might. all of them, have been foreseen before the embarkation of the forces.

3d Nov. Feace with France.

In confequence of these preparatory steps, the bishop of Exeter and lord Daubeny were fent to confer at Estaples with the mareschal de Cordes, and to put the last hand to the treaty. A few days fufficed for that purpose: The demands of Henry were wholly pecuniary; and the king of France, who deemed the peaceable possession of Britanny an equivalent for any fum, and who was all on fire for his projected expedition into Italy, readily agreed to the proposals made him. He engaged to pay Henry 745,000 crowns, near 400,000 pounds sterling of our present money; partly as a reimbursement of the sums advanced to Britanny, partly as arrears of the pension due to Edward IV. And he stipulated a yearly pension to Henry and his heirs of 25,000 crowns. Thus the king, as remarked

1492.

marked by his historian, made profit upon his sub- CHAP. jects for the war; and upon his enemies for the XXV. peace x. And the people agreed that he had fulfilled his promife, when he faid to the parliament that he would make the war maintain itself. Maximilian was, if he pleafed, comprehended in Henry's treaty; but he disdained to be in any respect beholden to an ally of whom he thought he had reafon to complain: He made a separate peace with France, and obtained restitution of Artois, Franchecompté, and Charolois, which had been ceded as the dowry of his daughter when she was affianced to the

king of France.

THE peace concluded between England and France was the more likely to continue, because Charles, full of ambition and youthful hopes, bent all his attention to the fide of Italy, and foon after undertook the conquest of Naples; an enterprise which Henry regarded with the greater indifference, as Naples lay remote from him, and France had never in any age been successful in that quarter. The king's authority was fully established at home; and every rebellion which had been attempted against him had hitherto tended only to confound his enemies, and confolidate his power and influence. His reputation for policy and conduct was daily augmenting; his treasures had increased even from the most unfavourable events; the hopes of all pretenders to his throne were cut off, as well by his marriage as by the issue which it had brought him. In this prosperous situation the king had reason to flatter himself with the prospect of durable peace and tranquillity: But his inveterate and indefatigable enemies, whom he had wantonly provoked, raifed him an adverfary, who long kept him in inquietude, and fometimes even brought him into danger.

<sup>\*</sup> Bacon, p. 605. Polyd. Virg. p. 585.

C H A P. XXV.

The dutches of Burgundy, full of resentment for the depression of her family and its partisans, rather irritated than discouraged by the ill success of her past enterprises, was determined, at least, to disturb that government which she found it so disficult to subvert. By means of her emissaries she propagated a report that her nephew Richard Plantagenet, duke of York, had escaped from the Tower when his elder brother was murdered, and that he still lay some where concealed: And finding this rumour, however improbable, to be greedily received by the people, she had been looking out for some young man proper to personate that unfortunate prince.

Perkin Warbec.

THERE was one Ofbec, or Warbec, a renegado Tew of Tournay, who had been carried by fome butiness to London in the reign of Edward IV. and had there a fon born to him. Having had opportunities of being known to the king, and obtaining his favour, he prevailed with that prince, whose manners were very affable, to ftand godfather to his fon, to whom he gave the name of Peter, corrupted, after the Flemish manner, into Peterkin, or Perkin. It was by fome believed that Edward, among his amorous adventures, had a fecret commerce with Warbec's wife; and people thence accounted for that refemblance which was afterwards remarked between young Perkin and that monarch y. Some vears after the birth of this child Warbec returned to Tournay; where Perkin his fon did not long remain, but by different accidents was carried from place to place, and his birth and fortunes became thereby unknown, and difficult to be traced by the most diligent inquiry. The variety of his adventures had happily favoured the natural verfatility and fagacity of his genius; and he seemed to be a youth perfectly fitted to act any part, or affume any character.

this light he had been represented to the dutchess of CHAP. Burgundy, who, struck with the concurrence of fo many circumstances suited to her purpose, defired to be made acquainted with the man on whom the already began to ground her hopes of fuccess. She found him to exceed her most fanguine expectations; fo comely did he appear in his person, so His imgraceful in his air, fo courtly in his address, fo full posture. of docility and good fense in his behaviour and conversation. The lesions necessary to be taught him, in order to his personating the duke of York, were foon learned by a youth of fuch quick apprehension; but as the feafon feemed not then favourable for his enterprise, Margaret, in order the better to conceal him, fent him, under the care of lady Brampton, into Portugal, where he remained a year, unknown to all the world.

THE war, which was then ready to break out between France and England, feemed to afford a proper opportunity for the discovery of this new phænomenon; and Ireland, which still retained its attachments to the house of York, was chosen as the proper place for his first appearance. He landed at Corke; and immediately assuming the name of Richard Plantagenet, drew to him partifans among that credulous people. He wrote letters to the earls of Defmond and Kildare, inviting them to join his party: He dispersed every where the strange intelligence of his escape from the cruelty of his uncle Richard: And men, fond of every thing new and wonderful, began to make him the general subject of their discourse, and even the object of their favour.

THE news foon reached France; and Charles, prompted by the fecret folicitations of the dutchefs of Burgundy, and the intrigues of one Frion, a fe-

Z Polyd. Virg. p. 589.



cretary of Henry's, who had deferted his fervice. fent Perkin an invitation to repair to him at Paris. He received him with all the marks of regard due to the duke of York; fettled on him a handsome penfion, affigned him magnificent lodgings, and in order to provide at once for his dignity and fecurity. gave him a guard for his person, of which lord Congrefal accepted the office of captain. The French courtiers readily embraced a fiction which their fovereign thought it his interest to adopt: Perkin. both by his deportment and personal qualities, supported the prepoffession which was spread abroad of his royal pedigree: And the whole kingdom was full of the accomplishments, as well as the fingular adventures and misfortunes of the young Plantagenet. Wonders of this nature are commonly augmented at a distance. From France the admiration and credulity diffused themselves into England: Sir George Nevil, fir John Taylor, and above a hundred gentlemen more, came to Paris, in order to offer their fervices to the supposed duke of York. and to share his fortunes: And the impostor had now the appearance of a court attending him, and began to entertain hopes of final fuccess in his undertakings.

WHEN peace was concluded between France and England at Estaples, Henry applied to have Perkin put into his hands; but Charles, resolute not to betray a young man, of whatever birth, whom he had invited into his kingdom, would agree only to difmiss him. The pretended Richard retired to the dutchefs of Burgundy, and craving her protection and affiftance, offered to lay before her all the proofs of that birth to which he laid claim. The princess avowed by affected ignorance of his pretentions; even put on ef of Bur- the appearance of distrust; and having, as she faid, been already deceived by Simnel, the was determined never again to be feduced by any impostor. She de-

Heis the dutch . gundy,

fired

fired before all the world to be instructed in his rea. C H AP. fons for assuming the name which he bore; feemed to examine every circumstance with the most scrupulous nicety; put many particular questions to him; affected aftonishment at his answers; and at last, after long and severe scrutiny, burst out into joy and admiration at his wonderful deliverance, embraced him as her nephew, the true image of Edward, the fole heir of the Plantagenets, and the legitimate fuccessor to the English throne. She immediately affigned him an equipage fuited to his pretended birth; appointed him a guard of thirty halberdiers; engaged every one to pay court to him; and on all occations honoured him with the appellation of the White Rose of England. The Flemings, moved by the authority which Margaret, both from her rank and personal character enjoyed among them, readily adopted the fiction of Perkin's royal descent: No furmife of his true birth was as yet heard of: Little contradiction was made to the prevailing opinion: And the English, from their great communication with the Low Countries, were every day more and more prepoffelled in favour of the impostor. IT was not the populace alone of Englan! that

XXV. 1494.

14954

gave credit to Perkin's pretentions. Men of the highest birth and quality, disgusted at Henry's government, by which they found the nobility deprested, began to turn their eyes towards the new claimant; and some of them even entered into a correspondence with him. Lord Fitzwater, fir Simon Mountfort, and by fir Thomas Thwaites, betrayed their inclination to- many of wards him: Sir William Stanley himself, lord cham- ph nobiberlain, who had been so active in raising Henry to hy. the throne, moved either by blind credulity or a restless ambition, entertained the project of a revolt in favour of his enemy. Sir Robert Clifford and William Barley were still more open in their meafures: They went over to Flanders, were introduced

the Eng-



C H AP. by the dutchess of Burgundy to the acquaintance of Perkin, and made him a tender of their fervices. Clifford wrote back to England, that he knew perfeetly the person of Richard duke of York, that this young man was undoubtedly that prince himself, and that no circumstance of his story was exposed to the least difficulty. Such positive intelligence, conveyed by a person of rank and character, was fufficient, with many, to put the matter beyond question, and excited the attention and wonder even of the most indifferent. The whole nation was held in fuspence; a regular conspiracy was formed against the king's authority; and a correspondence settled between the malcontents in Flanders and those in

England.

THE king was informed of all these particulars: but agreeably to his character, which was both cautious and resolute, he proceeded deliberately, though steadily, in counter-working the projects of his enemies. His first object was to ascertain the death of the real duke of York, and to confirm the opinion that had always prevailed with regard to that event. Five persons had been employed by Richard in the murder of his nephews, or could give evidence with regard to it; fir James Tirrel, to whom he had committed the government of the Tower for that purpose, and who had feen the dead princes; Forrest, Dighton, and Slater, who perpetrated the crime; and the priest who buried the bodies. Tirrel and Dighton alone were alive, and they agreed in the fame story; but as the priest was dead, and as the bodies were supposed to have been removed by Richard's orders, from the place where they were first interred, and could not now be found, it was not in Henry's power to put the fact, fo much as he wished, beyond all doubt and controversy.

HE met at first with more difficulty, but was in the end more fuccessful in detecting who this wonderful person was that thus boldly advanced preten-

fions

1493.

fions to his crown. He dispersed his spies all over CHAP. Flanders and England; he engaged many to pretend that they had embraced Perkin's party; he directed them to infinuate themselves into the confidence of the young man's friends; in proportion as they conveyed intelligence of any conspirator, he bribed his retainers, his domestic servants, nay, fometimes his confessor, and by these means traced up some other confederate; Clifford himself he engaged, by the hope of rewards and pardon, to betray the fecrets committed to him; the more trust he gave to any of his spies, the higher resentment did he feign against them; some of them he even caused to be publicly anathematised, in order the better to procure them the confidence of his enemies: And in the iffue, the whole plan of the confpiracy was clearly laid before him; and the pedigree, adventures, life, and conversation of the pretended duke of York. This latter part of the story was immediately published for the fatisfaction of the nation: The conspirators he referved for a flower and furer vengeance.

MEANWHILE he remonstrated with the archduke Philip, on account of the countenance and protection which was afforded in his dominions to fo infamous an impoltor; contrary to treaties subfissing between the fovereigns, and to the mutual amity which had fo long been maintained by the fubjects of both states. Margaret had interest enough to get his application rejected; on pretence that Philip had no authority over the demesnes of the dutchess dowager. And the king, in refentment of this injury, cut off all commerce with the Low Countries, banished the Flemings, and recalled his own subjects from these provinces. Philip retaliated by like edicts; but Henry knew, that so mutinous a people as the Flemings would not long bear, in compliance with the humours of their prince, to be

deprived

14948

CHAP.

deprived of the beneficial branch of commerce which

they carried on with England.

HE had it in his power to inflict more effectual punishment on his domestic enemies; and when his projects were fufficiently matured, he failed not to make them feel the effects of his refentment. Almost in the same instant he arrested Firzwater. Mountfort, and Thwaites, together with William Daubeney, Robert Ratcliff, Thomas Cressenor, and Thomas Astwood. All these were arraigned, convicted, and condemned for high treason, in adhering and promising aid to Perkin. Mountfort, Ratcliff, and Daubeney, were immediately executed; Fitzwater was fent over to Calais, and detained in cuftody; but being detected in practifing on his keeper for an escape, he soon after underwent the same fate. The rest were pardoned, together with William Worfeley dean of St. Paul's, and fome others, who had been accused and examined, but not brought to public trial b.

GREATER and more folemn preparations were deemed requifite for the trial of Stanley, lord chamberlain, whose authority in the nation, whose domestic connexions with the king, as well as his former fervices, feemed to fecure him against any accusation or punishment. Clifford was directed to come over privately to England, and to throw himfelf at the king's feet while he fat in council; craving pardon for past offences, and offering to attone for them by any fervices which should be required of him. Henry then told him, that the best proof he could give of penitence, and the only fervice he could now render him, was the full confession of his guilt, and the discovery of all his accomplices, however diftinguished by rank or character. Encouraged by this exhortation, Clifford accused Stanley, then pre-

1494-

fent. as his chief abettor; and offered to lay before CHAP. the council the full proof of his guilt. Stanley himfelf could not discover more surprise than was affected by Henry on the occasion. He received the intelligence as absolutely false and incredible; that a man, to whom he was in a great measure beholden for his crown, and even for his life; a man to whom by every honour and favour he had endeavoured to express his gratitude; whose brother, the earl of Derby, was his own father-in-law; to whom he had even committed the trust of his person, by creating him lord chamberlain: That this man, enjoying his full confidence and affection, not actuated by any motive of discontent or apprehension, should engage in a conspiracy against him. Clifford was therefore exhorted to weigh well the confequences of his accusation; but as he persisted in the same positive affeverations, Stanley was committed to custody, and was foon after examined before the council c. He denied not the guilt imputed to him by Clifford; he did not even endeavour much to extenuate it; whether he thought that a frank and open confession would serve as an atonement, or trusted to his prefent connexions and his former fervices for pardon and fecurity. But princes are often apt to Trial and regard great fervices as a ground of jealoufy, espe-execution of Stanley. cially if accompanied with a craving and restless disposition in the person who has personmed them. The general discontent also, and mutinous humour of the people, seemed to require some great example of feverity. And as Stanley was one of the most opulent subjects in the kingdom, being possessed of above three thousand pounds a year in land, and forty thousand marks in plate and money, besides other property of great value, the prospect of so rich a forfeiture was deemed no small motive for Henry's proceeding to extremities against him. After fix 15th Feb.

1495.

c Bacon, p. 611. Polyd. Virg. p. 593.

weeks

C HAP. weeks delay, which was interposed in order to shew that the king was restrained by doubts and scruples; the prisoner was brought to his trial, condemned, and prefently after beheaded. Historians are not agreed with regard to the crime which was proved against him. The general report is, that he should have faid in confidence to Clifford, that if he were fure the young man who appeared in Flanders was really fon to king Edward, he never would bear arms against him. The sentiment might disgust Henry, as implying a preference of the house of York to that of Lancaster; but could scarcely be the ground, even in those arbitrary times, of a sentence of high treason against Stanley. It is more probable, therefore, as is afferted by some historians, that he had expressly engaged to affift Perkin, and had actually

fent him some supply of money.

THE fate of Stanley made great impression on the kingdom, and struck all the partisans of Perkin with the deepest dismay. From Clifford's desertion they found that all their fecrets were betrayed; and as it appeared that Stanley, while he feemed to live in the greatest confidence with the king, had been continually furrounded by spies, who reported and registered every action in which he was engaged. nay, every word which fell from him, a general diftrust took place, and all mutual confidence was deftroyed, even among intimate friends and acquaint-The jealous and fevere temper of the king, together with his great reputation for fagacity and penctration, kept men in awe, and quelled not only the movements of fedition, but the very murmurs of faction. Libels, however, creeped out against Henry's person and administration; and being greedily propagated by every fecret art, shewed that there still remained among the people a confiderable root of discontent, which wanted only a proper opportunity to discover itself.

Bur

1495.

But Henry continued more intent on increasing C H A P. the terrors of his people, than on gaining their affections. Trusting to the great fuccess which attended him in all his enterprifes, he gave every day more and more a loofe to his rapacious temper, and employed the arts of perverting law and justice, in order to exact fines and compositions from his people. Sir William Capel, alderman of London, was condemned on some penal statutes to pay the sum of 2743 pounds, and was obliged to compound for fixteen hundred and fifteen. This was the first noted case of the kind; but it became a precedent, which prepared the way for many others. The management, indeed of these arts of chicanery, was the great fecret of the king's administration. he depressed the nobility, he exalted and honoured and careffed the lawyers; and by that means both bestowed authority on the laws, and was enabled, whenever he pleased, to pervert them to his own advantage. His government was oppressive; but it was fo much the less burdensome, as by his extending royal authority, and curbing the nobles, he became in reality the fole oppressor in his kingdom.

As Perkin found that the king's authority daily gained ground among the people, and that his own pretenfions were becoming obsolete, he resolved to attempt fomething which might revive the hopes and expectations of his partifans. Having collected a band of outlaws, pirates, robbers, and necessitous persons of all nations, to the number of 600 men, he put to fea, with a resolution of making a descent in England, and of exciting the common people to arms, fince all his correspondence with the nobility was cut off by Henry's vigilance and feverity. formation being brought him that the king had made a progress to the north, he cast anchor on the coast of Kent, and fent some of his retainers ashore, who invited the country to join him. The gentlemen of Kent affembled some troops to oppose him; but

C HAP. they purposed to do more essential service than by repelling the invasion: They carried the semblance of friendship to Perkin, and invited him to come himself ashore, in order to take the command over them. But the wary youth, observing that they had more order and regularity in their movements than could be supposed in new levied forces who had taken arms against established authority, refused to entrust himself into their hands; and the Kentish troops, despairing of success in their stratagem, fell upon such of his retainers as were already landed; and besides some whom they slew, they took a hundred and fifty prisoners. These were tried and condemned; and all of them executed by orders from the king, who was refolved to use no lenity towards men of fuch desperate fortunes d.

A Parliament.

This year a parliament was fummoned in England, and another in Ireland; and some remarkable laws were passed in both countries. The English parliament enacted, that no person who should by arms or otherwise assist the king for the Time being, should ever afterwards, either by course of law or act of parliament, be attainted for fuch an instance of obedience. This statute might be exposed to some censure, as favourable to usurpers; were there any precise rule which always, even during the most factious times, could determine the true fuccessor, and render every one inexcufable who did not fubmit to him. But as the titles of princes are then the great subject of dispute, and each party pleads topics in its own favour, it feems but equitable to fecure those who act in support of public tranquillity, an object at all times of undoubted benefit and importance. Henry, conscious of his disputed title, promoted this law, in order to fecure his partifans against all events; but as he had himself observed a contrary practife with regard to Richard's adherents, he had reason to apprehend, that during CHAP. the violence which usually ensues on public convulfions, his example rather than his law would, in case of a new revolution, be followed by his enemies. And the attempt to bind the legislature itself, by prescribing rules to future parliaments, was contradictory to the plainest principles of political go-

This parliament also passed an act, empowering the king to levy, by course of law, all the sums which any person had agreed to pay by way of benevolence: A statute by which that arbitrary method of taxation was indirectly authorifed and

justified.

THE king's authority appeared equally prevalent and uncontrolled in Ireland. Sir Edward Poynings had been fent over to that country, with an intention of quelling the partifans of the house of York. and of reducing the natives to subjection. He was not supported by forces sufficient for that enterprise: The Irish, by flying into their woods and morasses and mountains, for fometime eluded his efforts: But Poynings fummoned a parliament at Dublin. where he was more fuccessful. He passed that memorable statute, which still bears his name, and which establishes the authority of the English government in Ireland. By this statute all the former laws of England were made to be of force in Ireland; and no bill can be introduced into the Irish parliament, unless it previously receive the fanction of the council of England. This latter clause seems calculated for ensuring the dominion of the English; but was really granted at the defire of the Irish commons, who intended by that means to fecure themselves from the tyranny of their lords, particularly of fuch lieutenants or deputies as were of Irish birth °.

XXV. 1495.

CHAP. WHILE Henry's authority was thus established throughout his dominions, and general tranquillity prevailed, the whole continent was thrown into combustion by the French invasion of Italy, and by the rapid fuccess which attended Charles in that rash and ill-concerted enterprife. The Italians, who had intirely lost the use of arms, and who, in the midst of continual wars, had become every day more unwarlike, were aftonished to meet an enemy, that made the field of battle not a pompous tournament, but a scene of blood, and sought, at the hazard of their own lives, the death of their enemy. Their effeminate troops were dispersed every where on the approach of the French army: Their best fortified cities opened their gates: Kingdoms and states were in an instant overturned: And through the whole length of Italy, which the French penetrated without refistance, they feemed rather to be taking quarters in their own country than making conquests over an enemy. The maxims which the Italians during that age followed in negotiations, were as ill calculated to support their states as the habits to which they were addicted in war: A treacherous, deceitful, and inconsistent system of politics prevailed; and even those small remains of fidelity and honour, which were preserved in the councils of the other European princes, were ridiculed in Italy as proofs of ignorance and rusticity. Ludovico duke of Milan, who invited the French to invade Naples, had never defired or expected their fuccess; and was the first that felt terror from the prosperous issue of those projects which he himself had concerted. By his intrigues a league was formed among feveral potentates to oppose the progress of Charles's conquests, and secure their own independency. This league was composed of Ludovico himfelf, the pope, Maximilian king of the Romans, Ferdinand of Spain, and the republic of Venice. Henry too entered into the confederacy; but was not put to any expence or trouble in confequence C H A P. of his engagements. The king of France, terrified by so powerful a combination, retired from Naples with the greater part of his army, and returned to France. The forces which he left in his new conquest were, partly by the revolt of the inhabitants, partly by the invasion of the Spaniards, foon after fubdued; and the whole kingdom of Naples fuddenly returned to its allegiance under Ferdinand, fon to Alphonfo, who had been fuddenly expelled by the irruption of the French. Ferdinand died foon after; and left his uncle Frederic in full possession of the throne.

1495.

## CHAP. XXVI.

Perkin retires to Scotland—Infurrection in the West
—Battle of Blackheath—Truce with Sotland
—Perkin taken prisoner—Perkin executed
—The earl of Warwick executed—Marriage
of prince Arthur with Catharine of Arragon—
His death—Marriage of the princess Margaret
with the king of Scotland—Oppressions of the
people—A parliament—Arrival of the king
of Castile—Intrigues of the earl of Sussolk—
Sickness of the king—His death—and character
—His laws.

C H A P. XXVI.

A FTER Perkin was repulsed from the coast of Kent, he retired into Flanders; but as he found it impossible to procure subsistence for himfelf and his followers while he remained in tranquillity, he foon after made an attempt upon Ireland, which had always appeared forward to join every invader of Henry's authority. But Poynings had now put the affairs of that island in fo good a posture, that Perkin met with little success; and being tired of the favage life which he was obliged to lead while skulking among the wild Irish, he bent his courfe towards Scotland, and prefented himfelf to James IV. who then governed that kingdom. He had been previously recommended to this prince by the king of France, who was difgusted at Henry for entering into the general league against him; and this recommendation was even feconded by Maximilian, who, though one of the confederates, was also displeased with the king on account of his prohibiting in England all commerce with the CHAP. Low Countries. The countenance given to Perkin by these princes procured him a favourable reception with the king of Scotland, who assured him, Perkin rethat whatever he were, he never should repent put- Scotland. ting himself in his hands f: The infinuating address and plausible behaviour of the youth himself seem to have gained him credit and authority. whom years had not yet taught distrust or caution, was feduced to believe the story of Perkin's birth and adventures; and he carried his confidence fo far as to give him in marriage the lady Catharine Gordon, daughter of the earl of Huntley, and related to himself; a young lady too, eminent for virtue as well as beauty.

1495.

THERE subfished at that time a great jealousy between the courts of England and Scotland; and James was probably the more forward on that account to adopt any fiction which he thought might reduce his enemy to diffress or disficulty. He suddenly refolved to make an inroad into England, attended by some of the borderers; and he carried Perkin along with him, in hopes that the appearance of the pretended prince might raife an infurrection in the northern counties. Perkin himself dispersed a manifesto, in which he set forth his own flory, and craved the affiftance of all his subjects in expelling the usurper, whose tyranny and mal-administration, whose depression of the nobility by the elevation of mean persons, whose oppression of the people by multiplied impositions and vexations, had justly, he faid, rendered him odious to all men. But Perkin's pretenfions, attended with repeated disappointments, were now become stale in the eyes even of the populace; and the hostile dispositions which fubfifted between the kingdoms rendered a prince, supported by the Scots, but an unwelcome

f Bacon, p. 615. Polydore Virgil, p. 596, 597.

1496.

CHAP. present to the English nation. The ravages also committed by the borderers, accustomed to licence committed by the borderers, accustomed to licence and disorder, struck a terror into all men; and made the people prepare rather for repelling the invaders than for joining them. Perkin, that he might support his pretensions to royal birth, feigned great compassion for the misery of his plundered fubjects; and publicly remonstrated with his ally against the depredations exercised by the Scottish army : But James told him, that he doubted his concern was employed only in behalf of an enemy, and that he was anxious to preferve what never should belong to him. That prince now began to perceive that his attempt would be fruitless; and hearing of an army which was on its march to attack him, he thought proper to retreat into his own country.

THE king discovered little anxiety to procure either reparation or vengeance for this infult committed on him by the Scottish nation: His chief concern was to draw advantage from it, by the pretence which it might afford him to levy impositions on his own subjects. He summoned a parliament, to whom he made bitter complaints against the irruption of the Scots, the abfurd imposture countenanced by that nation, the cruel devastations committed in the northern counties, and the multiplied infults thus offered both to the king and kingdom of England. The parliament made the expected return to this discourse, by granting a fubfidy to the amount of 120,000 pounds, together with two fifteenths. After making this grant, they

were difmiffed.

THE vote of parliament for imposing the tax was without much difficulty procured by the authority of Henry; but he found it not so easy to levy the money upon his fubjects. The people, who were

1497.

acquainted with the immense treasures which he had C H A P. amassed, could ill brook the new impositions raised on every flight occasion; and it is probable that the flaw, which was univerfally known to be in his title, made his reign the more subject to insurrections and rebellions. When the subsidy began to Insurreche levied in Cornwal, the inhabitants, numerous tion in the and por, robust and courageous, murmured against a tax occasioned by a fudden inroad of the Scots, from such they esteemed themselves entirely secure and which had usually been repelled by the force of the northern counties. Their ill-humour was farther incited by one Michael Joseph, a farrier of Bodmin, a notable prating fellow, who, by thrusting himself forward on every occasion, and being loudest in every complaint against the government, had acquired an authority among those rude people. Thomas Flammoc too, a lawyer, who had become the oracle of the neighbourhood, encouraged the fedition, by informing them that the tax, though imposed by parliament, was entirely illegal; that the northern nobility were bound by their tenures to defend the nation against the Scots; and that if these new impositions were tamely submitted to, the avarice of Henry and of his ministers would foon render the burden intolerable to the nation. The Cornish, he said, must deliver to the king a petition, feconded by fuch a force as would give it authority; and, in order to procure the concurrence of the rest of the kingdom, care must be taken, by their orderly deportment, to shew that they had nothing in view but the public good, and the redress of all those grievances under which the people had fo long laboured.

1497.

ENCOURAGED by these speeches, the multitude flocked together, and armed themselves with axes, bills, bows, and fuch weapons as country people are usually possessed of. Flammoc and Joseph were chosen their leaders. They soon conducted the B b 3

1497.

CHAP. Cornish through the County of Devon, and reached that of Somerset. At Taunton the rebels killed, in their fury, an officious and eager commissioner of the fubfidy, whom they called the provost of Perin. When they reached Wells, they were joined by lord Audley, a nobleman of an ancient family, popular in his deportment, but vain, ambitious, and restless in his temper. He had from the beginning maintained a fecret correspondence with the first movers of the infurrection; and was now joyfully received by them as their leader. Proud of the countenance given them by fo confiderable a nobleman, they continued their march; breathing destruction to the king's ministers and favourites, particularly to Morton, now a cardinal, and fir Reginald Bray, who were deemed the most active instruments in all his oppressions. Notwithstanding their rage against the administration, they carefully followed the directions given them by their leaders; and as they met with no refistance, they committed, during their march, no violence or diforder.

THE rebels had been told by Flammoc, that the inhabitants of Kent, as they had ever, during all ages, remained unsubdued, and had even maintained their independence during the Norman conquest, would furely embrace their party, and declare themfelves for a cause which was no other than that of public good and general liberty. But the Kentish people had very lately diftinguished themselves by repelling Perkin's invafion; and as they had received from the king many gracious acknowledgments for this fervice, their affections were, by that means, much conciliated to his government. It was eafy, therefore, for the earl of Kent, lord Abergavenny, and lord Cobham, who possessed great authority in those parts, to retain the people in obedience; and the Cornish rebels, though they pitched their camp near Eltham, at the very gates of London, and invited all the people to join them, got reinforcement from no quarter. There wanted not discontents CHAP. every where, but no one would take part in fo rash and ill-concerted an enterprife; and besides, the fituation in which the king's affairs then stood, difcouraged even the boldest and most daring.

1497

HENRY, in order to oppose the Scots, had already levied an army, which he put under the command of lord Daubenev the chamberlain; and as foon as he heard of the Cornish insurrection, he ordered it to march fouthwards, and suppress the rebels. Not to leave the northern frontier defenceless, he difpatched thither the earl of Surrey, who affembled the forces on the borders, and made head against the enemy. Henry found here the concurrence of the three most fatal incidents that can befal a monarchy; a foreign enemy, a domestic rebellion, and a pretender to his crown; but he enjoyed great refources in his army and treasure; and still more, in the intrepidity and courage of his own temper. He did not, however, immediately give full scope to his military spirit. On other occasions, he had always hastened to a decision; and it was a usual faying with him, that he defined but to fee his rebels: But as the Cornish musineers behaved in an inoffensive manner, and committed no spoil on the country; as they received no accession of force on their march or in their encampment; and as fuch hafty and popular turrults might be expected to diminish every moment by delay; he took post in London, and affiduously prepared the means of enfuring victory.

AFTER all his forces were collected, he divided Battle of them into three bodies, and marched out to affail Black-heath. the enemy. The first body commanded by the earl of Oxford, and under him by the earls of Effex and Suffolk, were appointed to place themselves behind the hill on which the rebels were encamped: The fecond and most considerable, Henry put under the command of lord Daubeney, and ordered

1497.

C H A P. him to attack the enemy in front, and bring on the action. The third he kept as a body of referve about his own person, and took post in St. George's fields; where he fecured the city, and could eafily, as occasion served, either restore the fight or finish the victory. To put the enemy off their guard, he had fpread a report that he was not to attack them till fome days after; and the better to confirm them in this opinion, he began not the action till near the evening. Daubeney beat a detachment of the rebels from Deptford bridge; and before the main body could be in order to receive him, he had gained the afcent of the hill, and placed himself in array before them. They were formidable from their numbers, being fixteen thousand strong, and were not defective in valour; but being tumultuary troops, ill armed, and not provided with cavalry or artillery, they were but an unequal match for the king's forces. Daubeney began the attack with courage, and even with a contempt of the enemy, which had almost proved fatal to him. He rushed into the midst of them, and was taken prisoner; but foon after was releafed by his own troops. After fome refistance, the rebels were broken, and put to flight. Lord Audley, Flammoc, and Joseph, their leaders, were taken, and all three executed. The latter seemed even to exult in his end, and boasted with a prepofterous ambition, that he should make a figure in history. The rebels, being furrounded on every fide by the king's troops, were almost all made prisoners, and immediately dismissed without farther punishment: Whether that Henry was fatiffied with the victims who had fallen in the field. and who amounted to near two thousand, or that he pitied the ignorance and fimplicity of the multitude, or favoured them on account of their inoffensive behaviour, or was pleased that they had

h Polydore Virgil, p. 601.

never, during their infurrection, disputed his title, and had shewn no attachment to the house of York, the highest crime, of which, in his eyes, they could

have been guilty.

THE Scottish king was not idle during these commotions in England. He levied a confiderable army, and fat down before the castle of Norham in Northumberland; but found that place, by the precaution of Fox bishop of Durham, so well provided both with men and ammunition, that he made little or no progress in the fiege. Hearing that the earl of Surrey had collected some forces, and was advancing upon him, he retreated into his own country, and left the frontiers exposed to the inroads of the English general, who besieged and took Aiton, a fmall caftle lying a few miles beyond Berwic. These unsuccessful or frivolous attempts on both sides prognofficated a speedy end to the war; and Henry. notwithstanding his superior force, was no less defirous than James of terminating the differences between the nations. Not to depart, however, from his dignity, by making the first advances, he employed in this friendly office Peter Hialas, a man of address and learning, who had come to him as ambaffador from Ferdinand and Isabella, and who was charged with a commission of negotiating the marriage of the infanta Catherine their daughter, with Arthur prince of Wales i.

HIALAS took a journey northwards, and offered his mediation between James and Henry, as minister of a prince who was in alliance with both potentates. Commissioners were soon appointed to meet, and confer on terms of accommodation. The first demand of the English was, that Perkin should be put into their hands: James replied, that he himself was no judge of the young man's pretensions, but having received him as a supplicant, and

C H A P. promised him protection, he was determined not to betray a man who had trusted to his good faith and his generofity. The next demand of the English met with no better reception: They required reparation for the ravages committed by the late inreads into England: The Scottish commissioners replied, that the spoils were like water spilt upon the ground, which could never be recovered, and that Henry's subjects were better able to bear the loss, than their master's to repair it. Henry's commissioners next proposed, that the two kings should have an interview at Newcastle, in order to adjust all differences; but James faid, that he meant to treat of a peace, not to go a begging for it. Lest the conferences should break off altogether without effect, a truce was concluded for some months; and James, perceiving that, while Perkin remained in Scotland, he himself never should enjoy a solid peace with Henry, privately defired him to depart the kingdom.

Truce with Scotland.

> Access was now barred Perkin into the Low Countries, his usual retreat in all his disappointments. The Flemish merchants, who severely felt the lofs refulting from the interruption of commerce with England, had made fuch interest in the archduke's council, that commissioners were fent to London, in order to treat of an accommodation. The Flemish court agreed, that all English rebels should be excluded the Low Countries; and in this prohibition the demesnes of the dutchess-dowager were expressly comprehended. When this principal article was agreed to, all the other terms were eafily adjusted. A treaty of commerce was finished, which was favourable to the Flemings, and to which they long gave the appellation of Intercursus magnus, the great treaty. And when the English merchants returned to their usual abode at Antwerp, they were publicly received, as in proceffion, with joy and festivity.

> > PERKIN

PERKIN was a Fleming by descent, though born CHAP. in England; and it might therefore be doubted, whether he were included in the treaty between the two nations: But as he must dismiss all his English retainers, if he took shelter in the Low Countries, and as he was fure of a cold reception, if not bad ufage, among people who were determined to keep on terms of friendship with the court of England; he thought fit rather to hide himself, during some time, in the wilds and fastnesses of Ireland. Impatient, however, of a retreat, which was both difagreeable and dangerous, he held confultations with his followers, Herne, Skelton, and Aftley, three broken tradefmen: By their advice, he refolved to try the affections of the Cornish, whose mutinous disposition, notwithstanding the king's lenity, still fubfisted, after the suppression of their rebellion. No fooner did he appear at Bodmin in Cornwal. than the populace, to the number of three thoufand, flocked to his standard; and Perkin, elated with this appearance of fuccess, took on him, for the first time, the appellation of Richard IV. King of England, Not to fuffer the expectations of his followers to languish, he presented himself before Exeter; and, by many fair promises, invited that city to join him. Finding that the inhabitants shut their gates against him, he laid siege to the place; but being unprovided with artillery, ammunition, and every thing requifite for the attempt, he made no progress in his undertaking. Messengers were sent to the king, informing him of this infurrection: The citizens of Exeter, meanwhile, were determined to hold out to the last extremity, in expectation of receiving fuccour from the well-known vigilance of that monarch.

WHEN Henry was informed that Perkin was landed in England, he expressed great joy, and prepared himfelf with alacrity to attack him, in hopes of being able, at length, to put a period to preten-



CHAP. fions which had fo long given him vexation and inquietude. All the courtiers, fenfible that their activity on this occasion would be the most acceptable fervice which they could render the king, difplayed their zeal for the enterprize, and forwarded his preparations. The lords Daubeney and Broke, with fir Rice ap Thomas, hastened forward with a fmall body of troops to the relief of Exeter. The earl of Devonshire, and the most considerable gentlemen in the county of that name, took arms of their own accord, and marched to join the king's generals. The duke of Buckingham put himself at the head of a troop, confisting of young nobility and gentry, who ferved as volunteers, and who longed for an opportunity of displaying their courage and their loyalty. The king himself prepared to follow with a confiderable army; and thus all England feemed united against a pretender who had at first engaged their attention, and divided their affections.

PERKIN, informed of these great preparations, immediately raifed the fiege of Exeter, and retired to Taunton. Though his followers now amounted to the number of near feven thousand, and seemed still resolute to maintain his cause, he himself despaired of success, and secretly withdrew to the sanctuary of Beaulieu in the new forest. The Cornish rebels fubmitted to the king's mercy, and found that it was not yet exhaufted in their behalf. Except a few persons of desperate fortunes who were executed, and some others who were severely fined, all the rest were dismissed with impunity. Lady Catharine Gordon, wife to Perkin, fell into the hands of the victor, and was treated with a generosity which does him honour. He soothed her mind with many marks of regard, placed her in a reputable flation about the queen, and affigned her a pension, which she enjoyed even under his fuccessor.

HENRY

HENRY deliberated what course to take with CHAP. Perkin himself. Some counselled him to make the privileges of the church yield to reasons of state, to take him by violence from the fanctuary, to inflict on him the punishment due to his temerity, and thus at once put an end to an imposture which had long diffurbed the government, and which the credulity of the people, and the artifices of malcontents, were still capable of reviving. But the king deemed not the matter of fuch importance as to merit fo violent a remedy. He employed fome persons to deal with Perkin, and persuade him, under promise of pardon, to deliver himself into the king's hands 1. The king conducted him, in a species of mock triumph, to London. As Perkin Perkin passed along the road, and through the streets of taken pris the city, men of all ranks flocked about him, and the populace treated with the highest derission his fallen fortunes. They feemed defirous of revenging themselves, by their insults, for the shame which their former belief of his impostures had thrown upon them. Though the eyes of the nation were generally opened with regard to Perkin's real parentage, Henry required of him a confession of his life and adventures; and he ordered the account of the whole to be dispersed, soon after, for the satisfaction of the public. But as his regard to decency made him entirely suppress the share which the dutchess of Burgundy had had in contriving and conducting the imposture, the people, who knew that she had been the chief instrument in the whole affair, were inclined, on account of the filence on that head, to pay the less credit to the authenticity of the narrative.

1498.

But Perkin, though his life was granted him, was still detained in custody; and keepers were ap-

1499:

Polydore Virgil, p. 606.

pointed

1499.

CHAP. pointed to guard him. Impatient of confinement, he broke from his keepers, and flying to the fanctuary of Shyne, put himself into the hands of the prior of that monastery. The prior had obtained great credit by his character of fanctity; and he prevailed on the king again to grant a pardon to Perkin. But in order to reduce him to still greater contempt, he was fet in the stocks at Westminster and Cheapfide, and obliged in both places to read aloud to the people the confession which had formerly been published in his name. He was then confined to the Tower, where his habits of restless intrigue and enterprise followed him. He infinuated himself into the intimacy of four servants of fir John Digby, lieutenant of the Tower; and, by their means, opened a correspondence with the earl of Warwic, who was confined in the fame prifon. This unfortunate prince, who had, from his earliest youth, been shut up from the commerce of men, and who was ignorant even of the most common affairs of life, had fallen into a fimplicity, which made him susceptible of any impression. The continued dread also of the more violent effects of Henry's tyranny, joined to the natural love of liberty, engaged him to embrace a project for his escape, by the murder of the lieutenant; and Perkin offered to conduct the whole enterprise. The conspiracy escaped not the king's vigilance: It was even very generally believed that the scheme had been laid by himself, in order to draw Warwic and Perkin into the fnare: But the fubfequent execution of two of Digby's fervants for the contrivance feems to clear the king of that imputation. which was indeed founded more on the general idea entertained of his character than on any politive evidence.

PERKIN, by this new attempt, after fo many enormities, had rendered himfelf totally unworthy

1499. Perkin executed.

of mercy; and he was accordingly arraigned, con- C HAP. demned, and foon after hanged at Tvburn, perfifting still in the confession of his imposture m. It happened about that very time, that one Wilford, a cordwainer's fon, encouraged by the furprifing credit given to other impostures, had undertaken to personate the earl of Warwic; and a priest had even ventured from the pulpit to recommend his cause to the people, who seemed still to retain a propenfity to adopt it. This incident ferved Henry as a pretence for his feverity towards that prince. He was brought to trial, and accused not of contriving his escape (for as he was committed for no crime, the defire of liberty must have been regarded as natural and innocent), but of forming designs to disturb the government, and raise an insurrection among the people. Warwic confessed the indict- The earl ment, was condemned, and the fentence was executed upon him.

of Warwic executed. 21st Nov.

This violent act of tyranny, the great blemish of Henry's reign, by which he destroyed the last remaining male of the line of Plantagenet, begat great discontent among the people, who saw an unhappy prince, that had long been denied all the privileges of his high birth, even been cut off from the common benefits of nature, now at last deprived of life itself, merely for attempting to shake off that oppression under which he laboured. In vain did Henry endeavour to alleviate the odium of this guilt, by sharing it with his ally Ferdinand of Arragon, who, he faid, had scrupled to give his daughter Catherine in marriage to Arthur, while any male descendant of the house of York remained. Men, on the contrary, felt higher indignation at feeing a young prince facrificed, not to law and justice, but to the jealous politics of two subtle and crafty tyrants.

384

XXVI. 1499.

1500.

CHAP. Bur though these discontents festered in the minds of men, they were fo checked by Henry's watchful policy and steady severity, that they feemed not to weaken his government; and foreign princes, deeming his throne now entirely fecure, paid him rather the greater deference and attention. The archduke Philip, in particular, defired an interview with him; and Henry, who had passed over to Calais, agreed to meet him in St. Peter's church near that city. The archduke, on his approaching the king, made haste to alight, and offered to hold Henry's stirrup; a mark of condescension which that prince would not admit of. He called the king father, patron, protector; and, by his whole behaviour, expressed a strong desire of conciliating the friendship of England. The duke of Orleans had fucceeded to the crown of France by the appellation of Lewis XII. and having carried his arms into Italy, and fubdued the dutchy of Milan, his progress begat jealousy in Maximilian, Philip's father, as well as in Ferdinand, his father-in-law. By the counsel, therefore, of these monarchs, the young prince endeavoured by every art to acquire the amity of Henry, whom they regarded as the chief counterpoise to the greatness of France. No particular plan, however, of alliance feems to have been concerted between these two princes in their interview: All passed in general professions of affection and regard; at least, in remote projects of a closer union, by the future intermarriages of their children, who were then in a state of infancy.

THE pope too, Alexander VI. neglected not the friendship of a monarch whose reputation was spread over Europe. He fent a nuntio into England, who exhorted the king to take part in the great alliance projected for the recovery of the Holy Land, and to lead in person his forces against the infidels.

The general frenzy for crusades was now entirely exhausted

1500.

exhausted in Europe; but it was still thought a ne- C H A P. XXVI. ceffary piece of decency to pretend zeal for those, pious enterprises. Henry regretted to the nuntio the distance of his situation, which rendered it inconvenient for him to expose his person in defence of the Christian cause. He promised, however, his utmost assistance by aids and contributions; and rather than the pope should go alone to the holy wars, unaccompanied by any monarch, he even promifed to overlook all other confiderations, and to attend him in person. He only required as a necessary condition, that all differences should previously be adjusted among Christian princes, and that some fea-port towns in Italy should be configned to him for his retreat and fecurity. It was eafy to conclude, that Henry had determined not to intermeddle in any war against the Turk: But as a great name, without any real affiftance, is fometimes of fervice, the knights of Rhodes, who were at that time esteemed the bulwark of Christendom, chose the king protector of their order.

But the prince whose alliance Henry valued the most, was Ferdinand of Arragon, whose vigorous and fleady policy, always attended with fuccess, had rendered him in many respects the most considerable monarch in Europe. There was also a remarkable fimilarity of character between these two princes: Both were full of craft, intrigue, and defign; and though a resemblance of this nature be a slender foundation for confidence and amity, where the interests of the Parties in the least interfere; such was the fituation of Henry and Ferdinand, that no jealoufy ever on any occasion arose between them. The king had now the fatisfaction of completing a mar- Marriage riage, which had been projected and negotiated of prince during the course of seven years, between Arthur with Caprince of Wales, and the Infanta Catherine, fourth therine of Arragon. daughter of Ferdinand and Isabella; he near fixteen 12th Nov.

VOL. III. Cc years C H A P.
XXVI.

1502.
2d April.
His death.

years of age, she eighteen. But this marriage proved in the issue unprosperous. The young prince a few months after sickened and died, much regretted by the nation. Henry, desirous to continue his alliance with Spain, and also unwilling to restore Catherine's dowry, which was two hundred thousand ducats, obliged his second son Henry, whom he created prince of Wales, to be contracted to the Infanta. The prince made all the opposition of which a youth of twelve years of age was capable; but as the king persisted in his resolution, the espousals were at length, by means of the pope's dispensation, contracted between the parties: An event which was afterwards attended with the most important confequences.

Marriage of the princefs Margaret with the king of Scotland.

THE fame year another marriage was celebrated, which was also in the next age productive of great events: The marriage of Margaret, the king's elder daughter, with James king of Scotland. This alliance had been negotiated during three years, though interrupted by feveral broils; and Henry hoped, from the completion of it, to remove all fource of discord with that neighbouring kingdom, by whose animosity England had so often been infested. When this marriage was deliberated on in the English council, some objected that England might, by means of that alliance, fall under the dominion of Scotland. "No," replied Henry, " Scotland in that event will only become an ac-" cession to England." Amidst these prosperous incidents the king met with a domestic calamity which made not fuch impression on him as it merited: His queen died in child-bed; and the infant did not long furvive her. This princess was defervedly a favourite of the nation; and the general affection for her increased, on account of the harsh treatment which it was thought she met with from her confort.

1503. 11th reb.

THE

THE fituation of the king's affairs, both at home CHAP. and abroad, was now in every respect very fortunate. All the efforts of the European princes, both in war and negotiation, were turned to the fide of Italy; and the various events which there arose made Henry's alliance be courted by every party, yet interested him so little as never to touch him with concern or anxiety. His close connections with Spain and Scotland enfured his tranquillity; and his continued fuccesses over domestic enemies, owing to the prudence and vigour of his conduct, had reduced the people to entire submission and obedience. Uncontrolled, therefore, by apprehension or opposition of any kind, he gave full scope to his natural propenfity; and avarice, which had ever been his ruling passion, being increased by age and encouraged by absolute authority, broke all restraints of shame or justice. He had found two ministers, Empson and Dudley, perfectly qualified to fecond his rapacious and tyrannical inclinations, and to prey upon his defenceless people. These instruments of oppression were both lawyers; the first of mean birth, of brutal manners, of an unrelenting temper; the fecond better born, better educated, and better bred, but equally unjust, severe, and inflexible. By their knowledge in law these men were qualified to pervert the forms of justice to the oppression of the innocent; and the formidable authority of the king supported them in all their iniquities.

IT was their usual practice at first to observe so far the appearance of law as to give indictments to those whom they intended to oppress: Upon which the persons were committed to prison, but never brought to trial; and were at length obliged, in order to recover their liberty, to pay heavy fines and ranfoms, which were called mitigations and compositions. By degrees the very appearance of law was neglected: The two ministers fent forth their precepts to attach men, and summon them

Cc2

the people.

before

1503.

CHAP. before themselves and some others, at their private houses, in a court of commission, where, in a summary manner, without trial or jury, arbitrary decrees were iffued, both in pleas of the crown, and controversies between private parties. Juries themfelves, when fummoned, proved but fmall fecurity to the subject; being brow-beaten by these oppressors; nay fined, imprisoned, and punished, if they gave fentence against the inclination of the ministers. The whole fystem of the feudal law, which still prevailed, was turned into a scheme of oppression. Even the king's wards, after they came of age, were not suffered to enter into possession of their lands without paying exorbitant fines. Men were also haraffed with informations of intrufion upon scarce colourable titles. When an outlawry in a personal action was iffued against any man, he was not allowed to purchase his charter of pardon, except on the payment of a great fum; and if he refused the compofition required of him, the strict law, which in such cases allows forfeiture of goods, was rigorously infifted on. Nay, without any colour of law, the half of men's lands and rents were feized during two years, as a penalty in case of outlawry. But the chief means of oppression employed by these ministers were the penal statutes, which, without confideration of rank, quality, or fervices, where rigidly put in execution against all men: Spies, informers, and inquifitors, were rewarded and encouraged in every quarter of the kingdom: And no difference was made whether the statute were beneficial or hurtful, recent or obfolete, possible or impossible to be executed. The fole end of the king and his ministers was to amass money, and bring every one under the lash of their authority".

THROUGH

n Bacon, p. 629, 630. Hollingshed, p. 504. Polyd. Virg. p. 613, 615.

THROUGH the prevalence of fuch an arbitrary and C H A P. iniquitous administration, the English, it may fafely be affirmed, were confiderable losers by their ancient privileges, which fecured them from all taxations, except fuch as were imposed by their own confent in parliament. Had the king been empowered to levy general taxes at pleasure, he would naturally have abstained from these oppressive expedients, which destroyed all security in private property, and begat an universal diffidence throughout the nation. vain did the people look for protection from the parliament, which was pretty frequently fummoned during this reign. That affembly was fo overawed, that at this very time, during the greatest rage of Henry's oppressions, the commons chose Dudley Aparliatheir speaker, the very man who was the chief instrument of his iniquities. And though the king was known to be immenfely opulent, and had no pretence of wars or expensive enterprises of any kind, they granted him the fubfidy which he demanded. But so insatiable was his avarice, that next year he levied a new benevolence, and renewed that arbitrary and oppressive method of taxation. By all thefe arts of accumulation, joined to a rigid frugality in his expence, he fo filled his coffers, that he is faid to have possessed in ready money the sum of 1,800,000 pounds: A treasure almost incredible, if we confider the fcarcity of money in those times °.

But while Henry was enriching himfelf by the spoils of his oppressed people, there happened an event abroad which engaged his attention, and was even

• Silver was, during this reign, at 37 shillings and fixpence a pound, which makes Henry's treafure near three millions of our prefent money. Befides, many commodities have become above thrice as dear by the increase of gold and filver in Europe. And what is a circumstance of still greater weight, all other states were then very poor in comparison of what they are at present. These circumflances make Henry's treasure appear very great; and may lead us to conceive the oppressions of his government.

XXVI. I 503.

1504.

1505.



CHAP. the object of his anxiety and concern. Isabella, queen of Castile, died about this time; and it was foreseen, that by this incident the fortunes of Ferdinand her husband would be much affected. king was not only attentive to the fate of his ally, and watchful lest the general system of Europe should be affected by so important an event: He also considered the similarity of his own situation with that of Ferdinand, and regarded the issue of these transactions as a precedent for himself. Joan, the daughter of Ferdinand by Isabella, was married to the archduke Philip, and being in right of her mother heir of Castile, seemed entitled to dispute with Ferdinand the present possession of that kingdom. Henry knew, that notwithstanding his own pretentions by the house of Lancaster, the greater part of the nation was convinced of the fuperiority of his wife's title; and he dreaded lest the prince of Wales, who was daily advancing towards manhood, might be tempted by ambition to lay immediate claim to the crown. By his perpetual attention to depress the partisans of the York family, he had more closely united them into one party, and increased their defire of shaking off that yoke under which they had so long laboured, and of taking every advantage which his oppressive government should give his enemies against him. And as he possessed no independent force like Ferdinand, and governed a kingdom more turbulent and unruly, which he himfelf by his narrow politics had confirmed in factious prejudices; he apprehended that his fituation would prove in the iffue Itill more precarious.

Nothing at first could turn out more contrary to the king's wishes than the transactions in Spain. Ferdinand, as well as Henry, had become very unpopular, and from a like cause, his former exactions and impositions; and the states of Castile discovered an evident resolution of preferring the title of Philip

and Joan. In order to take advantage of these fa- CHAP.

vourable dispositions, the archduke, now king of XXVI. Castile, attended by his confort, embarked for Spain during the winter feafon; but meeting with a violent tempest in the channel, was obliged to take shelter in the harbour of Weymouth. Sir John Arrival of Trenchard, a gentleman of authority in the county the king of of Dorset, hearing of a fleet upon the coast, had affembled fome forces; and being joined by fir John Cary, who was also at the head of an armed body, he came to that town. Finding that Philip, in order to relieve his fickness and fatigue, was already come ashore, he invited him to his house; and immediately dispatched a messenger to inform the court of this important incident. The king fent in all haste the earl of Arundel to compliment Philip on his arrival in England, and to inform him that he intended to pay him a visit in person, and to give him a fuitable reception in his dominions. Philip knew that he could not now depart without the king's confent; and therefore, for the fake of difpatch, he refolved to anticipate his vifit, and to

1506.

EDMOND de la Pole earl of Suffolk, nephew to Intrigues Edward IV. and brother to the earl of Lincoln, of the earl of Suffolk. flain in the battle of Stoke, had fome years before killed a man in a fudden fit of passion, and had been obliged to apply to the king for a remission of the crime. The king had granted his request; but being little indulgent to all perfons connected with the house of York, he obliged him to appear openly in court and plead his pardon. Suffolk, more refenting the affront than grateful for the favour, had fled into Flanders, and taken shelter with his aunt, the dutchess of Burgundy: But being promised forgive-

have an interview with him at Windfor. Henry received him with all the magnificence possible, and with all the feeming cordiality; but he refolved, notwithstanding, to draw some advantage from this

involuntary vifit paid him by his royal guest.

I 506.

CHAP. ness by the king, he returned to England, and obtained a new pardon. Actuated, however, by the natural inquietude of his temper, and uneasy from debts which he had contracted by his great expence at prince Arthur's wedding, he again made an elopement into Flanders. The king, well acquainted with the general discontent which prevailed against his administration, neglected not this incident, which might become of importance; and he employed his usual artifices to elude the efforts of his enemies. He directed fir Robert Curson, governor of the castle of Hammes, to desert his charge, and to infinuate himself into the confidence of Suffolk. by making him a tender of his fervices. Upon information fecretly conveyed by Curfon, the king seized William Courtney, eldest son to the earl of Devonshire, and married to the lady Catherine, fister of the queen; William de la Pole, brother to the earl of Suffolk; fir James Tirrel, and fir James Windham, with some persons of inferior quality: and he committed them to custody. Lord Abergavenny and fir Thomas Green were also apprehended; but were foon after released from their confinement. William de la Pole was long detained in prison; Courtney was attainted, and though not executed, he recovered not his liberty during the king's life time. But Henry's chief feverity fell upon fir James Windham and fir James Tirrel, who were brought to their trial, condemned and executed: The fate of the latter gave general fatiffaction, on account of his participation in the murder of the young princes, fons of Edward IV. Notwithstanding these discoveries and executions, Curfon was still able to maintain his credit with the earl of Suffolk: Henry, in order to remove all fuspicion, had ordered him to be excommunicated, together with Suffolk himself, for his pretended rebellion. But after that traitor had performed all the fervices expected from him, he fuddenly deferted the the earl, and came over to England, where the king C HAP. received him with unufual marks of favour and confidence. Suffolk, astonished at this instance of perfidy, finding that even the dutchess of Burgundy. tired with fo many fruitless attempts, had become indifferent to his cause, fled secretly into France, thence into Germany, and returned at last into the Low Countries; where he was protected, though not countenanced, by Philip, then in close alliance with the king.

HENRY neglected not the present opportunity of complaining to his guest of the reception which Suffolk had met with in his dominions. "I really "thought," replied the king of Castile, "that " your greatness and felicity had set you far above " apprehensions from any person of so little conse-" quence: But, to give you fatisfaction, I shall " banish him my state." "I expect that you will " carry your complaifance farther," faid the king; "I defire to have Suffolk put into my hands, where alone I can depend upon his submission " and obedience." "That measure," faid Philip, " will reflect dishonour upon you as well as myself. "You will be thought to have treated me as a pri-"foner." "Then the matter is at an end," replied the king, "for I will take that dishonour upon " me; and so your honour is faved p." The king of Castile found himself under a necessity of complying; but he first exacted Henry's promise that he would spare Suffolk's life. That nobleman was invited over to England by Philip; as if the king would grant him a pardon, on the intercession of his friend and ally. Upon his appearance he was committed to the Tower; and the king of Castile, having fully fatisfied Henry, as well by this concession as by figning a treaty of commerce between England and Castile, which was advantageous to the former kingdom 9,

XXVI.

1507.

CHAP. was at last allowed to depart, after a stay of three months. He landed in Spain, was joyfully received by the Castilians, and put in possession of the throne. He died foon after; and Joan his widow, falling into deep melancholy, Ferdinand was again enabled to reinstate himself in authority, and to govern till the day of his death the whole Spanish monarchy.

THE king furvived these transactions two years:

3508.

the king.

but nothing memorable occurs in the remaining part of his reign, except his affiancing his second daugh, ter, Mary, to the young archduke, Charles, fon of Philip of Castile. He entertained also some intentions of marriage for himself, first with the queendowager of Naples, relict of Ferdinand; afterwards with the dutchess dowager of Savoy, daughter of Sickness of Maximilian, and fister of Philip. But the decline of his health put an end to all fuch thoughts; and he began to cast his eve towards that future existence, which the iniquities and feverities of his reign rendered a very difmal prospect to him. To allay the terrors under which he laboured, he endeavoured, by distributing alms, and founding religious houses, to make atonement for his crimes, and to purchase, by the facrifice of part of his ill-gotten treasures, a reconciliation with his offended Maker. Remorfe even feized him, at intervals, for the abuse of his authority by Empson and Dudley; but not sufficient to make him stop the rapacious hand of those oppressors. Sir William Capel was again fined two thousand pounds, under some frivolous pretence, -and was committed to the Tower for daring to murmur against the iniquity. Harris, an alderman of London, was indicted, and died of vexation before his trial came to an iffue. Sir Laurence Ailmer. who had been mayor, and his two sheriffs, were condemned in heavy fines, and fent to prison till they made payment. The king gave countenance to all these oppressions; till death, by its nearer approaches.

proaches, impressed new terrors upon him; and he CHAP. then ordered, by a general clause in his will, that restitution should be made to all those whom he had injured. He died of a confumption, at his favourite His death, palace of Richmond, after a reign of twenty-three years and eight months, and in the fifty-fecond year of his age 1.

tunate for his people at home, and honourable abroad.

XXVI.

THE reign of Henry VII. was, in the main, for-

had long been haraffed, he maintained peace and order in the state, he depressed the former exorbitant power of the nobility, and, together with the friendship of some foreign princes, he acquired the confideration and regard of all. He loved peace without fearing war; though agitated with continual fuspicions of his fervants and ministers, he discovered no timidity, either in the conduct of his affairs, or in the day of battle; and though often fevere in his punishments, he was commonly less actuated by revenge than by maxims of policy. The fervices which he rendered the people were derived from his views of private advantage rather than the motives of public spirit; and where he deviated from interested regards, it was unknown to himself, and ever from the malignant prejudices of faction, or the mean projects of avarice; not from the fallies of passion, or allurements of pleasure; still less from the benign motives of friendship and generosity. His capacity was excellent, but somewhat contracted

He put an end to the civil wars with which the nation and cha-

possessed not the faculty of seeing far into futurity; Dugd. Baronage, II. p. 237.

by the narrowness of his heart; he possessed infinuation and address, but never employed these talents except where some great point of interest was to be gained; and while he neglected to conciliate the affections of his people, he often felt the danger of resting his authority on their fear and reverence alone. He was always extremely attentive to his affairs; but

XXVI. 1509.

CHAP, and was more expert at providing a remedy for his mistakes, than judicious in avoiding them. Avarice was, on the whole, his ruling passion s; and he remains an instance, almost singular, of a man placed in a high station, and possessed of talents for great affairs, in whom that passion predominated above ambition. Even among private persons, avarice is commonly nothing but a species of ambition, and is chiefly incited by the prospect of that regard, distinction, and consideration, which attend on riches.

> THE power of the kings of England had always been fomewhat irregular or discretionary; but was fcarcely ever fo absolute during any former reign, at least after the establishment of the great charter, as during that of Henry. Besides the advantages derived from the personal character of the man, full of vigour, industry, and feverity, deliberate in all projects, steady in every purpose, and attended with caution as well as good fortune in every enterprise; he came to the throne after long and bloody civil wars, which had destroyed all the great nobility, who alone could refift the encroachments of his authority: The people were tired with discord and intestine convulsions, and willing to submit to usurpations, and even to injuries, rather than plunge themselves anew into like miseries: The fruitless efforts made against him served always, as is usual, to confirm his authority: As he ruled by a faction, and the leffer faction, all those on whom he conferred offices, fenfible that they owed every thing to his protection, were willing to support his power, though

s As a proof of Henry's attention to the smallest profits, Bacon tells us, that he had feen a book of accounts kept by Empfon, and fubscribed in almost every leaf by the king's own hand. Among other articles was the following: "Item, Received of fuch a one " five marks for a pardon, which if it do not pals the money to be " repayed, or the party otherwise satisfied." Opposite to the memorandum the king had writ with his own hand, "otherwife fatif-" fied." Bacon, p. 630.

at the expence of justice and national privileges. CHAP. These feem the chief causes which at this time bestowed on the crown fo confiderable an addition of prerogative, and rendered the present reign a kind

1509.

of epoch in the English constitution.

This prince, though he exalted his prerogative above law, is celebrated by his historian for many good laws which he made be enacted for the government of his fubjects. Several confiderable regulations, indeed, are found among the statutes of this reign, both with regard to the police of the kingdom, and its commerce: But the former are generally contrived with much better judgment than the latter. The more simple ideas of order and His laws. equity are fufficient to guide a legislator in every thing that regards the internal administration of justice: But the principles of commerce are much more complicated, and require long experience and deep reflection to be well understood in any state. The real consequence of a law or practice is there often contrary to first appearances. No wonder that during the reign of Henry VII. these matters were frequently mistaken; and it may safely be affirmed, that even in the age of lord Bacon very imperfect and erroneous ideas were formed on that fubject.

EARLY in Henry's reign the authority of the Star chamber, which was before founded on common law and ancient practice, was in some cases confirmed by act of parliament 1: Lord Bacon extols the utility of this court; but men began, even during the age of that historian, to feel that so arbitrary a jurisdiction was incompatible with liberty; and in proportion as the spirit of independance still rofe higher in the nation, the aversion to it increased, till it was entirely abolished by act of parliament in

XX.I. 1;cq.

CHAP. the reign of Charles I. a little before the commences ment of the civil wars.

> Laws were passed in this reign, ordaining the king's fuit for murder to be carried on within a year and day". Formerly it did not usually commence till after; and as the friends of the person murdered often in the interval compounded matters with the criminal, the crime frequently passed unpunished. Suits were given to the poor in forma pauperis, as it is called: That is, without paying dues for the writs, or any fees to the council w: A good law at all times, especially in that age, when the people laboured under the oppression of the great; but a law difficult to be carried into execution. A law was made against carrying off any woman by force x. The benefit of clergy was abridged, and the criminal, on the first offence, was ordered to be burned in the hand with a letter. denoting his crime; after which he was punished capitally for any new offence. Sheriffs were no longer allowed to fine any person, without previously fummoning him before their court?. It is strange that such a practice should ever have prevailed. Attaint of juries was granted in cases which exceeded forty pounds value a: A law which has an appearance of equity, but which was afterwards found inconvenient. Actions popular were not allowed to be eluded by fraud or covin. If any fervant of the king's conspired against the life of the steward, treasurer, or comptroller of the king's household, this design, though not followed by any overt act, was made liable to the punishment of felony. This statute was enacted for the security

u 3 H. 7. cap. 1. x 3 H. 7. cap. 2.

z 11 H. 7. cap. 15. 6 3 H. 7. cap. 13.

w 11 H. 7. cap. 12. у 4 Н. 7. сар. 13.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>2</sup> Ibid. cap. 24. 19 H. 7. cap. 100.

XXVI.

1 (09.

of archbishop Morton, who found himself exposed to CHAP.

the enmity of great numbers.

THERE fearcely passed any session during this reign without some statute against engaging retainers, and giving them badges or liveries c; a practice by which they were in a manner inlifted under some great lord, and were kept in readiness to affist him in all wars, infurrections, riots, violences, and even in bearing evidence for him in courts of justice d. This diforder, which had prevailed during many reigns, when the law could give little protection to the fubject, was then deeply rooted in England; and it required all the vigilance and rigour of Henry to extirpate it. There is a story of his feverity against this abuse; and it seems to merit praise, though it is commonly cited as an instance of his avarice and rapacity. The earl of Oxford, his favourite general, in whom he always placed great and deferved confidence, having fplendidly entertained him at his castle of Heningham, was desirous of making a parade of his magnificence at the departure of his royal guest; and ordered all his retainers, with their liveries and badges, to be drawn up in two lines, that their appearance might be the more gallant and splendid. "My lord," said the king, "I have " heard much of your hospitality; but the truth far " exceeds the report. These handsome gentlemen and yeomen, whom I fee on both fides of me, " are no doubt your menial fervants." The earl smiled, and confessed that his fortune was too narrow for fuch magnificence. "They are most of them," fubjoined he, " my retainers, who are come to do " me fervice at this time, when they know I am " honoured with your majesty's presence." The king started a little, and faid, "By my faith, my

<sup>\* 3</sup> H. 7, cap. 1. & 12. 11 H. 7. cap. 2. 19 H. 7. cap. 14. 4 2 H. 7. cap. 12. 11 H. 7. cap. 25.

C H A P. XXVI. 1509. " lord, I thank you for your good cheer, but I must not allow my laws to be broken in my sight. My attorney must speak with you." Oxford is said to have paid no less than sisteen thousand marks, as

a composition for his offence.

THE increase of the arts, more effectually than all the feverities of law, put an end to this pernicious practice. The nobility, instead of vying with each other in the number and boldness of their retainers, acquired by degrees a more civilized species of emulation, and endeavoured to excel in the splendour and elegance of their equipage, houses, and tables. The common people, no longer maintained in vicious idleness by their superiors, were obliged to learn fome calling or industry, and became useful both to themselves and to others. And it must be acknowledged, in spite of those who declaim so violently against refinement in the arts, or what they are pleafed to call luxury, that as much as an induftrious tradefman is both a better man and a better citizen than one of those idle retainers who formerly depended on the great families; so much is the life of a modern nobleman more laudable than that of an ancient baron °.

But the most important law in its consequences which was enacted during the reign of Henry, was that by which the nobility and gentry acquired a power of breaking the ancient entails, and of alienating their estates. By means of this law, joined to the beginning luxury and refinement of the age, the great fortunes of the barons were gradually disfipated, and the property of the commons increased in England. It is probable that Henry foresaw

• See note [O] at the end of the volume.

and

f 4 H. 7. cap. 24. The practice of breaking entails by means of a fine and recovery was introduced in the reign of Edward the IVth: But it was not, properly speaking, law till the statute of Henry the VIIth; which, by correcting some abuses that attended that practice, gave indirectly a sanction to it.

and intended this consequence; because the constant CHAP. scheme of his policy confisted in depressing the great, and exalting churchmen, lawyers, and men of new

families, who were more dependant on him.

This king's love of money naturally led him to encourage commerce, which encreased his customs; but if we may judge by most of the laws enacted during his reign, trade and industry were rather hurt than promoted by the care and attention given to them. Severe laws were made against taking interest for money, which was then denominated usury's. Even the profits of exchange were prohibited as favouring of usury h, which the superstition of the age zealously profcribed. All evasive contracts, by ' which profits could be made from the loan of money, were also carefully guarded against i. It is needless to observe how unreasonable and iniquitous these laws, how impossible to be executed, and how hurtful to trade, if they could take place. We may obferve, however, to the praise of this king, that sometimes, in order to promote commerce, he lent to merchants fums of money without interest, when he knew that their stock was not sufficient for those enterprifes which they had in view k.

LAWS were made against the exportation of money, plate, or bullion 1: A precaution which ferves to no other purpose than to make more be exported. But so far was the anxiety on this head carried, that merchants alien, who imported commodities into the kingdom, were obliged to invest in English commodities all the money acquired by their fales, in order to prevent their conveying it away in a clandestine

manner m.

IT was prohibited to export horses; as if that exportation did not encourage the breed, and render

g 3 H. 7. cap. 5.

h Ibid. cap. 6.

<sup>1 7</sup>H. 7. cap 8.

k Polyd. Virg.

<sup>1 4</sup> H. 7. cap. 23.

m 3 H. 7. cap. 8.



CHAP. them more plentiful in the kingdom. In order to promote archery, no bows were to be fold at a higher price than fix shillings and four-pence, reducing money to the denomination of our time. The only effect of this regulation must be, either that the people would be supplied with bad bows, or none at all. Prices were also affixed to woollen cloth , to caps and hats q: And the wages of labourers were regulated by law. It is evident that these matters ought always to be left free, and be entrusted to the common course of business and commerce. To fome it may appear furprifing, that the price of a yard of fcarlet cloth should be limited to fix and twenty shillings, money of our age; that of a yard of coloured cloth to eighteen; higher prices than these commodities bear at present; and that the wages of a tradefinan, fuch as a mason, bricklayer, tyler, &c. should be regulated at near ten pence a-day; which is not much inferior to the present wages given in some parts of England. Labour and commodities have certainly rifen fince the discovery of the West-Indies; but not so much in every particular as is generally imagined. The greater industry of the present times has increased the number of tradefmen and labourers, fo as to keep wages nearer a par than could be expected from the great increase of gold and filver. And the additional art employed in the finer manufactures has even made some of these commodities fall below their former value. mention that merchants and dealers, being contented with lefs profit than formerly, afford the goods cheaper to their customers. It appears by a statute of this reign's, that goods bought for fixteen pence would fometimes be fold by the merchants for three fhillings. The commodities whose price has chiefly rifen, are butchers meat, fowl, and fish (especially

n II H. 7. cap. 13.

P 4 H. 7. cap. 8.

r II H. 7. cap. 22.

<sup>0 3</sup> H. 7. cap. 12.

<sup>9</sup> Ibid. cap. 9.

<sup>5 4</sup> H. 7. cap. 9 ...

1509.

the latter), which cannot be much augmented in CHAP. quantity by the increase of art and industry. The profession which then abounded most, and was sometimes embraced by persons of the lowest rank, was the church: By a clause of a statute all clerks or students of the university were forbidden to beg. without a permission from the vice-chancellor t.

ONE great cause of the low state of industry during this period was the restraints put upon it; and the parliament, or rather the king (for he was the prime mover in every thing), enlarged a little fome of these limitations, but not to the degree that was requifite. A law had been enacted during the reign of Henry IV. u, that no man could bind his fon or daughter to an apprenticeship, unless he were posfessed of twenty shillings a-year in land; and Henry VII. because the decay of manufactures was complained of in Norwich from the want of hands. exempted that city from the penalties of the law w. Afterwards the whole county of Norfolk obtained a like exemption with regard to fome branches of the woollen manufacture x. These absurd limitations proceeded from a defire of promoting husbandry, which, however, is never more effectually encouraged than by the increase of manufactures. For a like reason, the law enacted against inclosures, and for the keeping up of farm-houses, scarcely deserves the high praises bestowed on it by lord Bacon. If husbandmen understand agriculture, and have a ready vent for their commodities, we need not dread a diminution of the people employed in the country. All methods of supporting populousness, except by the interest of the proprietors, are violent and ineffectual. During a century and a half after this period, there was a frequent renewal of laws and

t II H. 7. cap 22. w 11 H. 7. cap. 11.

у 4 Н. 7. сар. 19.

u 7 H. 7. cap. 17.

x 12 H. 7. сар. I.

150g.

CHAP. edicts against depopulation; whence we may infer that none of them were ever executed. natural course of improvement at last provided a remedy.

ONE check to industry in England was the erecting of corporations; an abuse which is not yet entirely corrected. A law was enacted, that corporations should not pass any bye-laws without the consent of three of the chief officers of state 2. They were prohibited from imposing tolls at their gates a. The cities of Glocester and Worcester had even imposed tolls on the Severne, which were abolished o.

THERE is a law of this reign', containing a preamble, by which it appears, that the company of merchant adventurers in London had, by their own authority, debarred all the other merchants of the kingdom from trading to the great marts in the Low Countries, unless each trader previously paid them the fum of near feventy pounds. It is furprifing that fuch a bye-law (if it deserve the name) could ever be carried into execution, and that the authority of par-

liament should be requisite to abrogate it.

IT was during this reign, on the fecond of August 1492, a little before sun-set, that Christopher Columbus, a Genoese, set out from Spain on his memorable voyage for the discovery of the western world; and a few years after Vasquez de Gama, a Portuguese, passed the Cape of Good Hope, and opened a new passage to the East Indies. great events were attended with important confequences to all the nations of Europe, even to fuch as were not immediately concerned in those naval enterprifes. The enlargement of commerce and navigation increased industry and the arts every where: The nobles diffipated their fortunes in expensive

<sup>2 19</sup> H. 7. cap. 7. b Ibid. cap. 18.

<sup>·</sup> Ibld. cap. 8. c 12 H. 7. cap. 6.

pleasures:

1500.

America

pleasures: Men of an inferior rank both acquired C H A P. a share in the landed property, and created to themfelves a confiderable property of a new kind, in flock, commodities, art, credit, and correspondence. In fome nations the privileges of the commons increased by this increase of property: In most nations the kings, finding arms to be dropped by the barons, who could no longer endure their former rude manner of life, established standing armies, and fubdued the liberties of their kingdoms: But in all places the condition of the people. from the depression of the petty tyrants by whom they had formerly been oppressed rather than governed, received great improvement; and they acquired, if not entire liberty, at least the most confiderable advantages of it. And as the general course of events thus tended to depress the nobles and exalt the people, Henry VII. who also embraced that system of policy, has acquired more praise than his inflitutions, strictly speaking, seem of themselves to deferve on account of any profound wisdom attending them.

IT was by accident only that the king had not a confiderable share in those great naval discoveries by which the prefent age was fo much distinguished. Columbus, after meeting with many repulses from the courts of Portugal and Spain, fent his brother Bartholomew to London, in order to explain his projects to Henry, and crave his protection for the execution of them. The king invited him over to England; but his brother being taken by pirates, was detained in his voyage; and Columbus meanwhile having obtained the countenance of Isabella, was supplied with a small fleet, and happily executed his enterprise. Henry was not discouraged by this disappointment: He fitted out Sebastian Cabot, a Venetian, settled in Bristol; and fent him westwards, in 1498, in fearch of new countries. Cabot discovered the main land of D d 3

1509.

CHAP. America towards the fixtieth degree of northern XXVI., latitude: He failed fouthwards along the coast, and discovered Newfoundland, and other countries: but returned to England without making any conquest or settlement. Elliot, and other merchants in Bristol, made a like attempt in 1502 d. The king expended fourteen thousand pounds in building one ship, called the Great Harry . She was, properly fpeaking, the first ship in the English navy. this period, when the prince wanted a fleet, he had no other expedient than hiring or pressing ships from the merchants.

> But though this improvement of navigation, and the discovery of both the Indies, was the most memorable incident that happened during this or any other period, it was not the only great event by which the age was distinguished. In 1453 Constantinople was taken by the Turks; and the Greeks, among whom some remains of learning were still preserved, being scattered by these barbarians, took shelter in Italy, and imported, together with their admirable language, a tincture of their science, and of their refined taste in poetry and eloquence. About the same time the purity of the Latin tongue was revived, the study of antiquity became fashionable, and the esteem for literature gradually propagated itself throughout every nation in Europe. The art of printing, invented about that time, extremely facilitated the progress of all these improvements: The invention of gunpowder changed the whole art of war: Mighty innovations were foon after made in religion, fuch as not only affected those states that embraced them, but even those that adhered to the ancient faith and worship: And thus a general revolution was made in human affairs throughout this part of the world; and men gradually attained that fituation with regard to com-

d Rymer, vol. xiii. p. 37.

merce, arts, science, government, police, and culti- C H A P. vation, in which they have ever fince persevered. XXVI. Here, therefore, commences the useful, as well as the more agreeable part of modern annals; certainty has place in all the confiderable, and even most of the minute parts of historical narration; a great variety of events, preserved by printing, give the author the power of selecting, as well as adorning the facts which he relates; and as each incident has a reference to our present manners and situation, instructive lessons occur every moment during the course of the narration. Whoever carries his anxious refearches into preceding periods is moved by a curiofity, liberal indeed and commendable; not by any necessity for acquiring knowledge of public affairs, or the arts of civil government.

## CHAP. XXVII.

## NRY

Popularity of the new king—His ministers— Punishment of Empson and Dudley -- King's marriage — Foreign affairs — Julius II. League of Cambray - War with France -Expedition to Fontarabia — Deceit of Ferdinand -Return of the English -Leo X. A parliament-War with Scotland-Wolfey minister -His character - Invasion of France -Battle of Guinegate - Battle of Flouden -Peace with France.

XXVII. I 509.

Popularity of the new king.

CHAP. THE death of Henry VII. had been attended with as open and vible a joy among the people as decency would permit; and the accellion and coronation of his fon Henry VIII. spread univerfally a declared and unfeigned fatisfaction. stead of a monarch jealous, severe, and avaricious, who, in proportion as he advanced in years, was finking still deeper in those unpopular vices, a young prince of eighteen had succeeded to the throne, who even in the eyes of men of fense gave promifing hopes of his future conduct, much more in those of the people, always enchanted with novelty, youth, and royal dignity. The beauty and vigour of his person, accompanied with dexterity in every manly exercise, was farther adorned with a blooming and ruddy countenance, with a lively air, with the appearance of spirit and activity in all his demeanour. His father, in order to remove him



Some a Mining in the Royal Collection Remainster Sellar .

Compared by the Showin .



from the knowledge of public business, had hither- CHAP. to occupied him entirely in the pursuits of literature; and the proficiency which he made gave no bad prognostic of his parts and capacity. Even the vices of vehemence, ardour, and impatience, to which he was subject, and which afterwards degenerated into tyranny, were confidered only as faults incident to unguarded youth, which would be corrected when time had brought him to greater moderation and maturity. And as the contending titles of York and Lancaster were now at last fully united in his person, men justly expected from a prince, obnoxious to no party, that impartiality of administration which had long been unknown in

England. THESE favourable prepoffessions of the public were encouraged by the measures which Henry embraced in the commencement of his reign. grandmother, the countess of Richmond and Derby, was still alive; and as she was a woman much celebrated for prudence and virtue, he wifely shewed great deference to her opinion in the establishment of his new council. The members were, Warham, His miniarchbishop of Canterbury and chancellor; the earl sters. of Shrewsbury, steward; lord Herbert, chamberlain; fir Thomas Lovel, master of the wards and constable of the Tower; fir Edward Poynings, comptroller; fir Henry Marney, afterwards lord Marney; fir Thomas Darcy, afterwards lord Darcy; Thomas Ruthal, doctor of laws; and fir Henry Wyat h. These men had long been accustomed to business under the late king, and were the least

monarch. But the chief competitors for favour and authority under the new king were the earl of Surrey, trea-

unpopular of all the ministers employed by that

g Father Paul, lib. v.

1509.

h Herbert, Stowe, p. 486. Hollingshed, p. 799.

XXVII. 1509.

CHAP. furer, and Fox bishop of Winchester, secretary and privy feal. This prelate, who enjoyed great credit during all the former reign, had acquired fuch habits of caution and frugality as he could not eafily lay aside; and he still opposed, by his remonstrances, those schemes of diffipation and expence which the youth and passions of Henry rendered agreeable to him. But Surrey was a more dexterous courtier; and though few had borne a greater share in the frugal politics of the late king, he knew how to conform himself to the humour of his new master; and no one was fo forward in promoting that liberality, pleasure, and magnificence, which began to prevail under the young monarch i. By this policy he ingratiated himself with Henry; he made advantage, as well as the other courtiers, of the lavish disposition of his master; and he engaged him in such a courfe of play and idleness as rendered him negligent of affairs, and willing to entrust the government of the state entirely into the hands of his ministers. The great treasures amassed by the late king were gradually diffipated in the giddy expences of Henry. One party of pleasure succeeded to another: Tilts, tournaments, and caroufals, were exhibited with all the magnificence of the age: And as the present tranquillity of the public permitted the court to indulge itself in every amusement, serious business was but little attended to. Or if the king intermitted the course of his festivity, he chiefly emploved himself in an application to music and literature, which were his favourite pursuits, and which were well adapted to his genius. He had made fuch proficiency in the former art, as even to compose some pieces of church-music which were sung in his chapel\*. He was initiated in the elegant learning of the ancients. And though he was so unfortunate as to be feduced into a study of the barren contro-

Lord Herbert-

k Ibid.

1509.

versies of the schools, which were then fashionable, CHAP. and had chosen Thomas Aguinas for his favourite author, he still discovered a capacity sitted for more

useful and entertaining knowledge.

THE frank and careless humour of the king, as it led him to diffipate the treasures amassed by his father, rendered him negligent in protecting the instruments whom that prince had employed in his extortions. A proclamation being issued to encourage complaints, the rage of the people was let loofe on all informers, who had fo long exercifed an inbounded tyranny over the nation 1: They were thrown into prison, condemned to the pillory, and most of them lost their lives by the violence of the populace. Empfon and Dudley, who were most Punishexposed to public hatred, were immediately sum- ment of Empson moned before the council, in order to answer for and Dadtheir conduct, which had rendered them fo ob- leynoxious. Empfon made a shrewd apology for himself, as well as for his affociate. He told the council, that fo far from his being justly exposed to censure for his past conduct, his enemies themselves grounded their clamour on actions which feemed rather to merit reward and approbation: That a strict execution of law was the crime of which he and Dudley were accufed; though that law had been established by general confent, and though they had acted in obedience to the king, to whom the administration of justice was enrusted by the constitution: That it belonged not to them, who were instruments in the hands of supreme power, to determine what laws were recent or obsolete, expedient or hurtful; fince they were all alike valid, fo long as they remained unrepealed by the legislature: That it was natural for a licentious populace to murmur against the restraints of authority; but all wife states had ever made their glory confift in the just distribution of rewards and

1 Herbert, Stowe, p. 486. Hollingshed, p. 799. lib. xxv.ii.

punishments,



CHAP, punishments, and had annexed the former to the observance and enforcement of the laws, the latter to their violation and infraction: And that a fudden overthrow of all government might be expected, where the judges were committed to the mercy of the criminals, the rulers to that of the subjects m.

NOTWITHSTANDING this defence, Empfon and Dudley were fent to the Tower; and foon after brought to their trial. The strict execution of laws, however obsolete, could never be imputed to them as a crime in a court of judicature; and it is likely that, even where they had exercised arbitrary power, the king, as they had acted by the fecret commands of his father, was not willing that their conduct should undergo too fevere a scrutiny. In order, therefore, to gratify the people with the punishment of these obnoxious ministers, crimes very improbable, or indeed absolutely impossible, were charged upon them; that they had entered into a conspiracy against the fovereign, and had intended, on the death of the late king, to have feized by force the administration of government. The jury were fo far moved by popular prejudices, joined to court influence, as to give a verdict against them; which was afterwards confirmed by a bill of attainder in parliament n, and at the earnest defire of the people was executed by warrant from the king. Thus, in those arbitrary times, justice was equally violated, whether the king fought power and riches, or courted popularity.

m Herbert, Hollingshed, p. 804.

<sup>&</sup>quot; This parliament met on the 21st January 1510. A law was there enacted, in order to prevent fome abuses which had prevailed durmg the late reign. The forfeiture upon the penal flatutes was reduced to the term of three years. Coffs and damages were given against informers upon acquittal of the accused: More severe punithments were enamed against perjury: The salse inquisitions procured by Empfon and Dudley were declared bull and invalid. Traverfes were allowed; and the time of tendering them enlarged. III. 8. C. 8. 10, 11, 12.

HENRY, while he punished the instruments of CHAP. past tyranny, had yet such deference to former en- XXVII. gagements as to deliberate, immediately after his accession, concerning the celebration of his marriage with the infanta Catherine, to whom he had been affianced during his father's lifetime. Her former King's marriage with his brother, and the inequality of marriage. their years, were the chief objections urged against his espousing her: But on the other hand, the advantages of her known virtue, modesty, and sweetness of disposition, were insisted on; the affection which she bore to the king; the large dowry to which she was entitled as princess of Wales; the interest of cementing a close alliance with Spain; the necessity of finding some confederate to counterbalance the power of France; the expediency of fulfilling the engagements of the late king: When these considerations were weighed, they determined the council, though contrary to the opinion of the primate, to give Henry their advice for celebrating the marriage. The countefs of Richmond, who had concurred in the same sentiments with the council, died foon after the marriage 3d June. of her grandfon.

1509.

THE popularity of Henry's government, his undisputed title, his extensive authority, his large treasures, the tranquillity of his subjects, were circumstances which rendered his domestic administration eafy and profperous: The fituation of foreign Foreign affairs was no less happy and desirable. Italy continued still, as during the late reign, to be the centre of all the wars and negotiations of the European princes; and Henry's alliance was courted by all parties; at the same time that he was not engaged by any immediate interest or necessity to take part with any. Lewis XII. of France, after his conquest of Milan, was the only great prince that poffeffed any territory in Italy; and could he have remained

XXVII. 1509.

CHAP. in tranquillity, he was enabled by his fituation to prescribe laws to all the Italian princes and republics, and to hold the balance among them. But the defire of making a conquest of Naples, to which he had the fame title or pretenfions with his predeceffor, still engaged him in new enterprises; and as he forefaw opposition from Ferdinand, who was connected both by treaties and affinity with Frederic of Naples, he endeavoured by the offers of interest, to which the ears of that monarch were ever open, to engage him in an opposite confederacy. He fettled with him a plan for the partition of the kingdom of Naples, and the expulsion of Frederic: A plan which the politicians of that age regarded as the most egregious imprudence in the French monarch, and the greatest perfidy in the Spanish. Frederic, supported only by subjects who were either discontented with his government, or indifferent about his fortunes, was unable to refift fo powerful a confederacy, and was deprived of his dominions: But he had the satisfaction to see Naples immediately prove the fource of contention among his enemies. Ferdinand gave fecret orders to his general, Gonfalvo, whom the Spaniards honour with the appellation of the great captain, to attack the armies of France, and make hinifelf master of all the dominions of Naples. Gonfalvo prevailed in every enterprife, defeated the French in two pitched battles, and enfured to his prince the entire possesfion of that kingdom. Lewis, unable to procure redress by force of arms, was obliged to enter into a fruitless negotiation with Ferdinand for the recovery of his share of the partition; and all Italy during some time was held in suspence between these two powerful monarchs.

THERE has fcarcely been any period when the balance of power was better fecured in Europe, and feemed more able to maintain itself without any anxious

I 509.

anxious concern or attention of the princes. Se- CHAP. veral great monarchies were established; and no one fo far surpassed the rest as to give any foundation or even pretence for jealoufy. England was united in domestic peace, and by its fituation happily fecured from the invasion of foreigners. The coalition of the feveral kingdoms of Spain had formed one powerful monarchy, which Ferdinand administered with arts, fraudulent indeed and deceitful. but full of vigour and ability. Lewis XII. a gallant and generous prince, had, by espousing Anne of Britanny, widow to his predecessor, preserved the union with that principality, on which the fafety of his kingdom fo much depended. Maximilian the emperor, besides the hereditary dominions of the Austrian family, maintained authority in the empire, and, notwithstanding the levity of his character, was able to unite the German princes in any great plan of interest, at least of defence. Charles prince of Castile, grandson to Maximilian and Ferdinand, had already fucceeded to the rich dominions of the house of Burgundy; and being as yet in early youth, the government was entrusted to Margaret of Savoy, his aunt, a princess endowed with fignal prudence and virtue. The internal force of these several powerful states, by balancing each other, might long have maintained general tranquillity, had not the active and enterprifing genius of Julius II. an ambitious pontiff, first excited Julius II. the flames of war and discord among them. By his intrigues, a league had been formed at Cam- League of bray between himself, Maximilian, Lewis, and Cambray. Ferdinand; and the object of this great confederacy was to overwhelm, by their united arms, the commonwealth of Venice. Henry, without any motive from interest or passion, allowed his name to be inferted in the confederacy. This oppressive and

C H A P. iniquitous league was but too fuccessful against the

republic.

THE great force and fecure fituation of the con-1509. siderable monarchies prevented any one from aspiring to any conquest of moment; and though this confideration could not maintain general peace, or remedy the natural inquietude of men, it rendered the princes of this age more disposed to desert engagements, and change their alliances, in which they were retained by humour and caprice, rather than by any natural or durable interest. Julius had no 1510. fooner humbled the Venetian republic, than he was inspired with a nobler ambition, that of expelling all foreigners from Italy, or, to speak in the style affected by the Italians of that age, the freeing of that country entirely from the dominion of Barbarians P. He was determined to make the tempest

He folicited the favour of England, by fending Henry a facred rofe, perfumed with musk, and anointed with chrism. He engaged in his interests Bambridge archbishop of York, and Henry's ambassador at Rome, whom he soon after created a cardinal. He drew over Ferdinand to his party, though that monarch at first made no declaration of his intentions. And what he chiefly valued, he formed a treaty with the Swifs cantons, who, enraged by some neglects put upon them by Lewis, accompanied with contumelious expressions, had quitted the alliance of France, and waited for an opportunity of revenging

fall first upon Lewis; and, in order to pave the way for this great enterprise, he at once sought for a ground of quarrel with the monarch, and courted the alliance of other princes. He declared war against the duke of Ferrara, the confederate of Lewis.

WHILE the French monarch repelled the attacks of his enemies, he thought it also requisite to make an

themselves on that nation.

P Guicciard. lib. viii.

<sup>9</sup> Spelman, Concil vol. ii. p 725.

ISTI.

attempt on the pope himself, and to despoil him as C HAP. much as possible, of that sacred character which chiefly rendered him formidable. He engaged fome cardinals, difgusted with the violence of Julius, to defert him; and by their authority, he was determined, in conjunction with Maximilian, who still adhered to his alliance, to call a general council, which might reform the church, and check the exorbitancies of the Roman pontiff. A council was fummoned at Pifa, which from the beginning bore a very inauspicious aspect, and promised little success to its adherents. Except a few French bishops, who unwillingly obeyed their king's commands in attending the council, all the other prelates kept aloof from an affembly which they regarded as the offspring of faction, intrigue, and worldly politics. Even Pifa, the place of their residence, showed them figns of contempt; which engaged them to transfer their session to Milan, a city under the dominion of the French monarch. Notwithstanding this advantage, they did not experience much more respectful treatment from the inhabitants of Milan; and found it necessary to make another remove to Lyons 9. Lewis himself fortified these violent prejudices in favour of papal authority, by the symptoms which he discovered, of regard, deference, and submission to Julius, whom he always spared, even when fortune had thrown into his hands the most inviting opportunities of humbling him. And as it was known that his confort, who had great influence over him, was extremely disquieted in mind on account of his dissensions with the holy father, all men prognosticated to Julius final fuccess in this unequal contest.

THE enterprising pontiff knew his advantages, and availed himself of them with the utmost temerity and infolence. So much had he neglected his

9 Guicciardini, lib. 10.

XXVII.

C P A P. facerdotal character, that he acted in person at the fiege of Mirandola, vifited the trenches, faw fome of his attendants killed by his fide, and, like a young foldier, cheerfully bore all the rigours of winter and a fevere feafon, in pursuit of military glory : Yet was he still able to throw, even on his most moderate opponents, the charge of impiety and prophaneness. He summoned a council at the Lateran: He put Pifa under an interdict, and all the places which gave shelter to the schismatical council: He excommunicated the cardinals and prelates who attended it: He even pointed his spiritual thunder against the princes who adhered to it: He freed their subjects from all oaths of allegiance, and gave their dominions to every one who could. take possession of them.

FERDINAND of Arragon, who had acquired the firname of Catholic, regarded the cause of the pope and of religion only as a cover to his ambition and felfish politics: Henry, naturally fincere and fanguine in his temper, and the more fo on account of his youth and inexperience, was moved with a hearty defire of protecting the pope from the oppression to which he believed him exposed from the ambitious enterprises of Lewis. Hopes had been given him by Julius, that the title of Most Christian King, which had hitherto been annexed to the crown of France, and which was regarded as its most precious ornament, should, in reward of his services, be transferred to that of England's. Impatient also of acquiring that distinction in Europe to which his power and opulence entitled him, he could not long remain neuter amidst the noise of arms; and the natural enmity of the English against France, as well as their ancient claims upon that kingdom, led Henry to join that alliance, which the pope, Spain, and Venice had formed against the French mo-

1512e

r Guicciardini, lib. 9. 5 Guicciard. lib. 11. P. Daniel, vol. ii. p 1893. Herbert. Hollingshed, p. 831.

narch. A herald was fent to Paris, to exhort C H A P. Lewis not to wage impious war against the fovereign pontiff; and when he returned without fuccess, another was fent to demand the ancient patrimonial provinces, Anjou, Maine, Guienne, and Normandy. This message was understood to War with be a declaration of war; and a parliament being France. fummoned, readily granted fupplies for a purpose fo much favoured by the English nation .

Buonaviso, an agent of the pope's at London, had been corrupted by the court of France, and had previously revealed to Lewis all the measures which Henry was concerting against him. But this infidelity did the king inconfiderable prejudice, in com-· parison of the treachery which he experienced from the felfish purposes of the ally on whom he chiefly relied for affistance. Ferdinand, his father-in-law, had fo long perfevered in a course of crooked politics, that he began even to value himself on his dexterity in fraud and artifice; and he made a boast of those shameful successes. Being told one day, that Lewis, a prince of a very different character, had complained of his having once cheated him: " He lies, the drunkard!" faid he, "I have cheated him above twenty times." This prince confidered his close connexions with Henry only as the means which enabled him the better to take advantage of his want of experience. He advised him not to invade France by the way of Calais, where he himself fhould not have it in his power to affift him: He Expediexhorted him rather to fend forces to Fontarabia, tion to Fontarabia, Fontarabia, whence he could eafily make a conquest of Guienne, bia. a province in which it was imagined the English had still some adherents. He promised to affist this conquest by the junction of a Spanish army. And fo forward did he feem to promote the interests of his fon-in-law, that he even fent veffels to England,

Herbert. Hollingshed, p. 811.

I 512.

CHAP. in order to transport over the forces which Henry had levied for that purpose. The marquis of Dorfet commanded this armament, which confifted of ten thousand men, mostly infantry; lord Howard fon of the earl of Surrey, lord Broke, lord Ferrars, and many others of the young gentry and nobility, accompanied him in this service. All were on fire to distinguish themselves by military atchievements, and to make a conquest of importance for their master. The secret purpose of Ferdinand, in this unexampled generofity, was fuspected by nobody.

> THE small kingdom of Navarre lies on the frontiers between France and Spain; and as John d'Albert the fovereign was connected by friendship and alliance with Lewis, the opportunity feemed favourable to Ferdinand, while the English forces were conjoined with his own, and while all adherents to the council of Pifa lay under the fentence of excommunication, to put himself in possession of these dominions. No sooner, therefore, was Dorset landed in Guipiscoa, than the Spanish monarch declared his readiness to join him with his forces, to make with united arms an invasion of France, and to form the fiege of Bayonne, which opened the way into Guienne": But he remarked to the English general how dangerous it might prove to leave behind them the kingdom of Navarre, which, being in close alliance with France, could eafily give admittance to the enemy, and cut off all communication between Spain and the combined armies. To provide against so dangerous an event, he required, that John should stipulate a neutrality in the prefent war; and when that prince expressed his willingness to enter into any engagement for that purpose, he also required, that security should be given for the strict observance of it. John having likewise agreed to this condition, Ferdinand de-

> > " Herbert. Hollingshed, p. 813.

manded, that he should deliver into his hands fix of CHAP. the most considerable places of his dominions, together with his eldest fon as a hostage. These were not terms to be proposed to a sovereign; and as the Spanish monarch expected a refusal, he gave immediate orders to the duke of Alva, his general, to make an invasion on Navarre, and to reduce that kingdom. Alva foon made himself master of all the smaller towns; and being ready to form the fiege of Pampeluna, the capital, he fummoned the marquis of Dorset to join him with the English army, and concert together all their operations.

1512.

Dorset began to suspect, that the interests of his mafter were very little regarded in all these transactions; and having no orders to invade the kingdom of Navarre, or make war any where but in France, he refused to take any part in the enterprise. He remained therefore in his quarters at Fontarabia; but so subtle was the contrivance of Deceit of Ferdinand, that, even while the English army lay Ferdinand. in that fituation, it was almost equally serviceable to his purpose, as if it had acted in conjunction with his own. It kept the French army in awe, and prevented it from advancing to fuccour the kingdom of Navarre; fo that Alva, having full leifure to conduct the fiege, made himself master of Pampeluna, and obliged John to feek for shelter in The Spanish general applied again to Dorfet, and proposed to conduct with united counfels the operations of the holy league, fo it was called, against Lewis: But as he still declined forming the fiege of Bayonne, and rather infifted on the invafion of the principality of Bearne, a part of the king of Navarre's dominions, which lies on the French fide of the Pyrenees, Dorfet, justly suspicious of his finister intentions, represented, that, without new orders from his mafter, he could not concur in fuch an undertaking. In order to procure these orders, E e 3 Ferdinand

XXVII. 1512.

CHAP Ferdinand dispatched Martin de Ampios to London; and persuaded Henry, that, by the refractory and scrupulous humour of the English general, the most favourable opportunities were lost, and that it was necessary he should, on all occasions, act in concert with the Spanish commander, who was best acquainted with the fituation of the country, and the reasons of every operation. But before orders to this purpose reached Spain, Dorset had become extremely impatient; and observing that his farther flay ferved not to promote the main undertaking, and that his army was daily perishing by want and fickness, he demanded shipping from Ferdinand to transport them back into England. Ferdinand, who was bound by treaty to furnish him with this fupply, whenever demanded, was at length, after many delays, obliged to yield to his importunity; and Dorfet, embarking his troops, prepared himself for the voyage. Meanwhile, the messenger arrived with orders from Henry, that the troops fhould remain in Spain; but the foldiers were fo discontented with the treatment which they had met with, that they mutinied, and obliged their commanders to let fail for England. Henry was much displeased with the ill success of this enterprise; and it was with difficulty that Dorfet, by explaining the fraudulent conduct of Ferdinand, was at last able to appeafe him.

Return of the Englufh.

> THERE happened this fummer an action at fea, which brought not any more decifive advantage to the English. Sir Thomas Knevet, master of horse, was fent to the coast of Britanny with a fleet of forty-five fail; and he carried with him fir Charles Brandon, fir John Carew, and many other young courtiers, who longed for an opportunity of difplaying their valour. After they had committed fome depredations, a French fleet of thirty-nine fail iffued from Brest, under the command of Primauget, and

began

I 512.

began an engagement with the English. Fire seized C H A P. the ship of Primauget, who, sinding his destruction inevitable, bore down upon the veffel of the English admiral, and grappling with her, resolved to make her share his fate. Both fleets stood some time in suspense, as spectators of this dreadful engagement, and all men faw with horror the flames which confumed both veffels, and heard the cries of fury and despair, which came from the miserable combatants. At last, the French vessel blew up; and at the fame time destroyed the English \*. The rest of the French fleet made their escape into different harbours.

THE war which England waged against France, though it brought no advantage to the former kingdom, was of great prejudice to the latter; and by obliging Lewis to withdraw his forces for the defence of his own dominions, lost him that superiority, which his arms, in the beginning of the campaign, had attained in Italy. Gaston de Foix, his nephew, a young hero, had been entrusted with the command of the French forces; and in a few months performed fuch feats of military art and prowefs, as were fufficient to render illustrious the life of the oldest captain. His career finished with the great battle of Ravenna, which, after the most obstinate conflict, he gained over the Spanish and papal armies. He perished the very moment his victory was complete; and with him perished the fortune of the French arms in Italy. The Swifs, who had rendered themselves extremely formidable by their bands of disciplined infantry, invaded the Milanese with a numerous army, and raifed up that inconflant people to a revolt against the dominion of France. Genoa followed the example of the durchy; and thus Lewis, in a few weeks, entirely lost

x Polydore Virgil, lib. 27. Stowe, p. 490. Lanquet's Epinome of Chronicles, fol. 273. y Guicciard. lib. 10.

XXVII. 1513.

sift Feb.

Leo X.

C H A P. his Italian conquests, except some garrisons; and Maximilian Sforza, the fon of Ludovic, was reinstated in possession of Milan.

> Julius discovered extreme joy on the discomfiture of the French; and the more so, as he had been beholden for it to the Swifs, a people whose councils, he hoped, he should always be able to influence and govern. The pontiff survived this success a very little time; and in his place was chosen John de Medicis, who took the appellation of Leo X. and proved one of the most illustrious princes that ever fat on the papal throne. Humane, beneficent, generous, affable; the patron of every art, and friend of every virtue 2; he had a foul no less capable of forming great defigns than his predeceffor, but was more gentle, pliant, and artful in employing means for the execution of them. The fole defect, indeed, of his character was too great finesse and artifice; a fault which, both as a priest and an Italian, it was difficult for him to avoid. By the negotiations of Leo, the emperor Maximilian was detached from the French interest; and Henry, notwithstanding his disappointments in the former campaign, was still encouraged to profecute his warlike measures against Lewis.

A parliament.

HENRY had summoned a new fession of parliament, and obtained a supply for his enterprise. It was a poll-tax, and imposed different sums, according to the station and riches of the person. A duke payed ten marks, an earl five pounds, a baron four pounds, a knight four marks; every man valued at eight hundred pounds in goods, four marks. An imposition was also granted of two fifteenths and four tenths b. By these supplies, joined to the treafure which had been left by his father, and which was not yet entirely diffipated, he was enabled to

2 4th November, 1512.

z Father Paul, lib. 1.

b Stows.

levy a great army, and render himself formidable to CHAP. his enemy. The English are faid to have been much encouraged in this enterprise, by the arrival of a vessel in the Thames under the papal banner. It carried presents of wine and hams to the king, and the more eminent courtiers; and fuch fond devotion was at that time entertained towards the court of Rome, that these trivial presents were every where received with the greatest triumph and exultation.

3513.

In order to prevent all disturbances from Scotland, while Henry's arms should be employed on the continent, Dr. West, dean of Windsor, was dispatched on an embassy to James, the king's brother-in-law; and instructions were given him to accommodate all differences between the kingdoms, as well as to discover the intentions of the court of Scotland. Some complaints had already been made on both sides. One Barton, a Scotchman, having suffered injuries from the Portuguese, for which he could obtain no redrefs, had procured letters of marque against that nation; but he had no fooner put to fea, than he was guilty of the groffest abuses, committed depredations upon the English, and much infested the narrow seas d. Lord Howard and fir Edward Howard, admirals, and fons of the earl of Surrey, failing out against him, fought him in a desperate action, where the pirate was killed; and they brought his ships into the Thames. Henry refused all satisfaction for this act of justice, fome of the borderers, who wanted but a pretence for depredations, entered England under the command of lord Hume, warden of the marches, and committed great ravages on that kingdom. Notwithstanding these mutual grounds of disfatisfaction, matters might eafily have been accommodated,

c Polydore Virgil, lib. 27.

Stowe, p 489. Hollingshed, p. 811.

XXVII. War with Scotland.

CHAP. had it not been for Henry's intended invasion of France, which roused the jealousy of the Scottish nation . The ancient league, which subfisted between France and Scotland, was conceived to be the strongest band of connection; and the Scots univerfally believed, that, were it not for the countenance which they received from this foreign alliance, they had never been able to long to maintain their independence against a people so much fuperior. James was farther incited to take part in the quarrel by the invitations of Anne, queen of France, whose knight he had ever in all tournaments professed himself, and who summoned him, according to the ideas of romantic gallantry prevalent in that age, to take the field in her defence, and prove himself her true and valorous champion. The remonstrances of his consort and of his wisest counfellors were in vain opposed to the martial ardour of this prince. He first sent a squadron of thips to the affiftance of France; the only fleet which Scotland feems ever to have possessed. And though he still made professions of maintaining a neutrality, the English ambassador easily foresaw, that a war would in the end prove inevitable; and he gave warning of the danger to his master, who fent the earl of Surrey to put the borders in a pothure of defence, and to relift the expected invalion of the enemy.

HENRY, all on fire for military fame, was little difcouraged by this appearance of a diversion from the north; and fo much the lefs, as he flattered himfelf with the affiftance of all the confiderable potentates of Europe in his invafion of France. The pope still continued to thunder out his excommunications against Lewis, and all the adherents of the schismatical council: The Swifs cantons made pro-

e Buchanan, lib. 13. Drummond in the life of James IV. fessions

fessions of violent animosity against France: The CHAP. ambassadors of Ferdinand and Maximilian had XXVII. figned with those of Henry a treaty of alliance against that power, and had stipulated the time and place of their intended invasion: And though Ferdinand difavowed his ambaffador, and even figned a truce for a twelvemonth with the common enemy; Henry was not yet fully convinced of his felfish and finister intentions, and still hoped for his concurrence after the expiration of that term. He had now got a minister who complied with all his inclinations, and flattered him in every scheme to which his fanguine and impetuous temper was inclined.

1513.

THOMAS WOLSEY, dean of Lincoln, and almoner Wolfey to the king, furpassed in favour all his ministers, and was fast advancing towards that unrivalled grandeur which he afterwards attained. This man was fon of a butcher at Ipswich; but having got a learned education, and being endowed with an excellent capacity, he was admitted into the marquis of Dorset's family as tutor to that nobleman's children, and foon gained the friendship and countenance of his patron f. He was recommended to be chaplain to Henry VII. and being employed by that monarch in a fecret negociation, which regarded his intended marriage with Margaret of Savoy, Maximilian's daughter, he acquitted himself to the king's fatisfaction, and obtained the praise both of diligence and dexterity in his conduct s. That prince, having given him a commission to Maximilian, who at that time resided in Bruffels, was surprised in less than three days after, to see Wolsey present himself before him; and supposing that he had protracted his departure, he began to reprove him for the dilatory execution of his orders. Wolfey informed

f Stowe, p. 997.

<sup>&</sup>amp; Cavendish. Fiddes's life of Wolf. y. Stowe.

1513.

CHAP. him, that he had just returned from Bruffels, and had fuccessfully fulfilled all his majesty's commands. "But on fecond thoughts," faid the king, " I found that fomewhat was omitted in your " orders; and have fent a messenger after you with "fuller instructions." "I met the messenger," replied Wolfey, "on my return: But as I had re-"flected on that omission, I ventured of myself to execute what, I knew, must be your majesty's intentions." The death of Henry, soon after this incident retarded the advancement of Wolfey, and prevented his reaping any advantage from the good opinion which that monarch had entertained of him: But thenceforwards he was looked on at court as a rifing man; and Fox bishop of Winchester cast his eye upon him as one who might be ferviceable to him in his present situation b. This prelate observing that the earl of Surrey had totally eclipsed him in favour, resolved to introduce Wolfey to the young prince's familiarity, and hoped that he might rival Surrey in his infinuating arts, and yet be contented to act in the cabinet a part fubordinate to Fox himself, who had promoted him. In a little time Wolfey gained fo much on the king, that he supplanted both Surrey in his favour, and Fox in his trust and confidence. Being admitted to Henry's parties of pleasure, he took the lead in every jovial conversation, and promoted all that frolic and entertainment which he found fuitable to the age and inclination of the young monarch. Neither his own years, which were near forty, nor his character of a clergyman, were any restraint upon him, or engaged him to check, by any ufeless leverity, the gaiety, in which Henry, who had [small propension to debauchery, passed his careless hours. During the intervals of amusement he introduced

business,

h Antiq. Brit. Eccles. p. 3-9. Polydore Virgil, lib. 27.

XXVII-

1513.

business, and infinuated those maxims of conduct CHAP. which he was defirous his mafter should adopt. He observed to him, that while he entrusted his affairs into the hands of his father's counsellors, he had the advantage indeed of employing men of wisdom and experience, but men who owed not their promotion to his favour, and who scarcely thought themselves accountable to him for the exercife of their authority: That by the factions, and cabals, and jealousies, which had long prevailed among them, they more obstructed the advancement of his affairs, than they promoted it by the knowledge which age and practice had conferred upon them: That while he thought proper to pass his time in those pleasures, to which his age and royal fortune invited him, and in those studies, which would in time enable him to fway the fceptre with absolute authority, his best system of government would be to entrust his authority into the hands of some one person, who was the creature of his will, and who could entertain no view but that of promoting his fervice: And that if this minister had also the same relish for pleasure with himself, and the same taste for science, he could more eafily, at intervals, account to him for his whole conduct, and introduce his mafter gradually into the knowledge of public business; and thus, without tedious constraint or application, initiate him in the science of government i.

HENRY entered into all the views of Wolfey; and finding no one so capable of executing this plan of administration as the person who proposed it, he foon advanced his favourite, from being the companion of his pleasures, to be a member of his council; and from being a member of his council, to be his fole and absolute minister. By this rapid

<sup>1</sup> Cavendish, p. 12. Stowe, p. 499.

CHAP. XXVII. 1513. His charatier.

advancement and uncontrolled authority, the chas racter and genius of Wolfey had full opportunity to display itself. Insatiable in his acquisitions, but still more magnificent in his expence: Of extensive capacity, but still more unbounded enterprise ! Ambitious of power, but still more desirous of glory: Infinuating, engaging, perfuafive; and, by turns, lofty, elevated, commanding: Haughty to his equals, but affable to his dependants; oppreffive to the people, but liberal to his friends; more generous than grateful; less moved by injuries than by contempt; he was framed to take the ascendant in every intercourse with others, but exerted this superiority of nature with such oftentation as exposed him to envy, and made every one willing to recal the original inferiority, or rather meanness of

his fortune.

THE branch of administration in which Henry most exerted himself, while he gave his entire confidence to Wolfey, was the military, which, as it fuited the natural gallantry and bravery of his temper, as well as the ardour of his youth, was the principal object of his attention. Finding that Lewis had made great preparations both by fea and land to refift him, he was no less careful to levy a formidable army, and equip a confiderable fleet for the invasion of France. The command of the fleet was entrusted to fir Edward Howard; who, after scouring the channel for some time, presented himseif before Brest, where the French navy then lay; and he challenged them to a combat. The French admiral, who expected from the Mediterranean a reinforcement of fome gallies under the command of Prejeant de Bidoux, kept within the harbour, and faw with patience the English burn and destroy the country in the neighbourhood. At last Prejeant arrived with fix gallies, and put into Conquet, a place within a few leagues of Brest;

where he secured himself behind some batteries, CHAP, which he had planted on rocks that lay on each fide of him. Howard was, notwithstanding, determined to make an attack upon him; and as he had but April 25. two gallies, he took himself the command of one. and gave the other to lord Ferrars. He was followed by fome row barges, and fome crayers under the command of fir Thomas Chevney, fir William Sidney, and other officers of distinction. He immediately fastened on Prejeant's ship, and leaped on board of her, attended by one Carroz, a Spanish cavalier, and feventeen Englishmen. The cable. meanwhile, which fastened his ship to that of the enemy, being cut, the admiral was thus left in the hands of the French; and as he still continued the combat with great gallantry, he was pushed overboard by their pikes k. Lord Ferrars, feeing the admiral's galley fall off, followed with the other fmall veffels; and the whole fleet was fo discouraged by the loss of their commander, that they retired from before Breft! The French navy came out of harbour; and even ventured to invade the coast of Suffex. They were repulfed, and Prejeant, their commander, lost an eye by the shot of an arrow. Lord Howard, brother to the deceafed admiral. fucceeded to the command of the English fleet; and little memorable passed at sea during this fummer.

GREAT preparations had been making at land, during the whole winter, for an invasion on France by the way of Calais; but the fummer was well ad-

k It was a maxim of Howard's, that no admiral was good for any thing, that was not even brave to a degree of madness. As the feafervice requires much lefs plan and contrivance and capacity than the land, this maxim has great plaufibility and appearance of truth: Though the fate of Howard himself may serve as a proof, that even there courage ought to be tempered with difcretion.

<sup>1</sup> Stowe, p. 491. Herbert, Hollingshed, p. 816.



CHAP. vanced before everything was in fufficient readiness for the intended enterprise. The long peace which the kingdom had enjoyed, had somewhat unfitted the English for military expeditions; and the great change which had lately been introduced in the art of war, had rendered it still more difficult to enure them to the use of the weapons now employed in action. The Swifs, and after them the Spaniards, had shown the advantage of a stable infantry, who fought with pike and fword, and were able to repulse even the heavy-armed cavalry, in which the great force of the armies formerly confifted. The practice of fire-arms was become common; though the caliver, which was the weapon now in use, was fo inconvenient, and attended with fo many difadvantages, that it had not entirely difcredited the bow, a weapon in which the English excelled all European nations. A confiderable part of the forces, which Henry levied for the invafion of France, confifted of archers; and as foon as affairs were in readiness, the vanguard of the army, amounting to 8000 men, under the command of the earl of Shrewsbury, failed over to Calais. Shrewfbury was accompanied by the earl of Derby, the lords Fitzwater, Hastings, Cobham, and fir Rice ap Thomas, captain of the light horse. Another body of 6000 men foon after followed under the command of lord Herbert the chamberlain, attended by the earls of Northumberland and Kent, the lords Audley and Delawar, together with Carew, Curson, and other gentlemen.

THE king himself prepared to follow with the main body and rear of the army; and he appointed the queen regent of the kingdom during his absence. That he might fecure her administration from all disturbance, he ordered Edmond de la Pole, earl of Suffolk, to be beheaded in the Tower, the nobleman who had been attainted and imprisoned

during

during the late reign. Henry was led to commit CHAP. this act of violence by the dying commands, as is imagined, of his father, who told him, that he never would be free from danger, while a man of fo turbulent a disposition as Suffolk was alive. And as Richard de la Pole, brother of Suffolk, had accepted of a command in the French service, and foolishly attempted to revive the York faction, and to instigate them against the present government, he probably, by that means, drew more fuddenly the king's vengeance on this unhappy nobleman.

I 513.

AT last Henry, attended by the duke of Bucking- 30th June.

ham, and many others of the nobility, arrived at Calais, and entered upon his French expedition, from which he fondly expected fo much fuccess and glory ". Of all those allies on whose affistance he relied, the Swifs alone fully performed their engagements. Being put in motion by a fum of mo- Invation of ney fent them by Henry, and incited by their vic- France. tories obtained in Italy, and by their animofity against France, they were preparing to enter that kingdom with an army of twenty-five thousand men; and no equal force could be opposed to their incursion. Maximilian had received an advance of 120,000 crowns from Henry, and had promifed to reinforce the Swifs with 8000 men; but failed in his engagements. That he might make atonement to the king, he himself appeared in the Low Countries, and joined the English army with some German and Flemish foldiers, who were useful in giving an example of discipline to Henry's new levied forces. Observing the disposition of the English monarch to be more bent on glory than on interest, he inlisted himself in his service, wore the cross of St. George, and received pay, an hundred crowns a day, as one of his fubjects and captains.

m Polyd. Virg. lib, 27. Belcarius, lib. 14. VOL, III.

B\$13.

C H A P. But while he exhibited this extraordinary spectacle, of an emperor of Germany serving under a king of England, he was treated with the highest respect by Henry, and really directed all the operations of the

English army.

BEFORE the arrival of Henry and Maximilian in the camp, the earl of Shrewsbury and lord Herbert had formed the fiege of Terouane, a town fituated on the frontiers of Picardy; and they began to attack the place with vigour. Teligni and Crequi commanded in the town, and had a garrison not exceed. ing two thousand men; yet made they such stout refistance as protracted the siege a month; and they at last found themselves more in danger from want of provisions and ammunition, than from the affaults of the beliegers. Having conveyed intelligence of their situation to Lewis, who had advanced to Amiens with his army, that prince gave orders to throw relief into the place. Fontrailles appeared at the head of 800 horsemen, each of whom carried a fack of gunpowder behind him, and two quarters of bacon. With this small force he made a sudden and unexpected irruption into the English camp. and, furmounting all refiftance, advanced to the foffee of the town, where each horseman threw down his burden. They immediately returned at the gallop, and were fo fortunate as again to break through the English, and to suffer little or no loss in this dangerous attempt ".

Battle of Swinegate.

Both Aug.

But the English had, foon after, full revenge for the infult. Henry had received intelligence of the approach of the French horse, who had advanced to protect another incursion of Fontrailles; and he ordered some troops to pass the Lis, in order to oppose them. The cavalry of France, shough they confifted chiefly of gentlemen who had

behaved

a Hist. de Chev. Bayard, chap. 57. Memoires de Bellai.

behaved with great gallantry in many desperate ac- C HAP. tions in Italy, were, on fight of the enemy, seized XXVII. with fo unaccountable a panic, that they immediately took to flight, and were purfued by the English. The duke of Longueville, who commanded the French; Bushi d'Amboise, Clermont, Imbercourt, the chevalier Bayard, and many other officers of distinction, were made prisoners. This action, or rather rout, is fometimes called the battle of Guinegate, from the place where it was fought; but more commonly the Battle of Spurs, because the French, that day, made more use of their spurs than of their

fwords or military weapons.

AFTER fo confiderable an advantage, the king, who was at the head of a complete army of above 50,000 men, might have made incursions to the gates of Paris, and spread confusion and desolation every where. It gave Lewis great joy, when he heard that the English, instead of pushing their victory, and attacking the difmayed troops of France, returned to the fiege of fo inconfiderable a place as Terouane. The governors were obliged, foon after, to capitulate; and Henry found his acquisition of fo little moment, though gained at the expence of fome blood, and what, in his prefent circumstances, was more important, of much valuable time, that he immediately demolished the fortifications. The anxieties of the French were again revived with regard to the motions of the English. The Swiss, at the same time, had entered Burgundy with a formidable army, and laid fiege to Dijon, which was in no condition to refift them. Ferdinand himself. though he had made a truce with Lewis, feemed difposed to lay hold of every advantage which fortune should present to him. Scarcely ever was the French monarchy in greater danger, or less in a condition

o Memoires de Bellai, liv.i. Polydore Virgil, liv. 27. Hollingmed, p. 822. Herbert. Ff2

1513

CHAP. to defend itself against those powerful armies, which on every fide affailed or threatened it. Even many of the inhabitants of Paris, who believed themselves exposed to the rapacity and violence of the enemy, began to dislodge, without knowing what place

could afford them greater fecurity.

But Lewis was extricated from his prefent difficulcies by the manifold blunders of his enemies. The Swifs allowed themselves to be seduced into a negotiation by Tremoille, governor of Burgundy; and, without making enquiry whether that nobleman had any powers to treat, they accepted of the conditions which he offered them. Tremoille, who knew that he should be disavowed by his master, stipulated whatever they were pleafed to demand, and thought himself happy, at the expence of some payments and very large promiles, to get rid of fo formidable an enemy P.

THE measures of Henry showed equal ignorance in the art of war with that of the Swiss in negotiation. Tournay was a great and rich city, which, though it lay within the frontiers of Flanders, belonged to France, and afforded the troops of that kingdom a passage into the heart of the Netherlands. Maximilian, who was defirous of freeing his grandson from so troublesome a neighbour, advised Henry to lay fiege to the place; and the English monarch, not confidering that fuch an acquisition nowife advanced his conquests in France, was fo imprudent as to follow this interested counsel. The eity of Tournay, by its ancient charters, being exempted from the burthen of a garrifon, the burghers, against the remonstrance of their sovereign, strenuously insisted on maintaining this dangerous privilege; and they engaged, by themselves, to make a vigorous defence against the enemy 9. Their cou-

Memoires du Mareschal de Fleuranges, Bellarius, lib. 14.

<sup>9</sup> Memoires de Fleuranges.

rage failed them when matters came to trial; and CHAPafter a few days fiege, the place was furrendered to the English. The bishop of Tournay was lately dead; and, as a new bishop was already elected 24th Sept. by the chapter, but not installed in his office, the king bestowed the administration of the see on his favourite, Wolfey, and put him in immediate poffession of the revenues, which were considerable ". Hearing of the retreat of the Swifs, and observing the fealon to be far advanced, he thought proper to return to England; and he carried the greater part of his army with him. Success had attended him in every enterprife; and his youthful mind was much elated with this feeming prosperity; but all men of judgment comparing the advantages of his fituation with his progress, his expence with his acquifitions, were convinced that this campaign, fo much vaunted, was in reality both ruinous and inglorious to him 5.

THE fuccess which, during this summer, had attended Henry's arms in the north, was much more decifive. The king of Scotland had affembled the whole force of his kingdom; and having passed the Tweed with a brave though a tumultuary army of above 50,000 men, he ravaged those parts of Northumberland which lay nearest that river, and he employed himself in taking the castles of Norham, Etal, Werke, Ford, and other places of small importance. Lady Ford being taken prisoner in her caltle, was prefented to James, and fo gained on the affections of the prince, that he wasted in pleafure the critical time which, during the absence of his enemy, he should have employed in pushing his conquests. His troops, lying in a barren country, where they foon confumed all the provisions, began to be pinched with hunger; and, as the authority of the prince was feeble, and military difci-

Strype's Memorials, vol. i p 5, 6. F f 3

C H A P. pline, during that age, extremely relaxed, many of them had stolen from the camp, and retired homewards. Meanwhile the earl of Surrey, having collected a force of 26,000 men, of which 5000 had been fent over from the king's army in France, marched to the defence of the country, and approached the Scots, who lay on some high ground near the hills of Cheviot. The river Till ran between the armies, and prevented an engagement: Surrey, therefore, fent a herald to the Scottish camp, challenging the enemy to descend into the plain of Milfield, which lay towards the fouth; and there, appointing a day for the combat, to try their valour on equal ground. As he received no fatisfactory answer, he made a feint of marching towards Berwic; as if he intended to enter Scotland, to lay waste the borders, and cut off the provisions of the enemy. The Scottish army, in order to prevent his purpose, put themselves in motion; and having set fire to the huts in which they had quartered, they descended from the hills. Surrey, taking advantage of the smoke, which was blown towards him, and which concealed his movements, passed the Till with his artillery and vanguard at the bridge of Twifel, and fent the rest of his army to seek a ford higher up the river.

An engagement was now become inevitable, and both fides prepared for it with tranquillity and order. The English divided their army into two lines: Lord Howard led the main body of the first line, fir Edmond Howard the right wing, fir Marmaduke Constable the left. The earl of Surrey, himself, commanded the main body of the fecond line, lord Dacres the right wing, fir Edward Stanley the left. The front of the Scots presented three divisions to the enemy: The middle was led by the king himfelf: The right by the earl of Huntley, affilted by

Battle of Flouden.

oth Sept.

Buchanan, lib. 13. Drummond. Herbert. Polydore Virgil, lib. 27. Stowe, p. 493. Paulus Jovius.

lord

439

1513.

ford Hume: The left by the earls of Lenox and CHAP. Argyle. A fourth division under the earl of Bothwel, made a body of referve. Huntley began the battle; and after a sharp conflict put to flight the left wing of the English, and chased them off the field: But, on returning from the pursuit, he found the whole Scottish army in great disorder. division under Lenox and Argyle, elated with the fuccess of the other wing, had broken their ranks, and, notwithstanding the remonstrances and entreaties of La Motte, the French ambassador, had rushed headlong upon the enemy. Not only fir Edmond Howard, at the head of his division, received them with great valour; but Dacres, who commanded in the fecond line, wheeling about during the action, fell upon their rear, and put them to the fword without refistance. The division under James, and that under Bothwel, animated by the valour of their leaders, still made head against the English, and throwing themselves into a circle, protracted the action, till night separated the combatants. The victory feemed yet undecided, and the numbers that fell on each fide were nearly equal, amounting to above 5000 men: But the morning discovered where the advantage lay. The English had loft only persons of small note; but the flower of the Scottish nobility had fallen in battle, and their king himself, after the most diligent enquiry, could no where be found. In fearthing the field, the English met with a dead body which resembled him, and was arrayed in a fimilar habit; and they put it in a leaden coffin and fent it to London. During some time it was kept unburied; because James died under fentence of excommunication, on account of his confederacy with France, and his opposition to the holy fee ": But, upon Henry's application, who pretended that this prince had, in

Buchanan, lib. 13. Herbert.



3514.

CHAP, the instant before his death, discovered signs of repentance, absolution was given him, and his body was interred. The Scots, however, still afferted that it was not James's body which was found on the field of battle, but that of one Elphinston, who had been arrayed in arms refembling their king's, in order to divide the attention of the English, and share the danger with his master. It was believed that James had been feen croffing the Tweed at Kello; and fome imagined that he had been killed by the vaffals of lord Hume, whom that nobleman had instigated to commit so enormous a crime. But the populace entertained the opinion that he was still alive, and, having fecretly gone in pilgrimage to the Holy Land, would foon return and take poffession of the throne. This fond conceit was long

entertained among the Scots.

THE king of Scotland and most of his chief nobles being flain in the field of Flouden, fo this battle was called, an inviting opportunity was offered to Henry of gaining advantages over that kingdom, perhaps of reducing it to subjection. But he difcovered, on this occasion, a mind truly great and generous. When the queen of Scotland, Margaret, who was created regent during the infancy of her fon, applied for peace, he readily granted it; and took compassion of the helpless condition of his fifter and nephew. The earl of Surrey, who had gained him fo great a victory, was restored to the title of duke of Norfolk, which had been forfeited by his father for engaging on the fide of Richard III. Lord Howard was honoured with the title of earl of Surrey Sir Charles Brandon the king's favourite, whom he had before created viscount Lifle, was now raifed to the dignity of duke of Suffolk. who was both his favourite and his minister, was created bishop of Lincoln. Lord Herbert obtained the title of earl of Worcester. Sir Edward Stanley that of lord Monteagle.

THOUGH

Though peace with Scotland gave Henry fecu- C H A P. rity on that fide, and enabled him to profecute, in tranquillity, his enterprise against France, some other incidents had happened, which more than counterbalanced this fortunate event, and ferved to open his eyes with regard to the rashness of an undertaking into which his youth and high fortune had betrayed him.

1514.

Lewis, fully fensible of the dangerous situation to which his kingdom had been reduced during the former campaign was refolved, by every expedient, to prevent the return of like perils, and to break the confederacy of his enemies. The pope was nowife disposed to push the French to extremity; and. provided they did not return to take possession of Milan, his interests rather led him to preserve the balance among the contending parties. He accepted, therefore, of Lewis's offer to renounce the council of Lyons; and he took off the excommunication which his predecessor and himself had fulminated against that king and his kingdom. Ferdinand was now fast declining in years; and as he entertained no farther ambition than that of keeping possession of Navarre, which he had subdued by his arms and policy, he readily hearkened to the proposals of Lewis for prolonging the truce another year; and he even shewed an inclination of forming a more intimate connexion with that monarch. Lewis had dropped hints of his intention to marry his fecond daughter Renée, either to Charles, prince of Spain, or his brother Ferdinand, both of them grandsons of the Spanish monarch; and he declared his resolution of bestowing on her, as her portion, his claim to the dutchy of Milan. Ferdinand not only embraced these proposals with joy; but also engaged the emperor, Maximilian, in the fame views, and procured his accession to a treaty, which opened fo inviting a prospect of aggrandising their common grandchildren.

WHEN



WHEN Henry was informed of Ferdinand's renewal of the truce with Lewis, he fell into a violent rage, and loudly complained, that his father-in-law had first, by high promises and professions, engaged him in enmity with France, and afterwards, without giving him the least warning, had now again facrificed his interests to his own felfish purposes. and had left him exposed alone to all the danger. and expence of the war. In proportion to his eafy credulity, and his unfuspecting reliance on Ferdinand, was the vehemence with which he exclaimed against the treatment which he met with; and he threatened revenge for this egregious treachery and breach of faith w. But he lost all patience when informed of the other negotiation by which Maximilian was also seduced from his alliance, and in which proposals had been agreed to, for the marriage of the prince of Spain with the daughter of France. Charles, during the lifetime of the late king, had been affianced to Mary, Henry's younger fifter; and, as the prince now approached the age of puberty, the king had expected the immediate completion of the marriage, and the honourable fettlement of a fister, for whom he had entertained a tender affection. Such a complication, therefore, of injuries gave him the highest displeasure, and infpired him with a defire of expressing his disdain towards those who had imposed on his youth and inexperience, and had abused his too great facility.

THE duke of Longueville, who had been made prisoner at the battle of Guinegate, and who was still detained in England, was ready to take advantage of all these dispositions of Henry, in order to procure a peace, and even an alliance, which he knew to be passionately desired by his master. He represented to the king that Anne, queen of France, being lately dead, a door was thereby opened for

W. Petrus de Angleria, Dpist. 545, 546.

XXVII.

an affinity which might tend to the advantage of CHAP. both kingdoms, and which would ferve to terminate honourably all the differences between them: That she had left Lewis no male children; and as he had ever entertained a strong defire of having heirs to the crown, no marriage feemed more fuitable to him than that with the princess of England, whose youth and beauty afforded the most flattering hopes in that particular: That, though the marriage of a princess of fixteen with a king of fifty-three might feem unfuitable, yet the other advantages attending the alliance were more than a fufficient compensation for this inequality: And that Henry, in loofening his connexions with Spain, from which he had never reaped any advantage, would contract a close affinity with Lewis, a prince who, through his whole life, had invariably maintained the character of probity and honour.

As Henry feemed to hearken to this discourse with willing ears, Longueville informed his master of the probability which he discovered of bringing the matter to a happy conclusion; and he received full powers for negotiating the treaty. The articles were eafily adjusted between the monarchs. Lewis Peacewith agreed that Tournay should remain in the hands of France the English; that Richard de la Pole should be banished to Metz, there to live on a pension assigned him by Lewis; that Henry should receive payment of a million of crowns, being the arrears due by treaty to his father and himfelf; and that the princefs Mary should bring four hundred thousand crowns as her portion, and enjoy as large a jointure as any queen of France, even the former, who was heiress of Britanny. The two princes also agreed on the fuccours with which they should mutually fupply each other, in case either of them were attacked by an enemy \*.

Du Tillet.

C H A P. XXVII. oth. Oct.

rit Jan.

In confequence of this treaty, Mary was fent over to France with a splendid retinue, and Lewis met her at Abbeville, where the espousals were celebrated. He was enchanted with the beauty, grace, and numerous accomplishments of the young princes; and, being naturally of an amorous disposition, which his advanced age had not entirely cooled, he was seduced into such a course of gaiety and pleasure, as proved very unsuitable to his declining state of health. He died in less than three months after the marriage, to the extreme regret of the French nation, who, sensible of his tender concern for their welfare, gave him, with one voice, the honourable appellation of stather of his people.

FRANCIS, duke of Angouleme, a youth of one and twenty, who had married Lewis's eldeft daughter, fucceeded him on the throne; and, by his activity, valour, generofity, and other virtues, gave prognostics of a happy and glorious reign. young monarch had been extremely struck with the charms of the English princess; and, even during his predecessors life-time, had paid her such assiduous court, as made fome of his friends apprehend that he had entertained views of gallantry towards her. But being warned that, by indulging this pattion, he might probably exclude himself from the throne, he forbore all farther addresses; and even watched the young downger with a very careful eye during the first months of her widowhood. Charles Brandon, duke of Susfolk, was, at that time, in the court of France, the most comely personage of his time, and the most accomplished in all the exercifes which were then thought to befit a courtier and a foldier. He was Henry's chief favourite; and

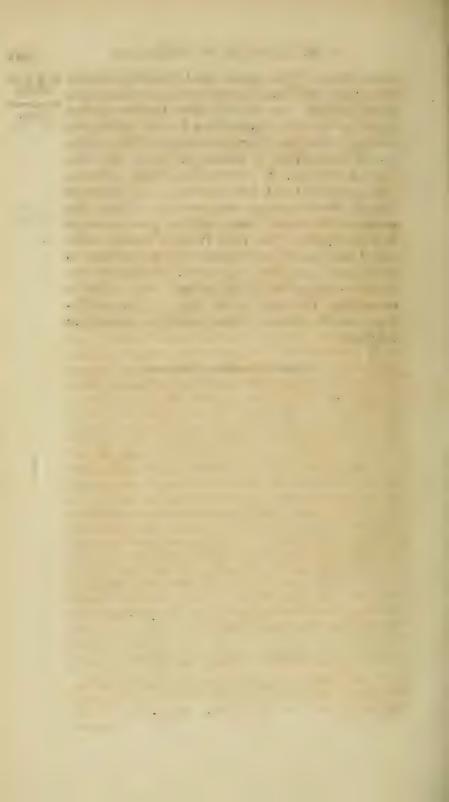
y Brantome Eloge de Louis XII.

that monarch had even once entertained thoughts of marrying him to his fifter, and had given indulgence to the mutual passion which took place be-

1515.

tween them. The queen asked Suffolk, whether CHAP. he had now the courage, without farther reflection. to espouse her? And she told him, that her brother would more easily forgive him for not asking his confent, than for acting contrary to his orders. Suffolk declined not fo inviting an offer; and their nuptials were fecretly celebrated at Paris. Francis. who was pleafed with this marriage, as it prevented Henry from forming any powerful alliance by means of his fifter z, interposed his good offices in appeafing him: And even Wolfey, having entertained no jealoufy of Suffolk, who was content to participate in the king's pleafures, and had no ambition to engage in public business, was active in reconciling the king to his fifter and brother-inlaw; and he obtained them permission to return to England.

2 Petrus de Angleria, Epist. 544.



# NOTES

#### TO THE

# THIRD VOLUME.

### NOTE [A], p. 4.

In the fifth year of the king the commons complained of the government about the king's person, his court, the excessive number of his servants, of the abuses in the Chancery, King's Bench, Common Pleas, Exchequer, and of grievous oppressions in the country, by the great multitudes of maintainers of quarrels (men linked in confederacies together), who behaved themsclves like kings in the country, so as there was very little law or right, and of the other things which they said were the cause of the late commotions under Wat Tyler. Parl. Hist. vol. i. p. 365. This irregular government, which no king and no house of commons had been able to remedy, was the source of the licentiousness of the great, and turbulency of the people, as well as tyranny of the princes. If subjects would enjoy liberty, and kings security, the laws must be executed.

In the ninth of this reign the commons also discovered an accuracy and a jealousy of liberty which we should little expect in those rude times. "It was agreed by parliament," fays Cotton, p. 309, "that the subsidy of wools, wool fells, and skins, granted to the king until the time of Midsummer then ensuing, should cease from the same time unto the feast of St. Peter ad vincula; for that thereby the king should be interrupted for claiming such grant as

" due." See also Cotton, p. 198.

### NOTE [B], p. 16.

KNYGHTON, p. 2715, &c. The fame author, p. 2680, tells us, that the king, in return to the message, said, that he would not, for their defire, remove the meanest foullien

scullion from his kitchen. This author also tells us, that the king faid to the commissioners, when they harangued him, that he faw his subjects were rebellious, and his best way would be to call in the king of France to his aid. But it is plain that all these speeches were either intended by Knyghton merely as an ornament to his history, or are falle. (1) When the five lords accuse the king's ministers in the next parliament, and impute to them every rash action of the king, they speak nothing of these replies which are so obnoxious, were fo recent, and are pretended to have been fo public. (2) The king, fo far from having any connexions at that time with France, was threatened with a dangerous invalion from that kingdom. This story feems to have been taken from the reproaches afterwards thrown out against him, and to have been transferred by the historians to this time, to which they cannot be applied.

#### NOTE [C], p. 21.

W E must except the 12th article, which accuses Brembre of having cut off the heads of twenty-two prisoners, confined for felony or debt, without warrant or process of law. But, as it is not conceivable what interest Brembre could have to treat these felons and debtors in such a manner, we may presume that the fact is either salle, or misrepresented. It was in these mens power to say any thing against the persons accused: No desence or apology was admitted: All was lawless will and pleasure.

They are also accused of designs to murder the lords: But these accusations either are general, or destroy one another. Sometimes, as in article 15th, they intend to murder them by means of the mayor and city of London: Sometimes, as in article 28th, by trial and false inquests: Sometimes, as in article 28th, by means of the king of France, who was to

receive Calais for his pains.

### NOTE [D], p. 23.

IN general, the parliament in those days never paid a proper regard to Edward's statute of treasons, though one of the most advantageous laws for the subject that has ever been enacted. In the 17th of the king, the dukes of Lancaster and Glocester

Glocester complain to Richard that fir Thomas Talbot, with others of his adherents, conspired the death of the said dukes in divers parts of Chelbire, as the same was confessed and well known; and praying that the parliament may judge of the fauit. Whereupon the king and the lords in the parliament judged the Same fact to be open and high treason: And hereupon they award two writs, the one to the sheriff of York, and the other to the theriffs of Derby, to take the body of the faid fir Thomas, returnable in the King's Bench in the month of Easter then ensuing. And open proclamation was made in Westminster hall, that upon the sheriff's return, and at the next coming in of the faid fir Thomas, the faid Thomas should be convicted of treason, and incur the loss and pain of the same: And all such as should receive him after the proclamation, should incur the same loss and pain. Cotton, p. 354. It is to be observed, that this extaordinary judgment was passed in a time of tranquillity. Though the statute itself of Edward III. reserves a power to the parliament to declare any new species of treason, it is not to be fupposed that this power was referved to the house of lords alone, or that men were to be judged by a law ex post fullo. At least, if such be the meaning of the clause, it may be affirmed that men were at that time very ignorant of the first principles of law and justice.

#### NOTE [E], p. 30.

N the preceding parliament the commons had shewn a disposition very complaisant to the king; yet there happened an incident in their proceedings which is curious, and shews us the state of the house during that period. The members were either country gentlemen or merchants, who were affembled for a few days, and were entirely unacquainted with business; so that it was easy to lead them astray, and draw them into votes and resolutions very different from their in-Some petitions concerning the state of the nation were voted; in which, among other things, the house recommended frugality to the king; and for that purpose defired that the court should not be so much frequented as formerly by bishops and ladies. The king was displeased with this freedom: The commons very humbly craved pardon: He was not fatisfied unless they would name the mover of the petitions. It happened to be one Haxey, whom the parlia-VOL. III. Gg nient

ment, in order to make atonement, condemned for this offence to die the death of a traitor. But the king, at the defire of the archbishop of Canterbury and the prelates, pardoned him. When a parliament in those times, not agitated by any fastion, and being at entire freedom, could be guilty of such monstruous extravagance, it is easy to judge what might be expected from them in more trying situations. See Cotton's Abridg. p. 361, 362.

#### NOTE [F], p. 43.

TO show how little credit is to be given to this charge against Richard, we may observe, that a law, in the 13 Edw. III. had been enacted against the continuance of theriffs for more than one year: But the inconvenience of changes having afterwards appeared from experience, the commons, in the twentieth of this king, applied by petition, that the theriffs might be continued; though that petition had not been enacted into a statute, by reason of other disagreeable circumstances which attended it. See Cotton, p. 361. It was certainly a very moderate exercise of the dispensing power in the king to continue the sheriffs; after he found that that practice would be acceptable to his fubjects, and had been applied for by one house of parliament: Yet is this made an article of charge against him by the present parliament. See art. 18. Wallingham, speaking of a period early in Richard's minority, fays, But what do acts of parliament signify, when after they are made they take no effect; since the king, by the advice of the privy council, takes upon him to alter, or wholly fet aside all those things which by general confent had been ordained in parliament? If Richard therefore, exercised the dispensing power, he was warranted by the examples of his uncles and grandfather, and, indeed, of all his predecessors from the time of Henry III. inclusive.

#### NOTE [G], p. 52.

THE following passage in Cotton's Abridgement, p. 196, shows a strange prejudice against the church and churchmen: The commons afterwards coming into the parliament, and making their protestation, showed, that for want of good redress about the king's person, in his household, in all his courts, touching maintainers in every county, and purveyors, the commons were daily pilled, and nothing defended against the enemy, and that it should shortly deprive the king, and undo the Rate. Wherefore, in the same government they entirely require redress. Whereupon the king appointed fundry bishops, lords, and nobles, to fit in privy-council about these matters: Who, fince that they must begin at the head, and go at the request of the commons, they, in the presence of the king, charged his confeffor not to come into the court but upon the four principal festivals. We should little expect that a populh privy-council, in order to preserve the king's morals, should order his confessor to be kept at a distance from him. This incident happened in the minority of Richard. As the popes had for a long time refided at Avignon, and the majority of the facred college were Frenchmen, this circumstance naturally increased the aversion of the nation to the papal power: But the prejudice against the English clergy cannot be accounted for from that cause.

#### NOTE [H], p. 223.

THAT we may judge how arbitrary a court that of the constable of England was, we may peruse the patent granted to the earl of Rivers in this reign, as it is to be found in Spellman's Glossary in verb. Constabularius; as also, more fully in Rymer, vol. xi. p. 581. Here is a clause of it: Et ulterius de uberiori gratia nostra eidem comiti de Rivers plenam potestatem damus ad cognoscendum & procedendum, in omnibus & singulis causis & negotiis, de et super crimine lesa majestatis seu super occasione caeterisque causis, quibuscunque per prastatum comitem de Rivers, ut constabutarium Anglia—qua in curia constabularii Anglia ab antiquo, viz, tempore dicti domini Gulielme conquestoris, seu aliquo tempore citra tractari, audiri, examinari, aut decidi consueverant, aut jure debuerant, aut debent, causassas que regotia pradicta

cum omnibus et singulis emergentibus, incidentibus & connexis. audiendum, examinandum, et fine debito terminandum, etiam fummarie et de plano, fine strepitu et figura justiniæ, sola facti veritate inspecta, ac etiam manu regia, si opportunum visum fuerit eidem comiti de Rivers, vices nostrus, appellatione remota. The office of constable was perpetual in the monarchy; its jurisdiction was not limited to times of war. as appears from this patent, and as we learn from Spellman: Yet its authority was in direct contradiction to Magna Charta; and it is evident that no regular liberty could fubfift with it. It involved a full dictatorial power continually subsisting in the state. The only check on the crown, besides the want of force to support all its prerogatives, was, that the office of constable was commonly either hereditary or during life; and the person invested with it was, for that reason, not so proper an instrument of arbitrary power in the king. Accordingly the office was fuppressed by Henry VIII. the most arbitrary of all the English princes. The practice, however, of exercising martial law still subsisted; and was not abolished till the Petition. of Right under Charles I. This was the epoch of true liberty, confirmed by the Restoration, and enlarged and secured by the Revolution.

## NOTE [1], p. 234.

E shall give an instance: Almost all the historians, even Comines, and the continuator of the annals of Croyland, affert that Edward was about this time taken prisoner by Clarence and Warwic, and was committed to the custody of the archbishop of York, brother to the earl; but being allowed to take the diversion of hunting by this prelate, he made his escape, and afterwards chased the rebels out of the kingdom. But that all the story is false, appears from Rymer, where we find that the king, throughout all this period, continually exercised his authority, and never was interrupted in his government. On the 7th of March 1470 he gives a commission of array to Clarence, whom he then imagined a good subject; and on the 23d of the same month we find him issuing an order for apprehending him. Besides, in the king's manifesto against the duke and earl (Clauf. 10. Edward IV. m. 7, 8,), where he enumerates all their treasons, he mentions no such fact: He 6

He does not so much as accuse them of exciting young Welles's rebellion: He only fays that they exhorted him to continue in his rebellion. We may judge how smaller facts will be misrepresented by historians, who can in the most material transactions missake so grossly. There may even some doubt arise with regard to the proposal of marriage made to Bona of Savoy; though almost all the historians concur in it, and the fact be very likely in itself: For there are no traces in Rymer of any fuch embaffy of Warwic's to France The chief certainty in this and the preceding reign arises either from public records, or from the notice taken of certain passages by the French historians. On the contrary, for some centuries after the conquest the French hillory is not complete without the affistance of English authors. We may conjecture, that the reason of the scarcity of historians during this period was the deftruction of the convents, which enfued fo foon after: Copies of the more recent historians not being yet sufficiently disperfed, these histories have perished.

#### NOTE [K], p. 274.

SIR Thomas More, who has been followed, or rather transcribed, by all the historians of this short reign, says, that Jane Shore had fallen into connections with lord Hastings, and this account agrees best with the course of the events: But in a proclamation of Richard's, to be found in Rymer, vol. xii. p. 204 the marquis of Dorset is reproached with these connections. This reproach, however, might have been invented by Richard, or founded only on popular rumour; and is not sufficient to overbalance the authority of sir Thomas More. The proclamation is remarkable for the hypocritical purity of manners affected by Richard: This bloody and treacherous tyrant upbraids the marquis and others with their gallantries and intrigues as the most terrible enormities.

#### NOTE [L], p. 297.

EVERY one that has perused the ancient monkish writers knows, that however barbarous their own style, they are full of allusions to the Latin classics, especially the poets.

Gg 3

There

There feems also, in those middle ages, to have remained many ancient books that are now lost. Malmesbury, who flourished in the reign of Henry I. and king Stephen, quotes Livy's description of Cæsar's passage over the Rubicon. Fitz-Stephen, who lived in the reign of Henry II. alludes to a passage in the larger history of Sallust. In the collection of letters, which passes under the name of Thomas a Becket, we see how familiar all the ancient history and ancient books were to the more ingenious and more dignified churchmen of that time, and consequently how much that order of men must have surpassed all the other members of the society. That prelate and his friends call each other philosophers in all the course of their correspondence, and consider the rest of the world as sunk in total ignorance and barbarism.

#### NOTE [M], p. 383.

STOWE, Baker, Speed, Biondi, Hollingshed, Bacon. Some late writers, particularly Mr. Carte, have doubted whether Perkin were an impostor, and have even afferted him to be the true Plantagenet. But to refute this opinion, we need only reflect on the following particulars: (1) Though the circumstances of the wars between the two rofes be, in general, involved in great obscurity, yet is there a most luminous ray thrown on all the transactions during the usurpation of Richard, and the murder of the two young princes, by the narrative of fir Thomas More, whose fingular magnanimity, probity, and judgment, make him an evidence beyond all exception! No historian, either of ancient or modern times, can possibly have more weight: He may also be justly esteemed a contemporary with regard to the murder of the two princes: For though he was but five years of age when that event happened, he lived and was educated among the chief actors during the period of Richard: And it is plain, from his narrative itself, which is often extremely circumstantial, that he had the particulars from the eye-witnesses themselves: His authority, therefore, is irrefishible; and sufficient to overbalance a hundred little doubts and scruples and objections. For in reality his narrative is liable to no folid objection, nor is there any mistake detected in it. He savs, indeed, that the protector's

protector's partifans, particularly Dr. Shaw, spread abroad rumours of Edward IV.'s pre-contract with Elizabeth Lucy; whereas it now appears from record, that the parliament afterwards declared the king's children illegitimate, on pretence of his pre-contract with lady Eleanor Talbot. But it must be remarked, that neither of these pre-contracts was ever fo much as attempted to be proved: And why might not the protector's flatterers and partifans have made use sometimes of one false rumour, sometimes of another? Sir Thomas More mentions the one rumour as well as the other, and treats them both lightly, as they deferved. It is also thought incredible by Mr. Carte, that Dr. Shaw should have been encouraged by Richard to calumniate openly his mother the dutchess of York, with whom that prince lived in good terms. But if there be any difficulty in this supposition, we need only suppose that Dr. Shaw might have concerted, in general, his fermon with the protector or his ministers, and yet have chosen himself the particular topics, and chosen them very foolishly. This appears, indeed, to have been the case, by the disgrace into which he fell afterwards, and by the protector's neglect of him. (2) If fir Thomas's quality of contemporary be disputed with regard to the duke of Gloucester's protectorate, it cannot possibly be disputed with regard to Perkin's imposture: He was then a man, and had a full opportunity of knowing and examining and judging of the truth. In afferting that the duke of York was murdered by his uncle, he certainly afferts, in the most express terms, that Perkin who personated him was an impostor. (3) There is another great genius who has carefully treated this point of history; fo great a genius as to be esteemed with justice one of the chief ornaments of the nation, and indeed one of the most sublime writers that any age or nation has produced. It is lord Bacon I mean, who has related at full length, and without the least doubt or hesitation, all the impostures of Perkin Warbec. If it be objected, that lord Bacon was no contemporary, and that we have the same materials as he upon which to form our judgement; it must be remarked, that lord Bacon plainly composed his elaborate and exact history from many records and papers which are now loft, and that, confequently, he is always to be cited as an original historian. It were very strange, if Mr. Carte's opinion were just, that among all the papers which lord Bacon perused, he Gg 4 never

never found any reason to suspect Perkin to be the true Plantagenet. There was at that time no interest in defaming Richard III. Bacon, besides, is a very unbiassed historian, nowise partial to Henry: We know the detail of that prince's oppressive government from him alone. It may only be thought, that in fumming up his character, he has laid the colours of blame more faintly than the very facts he mentions feem to require. Let me remark, in passing, as a singularity, how much English history has been beholden to four great men, who have possessed the highest dignity in the law, More, Bacon, Clarendon, and Whitlocke. (4) But if contemporary evidence be fo much fought after, there may in this case be produced the strongest and most undeniable in the world. The queen-dowager. her fon the marquis of Dorfet, a man of excellent understanding, fir Edward Woodville, her brother, fir Thomas St. Leger, who had married the king's fifter, fir John Bourchier, fir Robert Willoughby, fir Giles Daubeney, fir Thomas Arundel, the Courtneys, the Cheyneys, the Tallots, the Stanleys, and in a word, all the partifans of the house of York, that is, the men of chief dignity in the nation; all these great persons were so assured of the murder of the two princes, that they applied to the earl of Richmond, the mortal enemy of their party and family; they projected to fet him on the throne, which must have been utter ruin to them if the princes were alive; and they flipulated to marry him to the princefs Elizabeth, as heir to the crown, who in that case was no heir at all. Had each of those persons written the memoirs of his own times, would he not have said that Richard murdered his nephews? Or would their pen be a better declaration than their actions of their real fentiments? (5) But we have another contemporary authority still better than even these great persons, fo much interested to know the truth: It is that of Richard himself: He projected to marry his niece, a very unusual alliance in England, in order to unite her title with his own, He knew, therefore, her title to be good: For as to the declaration of her illegitimacy, as it went upon no proof, or even pretence of proof, it was always regarded with the utmost contempt by the nation, and was considered as one of those parliamentary transactions so frequent in that period, which were feandalous in themselves, and had no manner of authority. It was even so much despised as not to be reverfed by parliament, after Henry and Elizabeth were on the

the throne. (6) We have also, as contemporary evidence, the universal established opinion of the age, both abroad and at home. This point was regarded as so uncontroverted, that when Richard notified his accession to the court of France, that court was struck with horror at his abominable parricide, in murdering both his nephews, as Philip de Comines tells us; and this fentiment went to fuch an unusual height, that, as we learn from the same author, the court would not make the least reply to him. (7) The fame reasons which convinced that age of the parricide still fubfift, and ought to carry the most undoubted evidence to us; namely, the very circumstance of the sudden disappearance of the princes from the Tower, and their appearance no where elfe. Every one faid, they have not escaped from their uncle, for he makes no fearch after them: He has not conveyed them elfewhere: For it is his bufinefs to declare for in order to remove the imputation of murder from himself. He never would needlessly subject himself to the infamy and danger of being effected a parricide, without acquiring the fecurity attending that crime. They were in his cuftody: He is unfwerable for them: If he gives no account of them, as he has a plain interest in their death, he must, by every rule of common sense, be regarded as the murderer. His flagrant usurpation, as well as his other treacherous and cruel actions, makes no better be expected from him. He could not fay, with Cain, that he was not his nephews' keeper. This reasoning, which was irrefragable at the very first, became every day stronger, from Richard's continued filence, and the general and total ignorance of the place of these princes' abode. Richard's reign lasted about two years beyond this period; and surely he could not have found a better expedient for disappointing the earl of Richmond's projects, as well as justifying his own character, than the producing of his nephews. (8) If it were necessary, amidst this blaze of evidence, to produce proofs, which in any other case would have been regarded as confiderable, and would have carried great validity with them, I might mention Dighton and Tyrrel's account of the murder. This last gentleman especially was not likely to fubject himself to the reproach of so great a crime, by an imposture which it appears did not acquire him the favour of Henry. (9) The duke of York, being a boy of nine years of age, could not have made his e cape without the affistance of some elder persons. Would it not have been their chief concern instantly to convey intelligence of so great

great an event to his mother the queen dowager, to his aunt the dutchess of Burgundy, and to the other friends of the family? The dutchess protected Simnel; a project which. had it been successful, must have ended in the crowning of Warwic, and the exclusion of the duke of York! This, among many other proofs, evinces that she was ignorant of the escape of that prince, which is impossible had it been real. (10) The total filence with regard to the persons who aided him in his escape, as also with regard to the place of his abode during more than eight years, is a fufficient proof of the impollure. (11) Perkin's own account of his escape is incredible and absurd. He said that murderers were employed by his uncle to kill him and his brother: They perpetrated the crime against his brother; but took compassion on him, and allowed him to escape. This account is contained in all the historians of that age. (12) Perkin himself made a full confession of his impossure no less than three times; once when he surrendered himself prisoner, a second time when he was set in the stocks at Cheapfide and Wellminster, and a third time, which carries undoubted evidence, at the foot of the gibbet on which he was hanged. Not the least furmise that the confession had ever been procured by torture: And furely the last time he had nothing farther to fear. (13) Had not Henry been affured that Perkin was a ridiculous impostor, disavowed by the whole nation, he never would have allowed him to live an hour after he came into his power; much less would he have twice pardoned him. His treatment of the innocent earl of Warwic, who in reality had no title to the crown, is a sufficient confirmation of this reasoning. (14) We know with certainty whence the whole imposture came, namely, from the intrigues of the dutchess of Burgundy: She had before acknowledged and Supported Lambert Simnel, an avowed impostor. It is remarkable that Mr. Carte, in order to preferve the weight of the dutchess's testimony in favour of Perkin, suppresses entirely this material fact: A strong effect of party prejudices, and this author's defire of blackening Henry VII. whose hereditary title to the crown was defective. (15) There never was at that time any evidence or shadow of evidence produced of Perkin's identity with Richard Plantagenet. Richard had difappeared when near nine years of age, and Perkin did not appear till he was a man. Could any one from his afpect pretend then to be fure of the identity? He had get fome flories concerning Richard's childhood, and the court of England: But all that it was necessary for a boy of nine to remark or remember, was easily suggested to him by the dutchess of Burgundy, or Frion, Henry's fecretary, or by any body that had ever lived at court. It is true, many persons of note were at first deceived; but the discontents against Henry's government, and the general enthusiasin for the house of York, account sufficiently for this temporary delusion. Every body's eyes were opened long before Perkin's death. (16) The circumstance of finding the two dead bodies in the reign of Charles II. is not furely indifferent. They were found in the very place which More, Bacon, and other ancient authors, had affigned as the place of interment of the young princes: The bones corresponded, by their fize, to the age of the princes: The fecret and irregular place of their interment, not being in holy ground, proves that the boys had been fecretly murdered; And in the Tower no boys but those who are very nearly related to the crown can be exposed to a violent death: If we compare all these circumstances, we shall find that the inference is just and strong, that they were the bodies of Edward the Fifth and his brother; the very inference that was drawn at the time of the discovery.

Since the publication of this History, Mr. Walpole has published his Historic Doubts concerning Richard III. Nothing can be a stronger proof how ingenious and agreeable that gentleman's pen is, than his being able to make an inquiry concerning a remote point of English history, an object of general conversation. The foregoing note has been enlarged on account of

that performance.

#### NOTE [N], p. 397.

POT. Parl. 3 H. VII. n. 17. The preamble is remarkable, and shows the state of the nation at that time. The king, our sovereign lord, remembereth how by our unlawful maintainances, giving of liveries, signs and to- kens, retainders by indentures, promises, oaths, writings, and other embraceries of his subjects, untrue demanings of sheriffs in making pannels, and untrue returns by taking money, by juries, &c. the policy of this nation is most subdued." It must indeed be confessed, that such a state of the country required great discretionary

tionary power in the fovereign; nor will the fame maxims of government fuit fuch a rude people, that may be proper in a more advanced flage of fociety. The establishment of the Star-chamber, or the enlargement of its power in the reign of Henry VII. might have been as wise as the abolition of it in that of Charles I.

#### NOTE [O], p. 400.

THE duke of Northumberland has lately printed a household book of an old earl of that family who lived at this time: The author has been favoured with the perulal of it; and it contains many curious particulars, which mark the manners and way of living in that rude, not to fay barharous age; as well as the prices of commodities. I have extracted a few of them from that piece, which gives a true picture of ancient manners, and is one of the most fingular monuments that English antiquity affords us: For we may be confident, however rude the strokes, that no baron's family was on a nobler or more splendid footing. The family confilts of 166 persons, masters and servants: Fifty-seven strangers are reckoned upon every day: On the whole 223. Two-pence halfpenny are supposed to be the daily expence of each for meat, drink, and firing. This would make a groat of our prefent money: Supposing provisions between three and four times cheaper, it would be equivalent to fourteen-pence: No great sum for a nobleman's house-keeping; especially considering, that the chief expence of a family at that time confifted in meat and drink: For the fum allotted by the earl for his whole annual expence is 1118 pounds feventeen shillings and eight-pence; meat, drink, and firing cost 796 pounds eleven shillings and two-pence, more than two thirds of the whole: In a modern family it is not above a third, p. 157, 158, 159. The whole expence of the earl's family is managed with an exactness that is very rigid, and, if we make no allowance for ancient manners, fuch as may feem to border on an extreme; infomuch, that the number of pieces which must be cut out of every quarter of beef, mutton, pork, veal, nay stock fish and falmon, are determined, and must be entered and accounted for by the different clerks appointed for that purpose: If a servant be absent a day, his mess is struck off: If he go on my lord's business, board wages is allowed him,

him, eight-pence a day for his journey in winter, five-pence in fummer: When he flays in any place, two-pence a day are allowed him, befide the maintainance of his horte. Somewhat above a quarter of wheat is allowed for every month throughout the year; and the wheat is estimated at five shillings and eight-pence a quarter. Two hundred and fifty quarters of malt are allowed, at four shillings a quarter: Two hogsheads are to be made of a quarter; which amounts to about a bottle and a third of beer a day to each person, p. 4. and the beer will not be very strong. One hundred and nine fat beeves are to be bought at Allhallow-tide, at thirteen shillings and four-pence a piece: And twenty-four lean beeves to be bought at St. Helens at eight shillings a-piece: These are to be put into the pastures to feed; and are to ferve from Midsummer to Michaelmas; which is confequently the only time that the family eats fresh beef: During all the rest of the year they live on salted meat, p. 5. One hundred and fixty gallons of mustard are allowed in a year; which feems indeed requifite for the falt beef, p. 18. Six hundred and forty-seven sheep are allowed, at twenty-pence a-piece; and these seem also to be all eat falted, except between Lammas and Michaelmas. p. 5. Only twenty-five hogs are allowed at two shillings a-piece; twenty eight veals at twenty-pence; forty lambs at ten-pence or a shilling, p. 7. These seem to be reserved for my lord's table, or that of the upper fervants, called the knight's table. The other fervants, as they eat salted meat almost through the whole year, and with few or no vegetables, had a very bad and unhealthy diet: So that there cannot be any thing more erroneous than the magnificent ideas formed of the Roast Beef of Old England. We must entertain as mean an idea of its cleanliness: Only seventy ells of linen at eight-pence an ell are annually allowed for this great family: No sheets were used: This linen was made into eight table-cloths for my lord's table; and one table cloth for the knights, p. 16. This last, I suppose, was washed only once a month. Only forty shillings are allowed for washing throughout the whole year; and most of it seems expended on the linen belonging to the chapel. The drinking, however, was tolerable, namely, ten tuns and two hogsheads of Gascogny wine, at the rate of four pounds thirteen shillings and four-pence a ton, p. 6. Only ninetyone dozen of candles for the whole year, p. 14. The family

mily rose at six in the morning, dined at ten, and supped at four in the afternoon: The gates were all shut at nine. and no farther ingress or egress permitted, p. 314. 318. My lord and lady have fet on their table, for breakfast at feven o clock in the morning, a quart of beer; as much wine; two pieces of falt filh, fix red-herrings, four white ones, or a dish of sprats. In slesh days half a chyne of mutton, or a chyne of beef boiled, p. 73. 75. Mass is ordered to be faid at fix o'clock, in order fays the household-book, that all my lord's fervants may rife early. p. 170. Only twenty four fires are allowed, befide the kitchen and hall, and most of these have only a peck of coals a day allowed them, p. 99. After Lady-day no fires permitted in the rooms, except half-fires in my lord's and lady's, and lord Piercy's and the nurlery, p. 101. It is to be observed that my lord kept house in Yorkshire, where there is certainly much cold weather after Lady-day, Eighty chalders of coals, at four shillings and two-pence a chalder, fuffices throughout the whole year; and because coal will not burn without wood, fays the household-book, fixty-four loads of great wood are also allowed, at twelvepence a load, p. 22. This is a proof that grates were not then used. Here is an Article. It is devised that from henceforth no capons to be bought but only for my lord's own mefs, and that the faid capons (ball be bought for two-pence a piece, lean, and fed in the poultry; and master chamberlain and the flewards be fed with capons, if there be frangers fitting with them, p. 102. Pigs are to be bought at three pence or a groat a-piece: Gecfe at the fame price: Chickens at a halfpenny: Hens at two-pence, and only for the abovementioned tables. Here is another article. Item, it is thought good that no plovers be bought at no feafon but only in Christmas and principal feasts, and my lord to be served therewith, and his board-end, and none other, and to be bought for a penny a-piece, or a penny halfpenny at most, p. 103. Woodcocks are to be bought at the fame price. Partridges at two-pence, p. 104, 105. Pheasants a shilling; peacocks the fame, p. 106. My lord keeps only twentyfeven horses in his stable at his own charge: His upper fervants have allowance for maintaining their own horses, p. 126. These horses are, fix gentle horses as they are called, at hay and hard meat throughout the whole year, four palfreys, three hobbies and nags, three fumpier horfes. horses, fix horses for those servants to whom my lord furnishes a horse, two sumpter horses more, and three mill horses, two for carrying the corn; and one for grinding it; whence we may infer, that mills, either water or wind mills, where then unknown; at least very rare: Besides these, there are seven great trotting horses for the chariot or waggon. He allows a peck of oats a day, besides loaves made of beans, for his principal horses; the oats at twenty pence, the beans at two shillings a quarter. The load of hay is at two shillings and eight-pence. When my lord is on a journey he carries thirty-fix horsemen along with him; together with bed and other accommodation, p. 157. The inns, it feems, could afford nothing tolerable. My lord passes the year in three country-feats, all in Yorkshire, Wrysel, Leckensield, and Topclyffe; but he has furniture only for one: He carries every thing along with him, beds, tables, chairs, kitchen utenfils, all which we may conclude were fo coarfe, that they could not be spoilt by the carriage: Yet seventeen carts and one waggon suffices for the whole, p. 391. One cart fuffices for all his kitchen utenfils, cooks beds, &c. p. 388. One remarkable circumstance is, that he has eleven priests in his house, besides seventeen persons, chanters, musicians, &c. belonging to his chapel: Yet he has only two cooks for a family of 223 persons, Their meals were certainly dreffed in the flovenly manner of a ship's company. It is amusing to observe the pompous and even royal flyle assumed by this Tartar chief: he does not give any orders, though only for the right making of mustard, but it is introduced with this preamble, It scemeth good to us and our council. If we consider the magnificent and elegant manner in which the Venetian and other Italian noblemen then lived, with the progress made by the Italians in literature and the fine arts, we shall not wonder that they confidered the ultramountaine nations as barbarous. The Flemish also seem to have much excelled the English and even the French. Yet the earl

<sup>\*</sup> In another place mention is made of four cooks, p. 388. But I fuppose that the two servants called, in p. 325, groom of the larder and child of the scullery, are, in p. 388, comprehended in the number of cooks.

is sometimes not deficient in generosity: He pays, for instance, an annual pension of a groat a year to my lady of Walsingham, for her interest in Heaven; the same sum to the holy blood at Hales, p. 337. No mention is any where made of plate; but only of the hiring of pewter vefsels. The servants seem all to have bought their own clothes from their wages.

END OF THE THIRD VOLUME.











